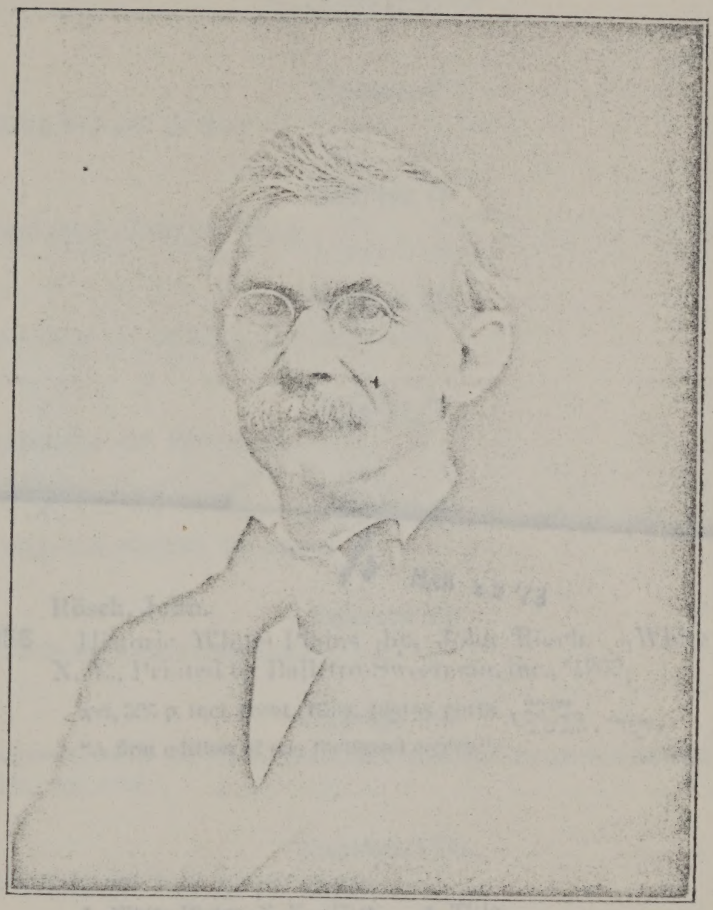
M. L.

HISTORIC WHITE PLAINS

N. Y.

By -

JOHN RÖSCH



John Rösch

Rösch, John.

Historic White Plains [by] John Rösch. [White Plains, N. Y., Printed by Balletto-Sweetman, inc., c1930]

xvi, 307 p. incl. front., illus., plates, ports. 22cm. map.

"A first edition of one thousand copies."

1. White Plains, N. Y.—Hist. I. Title.

Library of Congress F129.W72R97 30-11445

——— Copy 2.

Contents

Illustrations

John Rösch — *Frontispiece*

PAGE

PAGE

Preface

IT IS BECOMING increasingly evident that the school holds a tremendously important place in training for citizenship. Social competency is highly desirable. Therefore, pupils in our schools should be encouraged to become familiar with not only what is going on in the world today, but what has gone before. History begins, to be sure, with the present, but every present grows out of a past.

Pupils are urged to make their own investigation into past history. In order to secure adequate information such investigations call for study of many source books and other material. This means ordinarily not only a great deal of hard work, but an expenditure of a great deal of time on the part of the investigator. The young people of this community I am sure will be grateful for the painstaking work which Mr. John Rösch has done in putting together into one volume all of the basic historical material pertaining to our community. The book, no doubt, will be most popular and useful in all of the local schools. It will help the present and future pupils to get better acquainted with their local environment, which is highly important educationally, and it will furthermore undoubtedly increase their appreciation of and affection for their city.

H. CLAUDE HARDY
Superintendent of Schools

increasingly evident that the school holds [illegible] important place in training for citizen[illegible]. Social competency is highly desirable. Therefore, pupils in our schools should be encouraged to become familiar with not only what is going on in the world today, but what has gone before. History begins, to be sure, with the present, but every present grows out of a past.

Pupils are urged to make their own investigation into past history. In order to secure adequate information such investigations call for study of many source books and other material. This means ordinarily not only a great deal of hard work, but an expenditure of a great deal of time on the part of the investigator. The young people of this community I am sure will be grateful for the painstaking work which Mr. John Kiesch has done in putting together into one volume all of the basic historical material pertaining to our community. The book, no doubt, will be most popular and useful in all of the local schools. It will help the present and future pupils to get better acquainted with their local environment, which is highly important educationally, and it will furthermore undoubtedly [illegible] their appreciation of and affection for their city.

H. Clayton [illegible]
Superintendent Schools

Diligence and accuracy are the only merits which an historical writer may ascribe to himself.

—EDWARD GIBBON

Foreword

This volume is affectionately dedicated to White Plains, to its citizens, native or adopted, and to everyone interested in the complete story of a vital chapter in American history.

THE importance of White Plains as one of the dramatic focal points of American History has never been fully appreciated either by the city itself or by the nation. This whole region is rich in the glamor of its past—the pioneering courage of its early settlers and inhabitants and the valor and resourcefulness of those who were to transform it into a strategic battleground. Within these boundary lines and their immediate environment, this City has more points of historic significance, inseparably associated with the great struggle for American Independence, than is commonly supposed. Many less truly significant backgrounds of our fight for Independence have become internationally famous and places of frequent pilgrimages.

The facts are even now unknown to the country at large; and it is doubtful if White Plains itself has a clear picture of its own importance in American History. There has been no poet with ringing phrases, no orator of glowing vision—as was true of Lexington, Concord, Bunker Hill—to tell the White Plains story, sing its praises and to stamp upon the minds of generations of Americans the colorful details of the events which happened here. Moreover, it has been difficult to sort out fact from fiction, to piece together missing archives of an

authentic character. Half-truths and well-intentioned misinformation have always retarded the setting down of an orderly, trustworthy narrative.

It is now my privilege—and serious responsibility—to attempt this very thing. This book is the culmination of an effort based on lifetime knowledge. The responsibility is great, but I have approached it with personal knowledge of the early topography of White Plains and the nearby territory; and with a deep and sincere reverence for the task in hand.

To tell the true story of the progress of a community from a mere Village to a prosperous city, and to follow every incident of military significance, required familiarity with the basic "floor-plan" of White Plains as it *was*, rather than as it is today; swamps that have vanished, little streams that are no more, hills that have yielded to the onward march of time, roads that have been swallowed up by a new pattern of communication.

The author walked over all this ground in 1874, before all the scars of conflict had been erased; he has seen and photographed previous landmarks, now vanished forever; he has searched titles, traced back ancient maps and war-period engineering charts, and has personally witnessed the amazing transition from a cluster of modest cottages and cabins to White Plains of today! This conscientious study, coupled with a genuine affection for its subject, has made it possible for him to check up on existent literature and to correct its errors.

In the preparation of the work, the author has availed himself of every known *authentic* source of relevant information, from the purchase of White Plains from the Indians to the present day; and has endeavored to present the facts in their chronological order, free from mere guess-work, theory or speculation.

It is predicted that you will find this story fascinating because of its romance: and genuinely educational—particularly in those chapters leading up to and descriptive of one of the most important campaigns connected with the achievement of American Independence.

JOHN RÖSCH.

White Plains, N. Y.
January, 1937.

Concerning the Illustrations

IT falls to the lot of but few mortals to have their span of life reach from the beginning to the present of the art of photography. The author has enjoyed this unique experience.

These remarks, as a prelude to the List of Illustrations, have a proper place in such a book; for authenticity of pictures is quite as important as that of the written word. The Chinese proverb that a picture tells more than pages of descriptive text, however detailed, is definitely true. This panorama of photographs comprises a visual travelogue through historic White Plains—its battlefields as they were and as they are now, its quaint churches and Court Houses, its winding dirt roads, and the men and women, now shrouded in dust, who were its pioneers.

These photographs are, of course, rare, the majority of them dating back to the time when combined camera and sun conferred their first boon upon the world, making it possible to capture for posterity the beauty, the tragedy and the scenic charm of the planet on which we live. When these pictures were taken, photography was in its infancy.

The earlier subjects herein shown, were produced with the first process known, that is, by means of "wet plates". These plates were of highly polished glass, first albumenized, then emulsionized, next sensitized and while they were wet, the exposure was made. It was necessary to develop them before another exposure was made.

To that end, in making the various scenes, it was necessary for me to carry along at all times an unbelieveable clutter of field equipment—a clumsy 10 by 12 camera, from a half barrel to a barrel of water, a portable "dark room" on wheels and a veritable laboratory of chemicals.

Exposures were slow—sixty to seventy seconds was not uncommon. Photographers then did not have control of the bromides, as an accelerator to speed, as at the present time. The bulb was unknown.

For twenty-four years I was the only professional photographer in the village of White Plains. Amateurs did not exist, one might say, for film packs and kodaks were non-existent.

. . . . . .

It was in May, 1874, when I first set foot in White Plains, a mere hamlet of approximately three thousand inhabitants. There were no paved highways, there was no water system, no sewage plant, no electric light. Venerable gas lamps on iron posts "illuminated" Railroad Avenue, one to the block—and *that one*, in every instance, on the north side of the street only.

As dusk descended, an employee of the Gas Works made his labored rounds with a lighted torch on the end of a broom handle, unaware that, some day, electric mazdas would make "Main Street" a glittering business area and people would be compelled to step lively through congested streams of traffic. But we did have a garbage collector.

From the buggy to the automobile seems but yesterday. I have seen White Plains in the making; and now, at my eightieth milestone, it is my privilege to set down in heartfelt words —and in pictures—the story of the struggles, the hopes and the wonderful achievements of generations long gone. I have a real pride in being an instrument whereby it is possible to assist in perpetuating the names and memories of the fathers and

"MUSKRAT SAM", THE GARBAGE COLLECTOR
Mayor of Blackberry Row, a Negro Settlement on Westchester Avenue

sons who sacrificed their all in defense of the very soil on which we have builded our present homes, public edifices and churches, during the most eventful years in the history of White Plains—the period of the War for Independence!

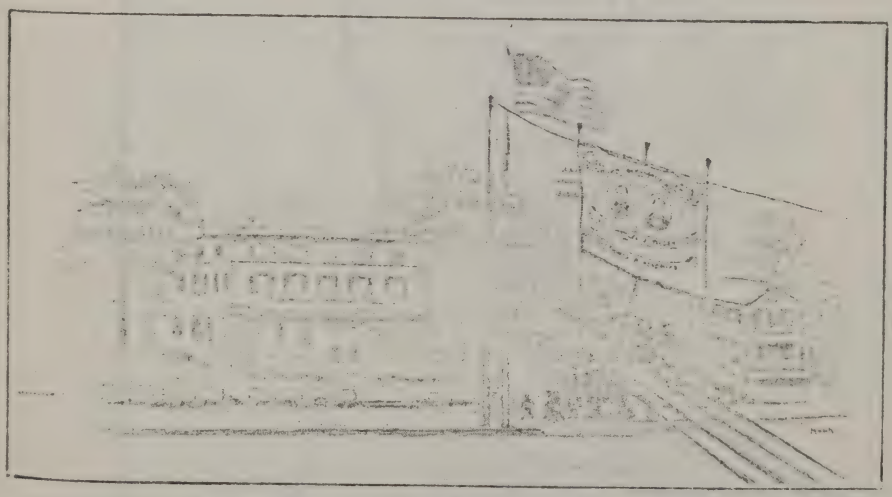
May the story prove as entertaining, as inspirational, as encouraging and as profitable to you readers as it has been to me. It is a story of courage and bravery and of the true pioneer spirit. That hour has arrived when White Plains should historically come into its own.

CHAPTER I

White Plains in 1874

IT was on May, 22nd, 1874 that a young man, this chronicler, alighted at the railroad station in White Plains from New York. It was necessary to risk death crossing the south-bound track to reach a long, wooden platform which extended from what was referred to as the "ticket office" to Railroad Avenue, now Main Street.

And the train that had made this journey—examine the photograph of it: a locomotive with a huge "smoke stack" of a type that seems grotesque in the light of our modern, aluminum-bright streamlined miracles of speed and efficiency. It is shown as it stood on the north-bound track.



ORAWAUPUM AND POCAHONTAS HOTEL

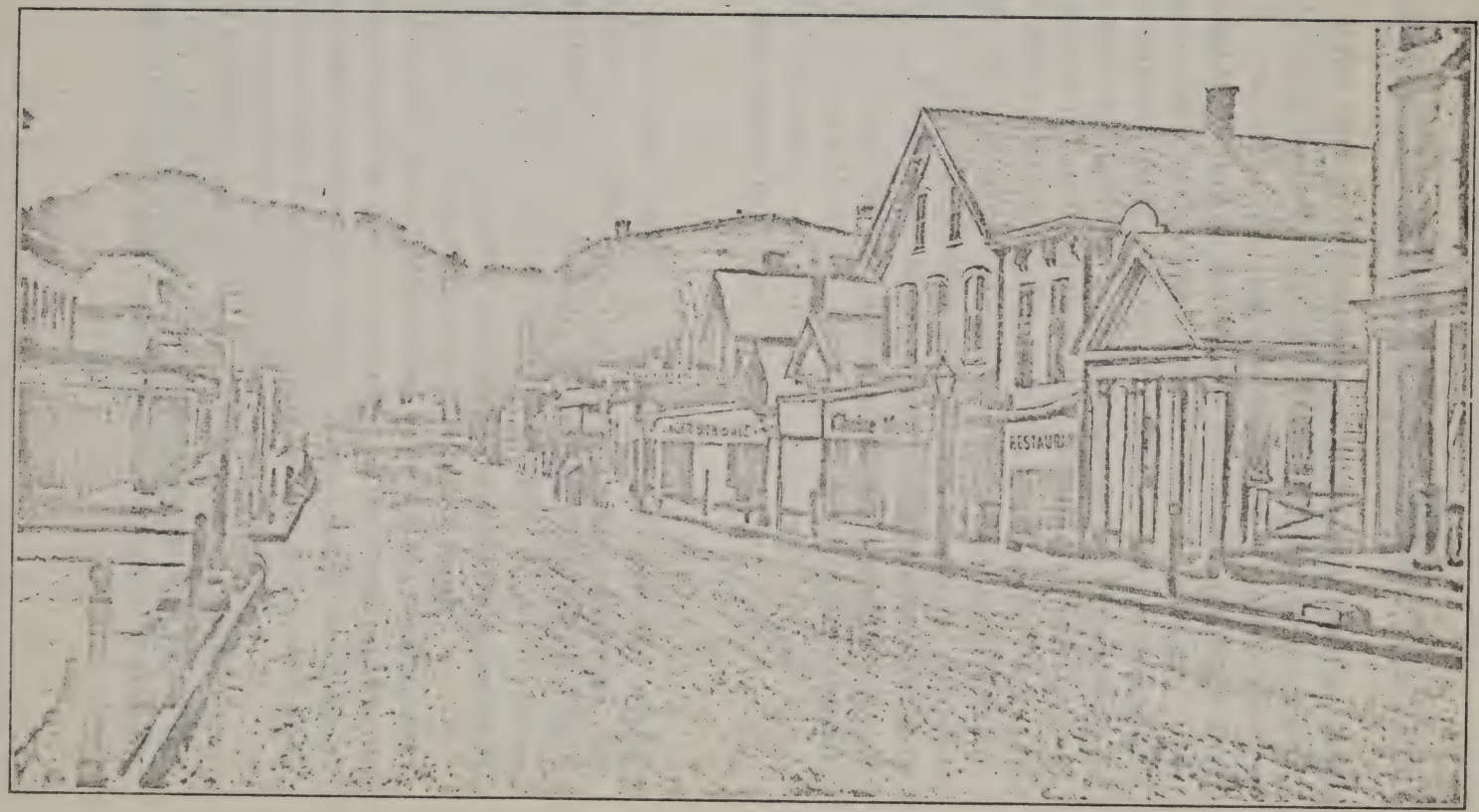
Showing Tilden and Hendricks Banner, in 1876

CHAPTER I.

White Plains in 1874

IT was on May, 22nd, 1874 that a young man, this chronicler, alighted at the railroad station in White Plains from New York. It was necessary to risk death crossing the south-bound track to reach a long, wooden platform which extended from what was referred to as the "ticket office" to Railroad Avenue, now Main Street.

And the train that had made this journey—examine the photograph of it: a locomotive with a large "smoke-stack" of a type that seems grotesque in the light of our modern, plump-bright streamlined miracles of speed and efficiency. It is shown as it stood on the north-bound track.



VIEW OF RAILROAD AVENUE, LOOKING WEST FROM GRAND STREET, IN 1874

PLAN OF WATTSWOOD WITH A MINIMUM HEIGHT, EQUAL TO THE

What were my impressions on leaving the platform and walking up Railroad Avenue? It seemed to me, at first glance, to be not much more than the replica of a typical Western mining town, such as described in the popular Monroe's dime novels, with lurid wood-engraved cover illustrations—with violently conflicting contrasts, of course. Here was no Indian-infested, wild-and-wooly west made up of a monotony of prairie and plains, but there were picturesque similarities to the West nevertheless. For example, the irregular skyline of roofs, the numerous sheds with tin roofs that extended across the sidewalks, the hitching posts for horses and the stepping-stones. It was a quaint little village made up of not more than three thousand pioneer inhabitants, surrounded by rugged hills. These hills as I was destined to discover, were dramatically historical.

And what of the name: "White Plains"?

. . . . . .

These early settlers, it would appear, were not wholly felicitous in christening their hamlet; for even then, the designation was misleading. Histories of this region written by conscientious students credit the origin of the name "White Plains" to the prevalency of white balsam shrubs hereabouts. But even in the earliest era there were few of them.

One of my first determinations was to trace a more rational explanation of the name. A number of the oldest inhabitants were closely questioned. Not one of them could recall that at any time was the profusion of white balsam growth such as to warrant the selection of the name "White Plains."

The locality was known to the Indians of the section, however, as "*Qua-Rop-pas*". In their language this meant the "White Marshes". Here is something to give pause for thought.

on leaving the platform and

? It seemed to me, at first glance,
to be not much more than the replica of a typical western
mining town, such as described in the popular Munroe's dime
novels, with lurid wood-engraved cover illustration—with
violently conflicting contrasts, of course. There was no irrigation
intended, wild-and-woolly west made up of a mountainy or
prairie and plains, but there were picturesque similarities in
the West nevertheless. For example, the irregular skylines of
roofs, the numerous sheds with tin roofs that extended across
the sidewalks, the hitching posts for horses and the stepping-
stones. It was a quaint little village made up of not more than
three thousand pioneer inhabitants, surrounded by rounded
hills. These hills as I was destined to discover, were dramatically
historical.

And what of the name: "White Plains"?

These early settlers, it would appear, were not wholly
delicious in christening their hamlet; for even then, the
designation was misleading. Histories of this region written
by conscientious students credit the origin of the name "White
Plains" to the prevalency of white balsam shrubs hereabouts.
But even in the earliest era there were few of them.

One of my first determinations was to trace a more authentic
explanation of the name. A number of the oldest inhabitants
were closely questioned. Not one of them could recall that at
any time was the profusion of white balsam growth such as to
warrant the selection of the name "White Plains."

One day I strolled up to the top of Chatterton Hill and studied the surrounding landscape. The fields and the meadows, referred to in those days as "The Commons", with their grazing herds of cattle were white with a blanket of snow-white daisies.

Looking to the eastward across the valley now populous with homes, I could vision this great area as appearing snow-covered, even in the month of June.

"Perhaps", I thought, "the white daisies might have inspired the naming of the village". Botanists of fame contradicted this fanciful theory. These daisies, seen so frequently in later years, were not native to our Continent. They were imported from Holland to England, and thence here. There could have been no daisies in Westchester at the time of the Deed of Sale from the Indians in 1683. I was destined, eventually, to come nearer a true solution of the naming of White Plains.

Shortly before my arrival, in 1874, Railroad Avenue was filled-in and raised to its present level, over a distance that ran from about William Street to a point near Brookfield Street (then called Rabbit Street). All the land to the North and South in this sector was low and marshy. I recall seeing children bathing in the shallow pools in summer and skating there during the winter.

Where the Citizens Bank and the State Theatre stand today, at the intersection of Winchester Street and Martine Avenue, a crude wooden bridge spanned a brook which flowed lazily through the former highway. Adjoining the bridge, to the South, on Martine Avenue, was a driveway along which teamsters guided their horses for a refreshing drink.

It was here I used to thrust a net into the waters and secure sufficient prime bait for lake fishing. On the earliest known

One day I strolled up to the top of Westerton Hill and studied the surrounding landscape. The fields and the meadows referred to in those days as "The Commons", with their grazing herds of cattle [illegible] white with a blanket of snow-white daisies.

Looking to the eastward across the valley now populous with homes, I could vision this great area as appearing snow-covered, even in the month of June.

"Perhaps", I thought, "the white daisies might have inspired the naming of the village". Botanists of fame contradicted this fanciful theory. These daisies, seen so frequently in later years, were not native to our Continent. They were imported from Holland to England, and thence been. There could have been no daisies in Westchester at the time of the Deed of Sale from the Indians in 1683. I was destined, eventually, to come nearer a true solution of the naming of White Plains.

Shortly before my arrival, in 1874, Railroad Avenue was filled-in and raised to its present level, over a distance that ran from about William Street to a point near Brookfield Street (then called Rabbit Street). All the land to the North and South in this sector was low and marshy. I recall seeing children bathing in the shallow pools in summer and skating there during the winter.

When the Citizens Bank and the Star Theatre stand today, at the inter-section of Winchester Street and Martine Avenue, a crude wooden bri[illegible] a brook which flowed lazily through the former highway. Adjoining [illegible] South, on Martine Avenue, was [illegible]

maps, the stream is referred to as "Golden Pine Brook". Later it was known as "Davis Brook" and then as "Winchester Brook".

The source was "Davis Pond", covering several acres of ground south of the present White Plains Hospital, and this same area of water furnished the supply required for the boilers of the primitive locomotives as they rolled into the depot.

It is not perhaps generally known that the brook exists today, running beneath the city, with an outlet at the Bronx River, just north of the Hamilton Avenue Bridge. In the block between Grove Street and Brookfield Street, stood two houses and one of these is still in existence, used as a billiard room. The other was occupied by Peter Man, the village wheelwright.

All that considerable territory to the eastward of the new extension of Kensico Avenue to Underhill Avenue, including Westchester Avenue to the south and Lake Street to the north was a vast, boggy swamp, so treacherous that cattle could not wade through it.

Aaron Hall, whose home was on Lake Street, experienced great difficulty because of cows imperiled in this bog. Visualize it as once occupying part of the tract now occupied by our beautiful Recreation Park. And now to connect this with the name of "White Plains".

I have seen the mist and fog rising from this swampland in enveloping clouds that remained suspended in mid-air for days at a time. From a distance, it suggested a great, grey-white inland sea. Driving through Lake Street on my way to the lakes I could scarcely see the ears of my horse, so dense was the fog.

maps, the stream is referred to as "Gaskes Tiny Brook". Later it was known as "Davis Brook" and then as "Winchester

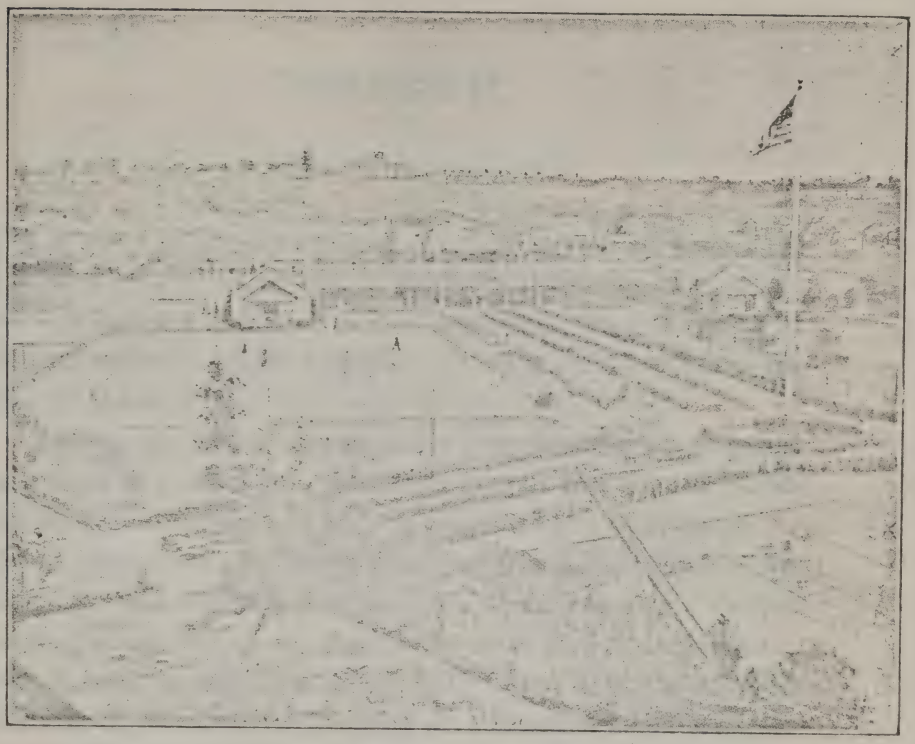
The source was "Davis Pond", covering several acres of ground south of the present White Plains Hospital, and this same area of water furnished the supply required for the boilers of the primitive locomotives as they rolled into the depot.

It is not perhaps generally known that the brook exists to-day, running beneath the city, with an outlet at the Bronx River, just north of the Hamilton Avenue Bridge. In the block between Grove Street and Brookfield Street, stood two houses and one of these is still in existence, used as a billiard room. The other was occupied by Peter Mann, the village wheelwright.

All that considerable territory to the eastward of the new extension of Kensico Avenue to Underhill Avenue, including Westchester Avenue to the south and Lake Street to the north was a vast, boggy swamp, so treacherous that cattle could not wade through it.

Aaron Hall, whose home was on Lake Street, experienced great difficulty because of cows imperiled in this bog. Isaline it as once occupying part of the tract now occupied by our beautiful Recreation Park. And now to connect this with the name of White Plains.

I have seen mists and fog rising on it, swaying and in enveloping clouds that remained suspended in mid-air for days at a time. From a distance, it suggested a great, grey-sea. Driving through [illegible] on my way to [illegible] barely see the cars [illegible] so dense was



RECREATION PARK

General Heath, in command of Hatfield Hill on Lake Street, in 1776, speaks of this unusual sight in his Memoirs. He found it difficult, if not impossible, to catch sight of the enemy. The Indians were aware of it also; for records show that it was known to them as "The White Marshes". When the settlers came, it was they who referred to this territory of fogs as "The White Plains".

Is it not reasonable to suppose that here we have the believable and trustworthy origin of the name?

CHAPTER II

A History-Making Deed

MANY unusual and even thrilling stories are connected with the white man's methodical taking over of an America that was once the admittedly legal property of various tribes of native Indians. There is no exception in the case of White Plains and adjacent territory.

During the period of transition from a state of wilderness to a state of civilization, troublous factors and rugged humor combine to color such rare documents as have been spared by the passing years with sharply-focused impressions of customs, language and traditional elements of human nature. Pioneer stock was not always learned in the ways of polished diction; but in such quoted archives as follow, you will find a steadfastness of purpose which built a firm foundation for posterity.

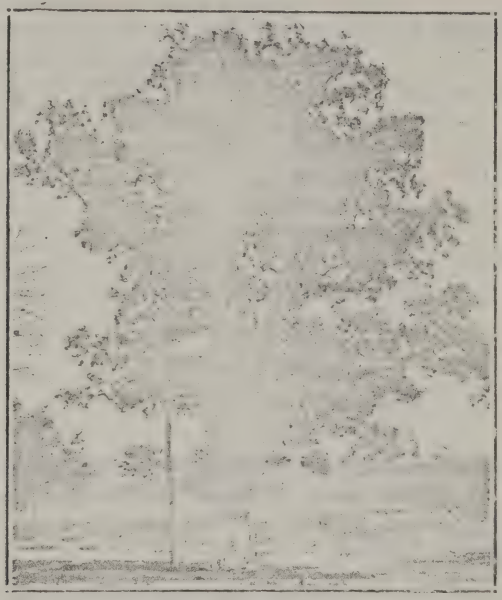
As characteristic as it is vitally important, therefore, must be considered a memorable Deed secured on the 22nd day of November, 1683, by the inhabitants of Rye from the aboriginal proprietors of that area. Replete with strange phonetic spelling and grammatical errors, it nevertheless creates in the raw an unforgetable cross-section of life.

The Deed

"To all Christian peopell to hom these presence shall com greting Know yee that we Shapham, Cockenseco, Orewapum, Kewetoahan, Koawahoh, Paatck, Shiphatlash, Korehvuvous, panawok, memishott, pesekanoh, oromahgah, patthunk, hohoreis, sotonge, wonawaking, owhorawas nosband have for a valuabell sum of money to us in hand paid by the town of Rye that are inhabitance bargained covinanted, ailnated and soulld unto the Inhabitance of the above said town of Ry.

A sartain tract of land Lying within the town bounds of Rye Bounded as followeth:

"On the north east with Mamarineck River, and on the Southeast with a branch of the said River and marked trees till it comes to brunckes River and then to Runn by Brunches River till it Comes to the head of the whit plaines soe called, and by the marked trees from thence till it



WHITE OAK TREE

Boundary line of North Castle and White Plains, noted in deed, stood at intersection of North Broadway and Virginia Road. This tree was totally destroyed by lightning in 1903, three weeks after the picture was taken. Note the absence of dwellings.

comes to the uppermost branch of marinneck River, which trackt of Land commonly called by the English the whit plaines and called by the Indians Quarroppas which said tract of Land wee the above said shapham, Cockincecko, orewapum, kewetoahan, koawanoh, moahalice and the Rest of the above said indians have soulled as above said unto the Inhabutance of the said town of Rye them theire heires execatars administrators or asignes for ever and Doe hereby bind ourselves our heires Execatars administrators or asignes for ever and Doe hereby bind ourslves our heires Execatars Arministratars and assigns unto the Inhabitance of the above

said town of Rye them theire heires Execatars administratars or asignes that they may at all times from and after the date hereof peasably and quieatly poses occupy and enjoy the above said tract of land free from all former bargaines salles morgages or other incombrances whatso ever and all soe to warrant and make good the above said salle against any parson or parsons whatso ever that shall or will make or lay any claime or claimes theare unto and—

"In testimony thear of wee have caused this bill of salle to be made and here unto haue sett our hands and sealles this two and twentieth of November one thousand six hundred Eighty three.

"Sealed, signed and delivered in the presents of us"

"Corneilass	the marke of
his marke	Shapham
	Cokenseko
"Joshua Knapp	Orowapam
	Kewetoham
"the marke of	Koawanoh
Motepeatehon	Moahpoatch
	Patthunk
"John Odell	Hohornis
his marke	Sotonge
	owhorawas
	oramapuah

"This bill of salle is acknowledged by the granters to be their ackt and deed before me in Rye the day and yere aboue written.

"JOSEPH HORTON
"Commissioner."

But this crude yet effective deed was to prove but the beginning of a singularly complex series of legal entanglements and controversies, one branch leading to White Plains. In a search of files of authoritative sources of further information leading up to the happy solution of an exceedingly bitter contest, we find this intensely interesting description:

"The inhabitants of Rye were now met by an opposing claimant in the person of Mr. John Richbell of Mamaroneck. He was a native of England and claimed to have bought of the Indians in 1660 his right to these lands; was confirmed in 1662 by the authorities of New Netherlands, and in 1668 by the government of of New York.

"Mr. Richbell's patent gave him possession of the 'three necks' bounded on the east by Mamaroneck River and on the west by Stony Brook,

together with the land lying north of these bounds 'twenty miles in the woods'.

"This conflicted with the foregoing deed. As Rye was the border town of Connecticut they conceived that their bounds extended westward as far as the western line of that colony. This was 'a line drawn from the east side of Mamaroneck river, north northwest to the line of Massachusetts'.

"Negotiations were now pending between Connecticut and New York for a more satisfactory settlement of that boundary. And on the twenty-eighth of November, 1683, the two governments agreed upon a line to begin at the mouth of Byram river. Meanwhile, doubtless anticipating this decision, the inhabitants of Rye on the twenty-second day of November, only six days before the date of that agreement, concluded a treaty with the Indian proprietors of the White Plains for the purchase of that tract. They described it as 'lying within the town bounds of Rye'."

This was but another chapter in an extended story of counter-claims, rivalry and territorial romance, as the narrator so vividly continues:—

"Mr. Richbell was not inclined to yield his claim, which he had now held for twenty-three years. On the twelfth of March, 1684, he petitioned the Governor, Colonel Dongan, on the subject;

> 'Having a desire to dispose of some quantity of said land which is called the White Plains'

and which was comprehended in his patent:

> 'to severall persons to settle thereon with themselves and familyes', he is wholly obstructed and hindered by Rye men', who have 'made a great disturbance amongst them and pretends a right to the same.'

"He cannot therefore dispose of any part of these lands until the Governor:

> 'will be pleased to grant an order to clear the same'.

"This complaint came before the council at Fort James on the seventeenth of March, 1684, and the inhabitants of Rye or some to be deputed by them for that purpose, were summoned to show cause at the next Court of Assizes in Westchester County, why the said lands do not of right belong and appertain to John Richbell.

"The dispute appears to have remained unsettled; for Richbell died soon after this, July 26th, 1684, and the greater part of his lands—including all the northern portion—came into the possession of the Hon. Caleb Heathcote. In 1701 Col. Heathcote obtained a confirmation of his rights to the Richbell estate by purchasing again from the Indians the 'necks' formerly known as East and Great Neck, now called Orienta

and Larchmont, with the lands lying north of them along Mamaroneck river to its source and across to the Bronx."

At this juncture, the document leads us, by devious legal paths, to White Plains itself:

"This tract included the whole of the present town of Scarsdale, for which Col. Heathcote immediately obtained letters patent from the British Crown, securing him that territory and constituting the lordship or Manor of Scarsdale. But his Indian grants included, also, the whole of White Plains which the inhabitants of Rye purchased from the Indians in 1683 and where some of them were already settled, though, no division of the lands had yet been made.

"This new encroachment on their limits occurred just at the close of an unsuccessful attempt to return to the colony of Connecticut. Having failed to recover the lands appropriated by Harrison, the people of Rye probably had little hope of resisting these claims.

"Col. Heathcote, however, seems to have been disposed to treat them with great fairness. In the Charter which he obtained for his lands, exception was made of 'ye land called White Plains' which is in dispute between ye said Caleb Heathcote and some of ye inhabitance of ye town of Rye', to that land the patent gives him no further title than he already possesses. The following action of the inhabitants refers to this matter:—

> 'At a meeting held by the Properities of the White Plains purchase, Febeweary the 24, 1701-02, Hacaliah Browne and Deliverance Browne and Humphrey Underhill, Thomas Meritseuer, Isaac Deham, John Stokam, and Benjamin Horton, chosen a committee in the behalf of the above said Proprietors to agree with Coll. Hathcoote consarning the running of a line between said Coll. Hethcote's patent and said White Plains purchase as They shall see good; and what line shall be mutually agreed upon betweene the said commity and Coll. Hethcote the said properties do ingage for Themselves and Their heirs and successors to stand and abide forever; and what else the said committie mutually agrees upon shall be held good by them and their associates for ever.'

"The controversy was still pending in 1702, when the Rev. Mr. Christopher Bridge, Mr. Hacaliah Browne, Ensign John Horton, Capt. Joseph Bude, and Mr. John Hoytt:—'are chosen to treat with the Honorable Conl. Caleb Hatheut, about the White Plains Purchase and to make returne to the Proprietors of their treat upon what terms the Hon. Coll. Hatheut will agree with them to acquit all his claims to the above said White Plains purchase'.

At the time of Col. Heathcote's death, which occurred four years later, this question was still unsettled; but it does not appear that any claim upon these lands was made by the heirs to his estate."

And now this important summary of the slow development of official status as regards White Plains, clarifies the last remaining historic details:—

"Cadwallader Colden, the surveyor general, laid out for Joseph Budd, John Hoit and others:—

> 'A certain tract or parcel or land, situate, lying and being in the County of Westchester and is commonly known by the name of White Plains.
>
> 'Beginning at a large White oak tree, marked with several letters, where two brooks fall into the West branch of Mamaroneck river, and runs thence by marked trees to Brunxes River near to the place where a small brook falls into the said River by a bunch of Alders, some of which are marked, Thence up the stream of Brunxes River to an oak-tree about seventeen chains, above Anthony Miller's fulling-mill, Thence by marked trees to a White-oak marked, near Long Meadow, Thence down the stream of the said Brook to the land laid out for Daniel Brundage; thence along his line to the said Long Meadow Brook; thence down the stream of the said brook to the place where it falls into Mamaroneck River, and down the stream of said River to the land granted to Christopher Bridge; then along his lines and the lines of the land laid out for Samuel Hunt to Mamaroneck River; then down the stream of the said river to the place where the West branch falls into the said River and then up the stream of the said West branch to the place where it began, containing four thousand, four hundred and thirty-five acres, with all allowance for highways.

Given under my hand at New York, the tenth day of March, in the eighth year of his Majesty's Reign Anno Dom. 1721

CADWALLADER COLDEN,
Sur. Genl.' "

"On the 13th day of March, 1721-2 a royal patent was granted to Joseph Budd and the other persons named in the preceding resolutions and in the report of the surveyor-general, which letters patent recited the petition of Budd and his associates, and the proceedings subsequent thereto, and granted, ratified and confirmed unto the said petitioners, (naming them), their heirs and assigns, 'All that said tract or parcel of land

situate, lying and being in the County of Westchester, which is commonly known by the name of the White Plains,' and described as in the report of Cadwallader Colden, surveyor general."

There you have a picture, both in the words of authorities and in the language of the pioneers of the region, of the early struggle surrounding a hamlet's birth, out of vast travail. The royal patent was obtained after long controversy and the problem solved. The "cloud that had so long hung like an evil omen over the title to 'the White Plains' forever disappeared and the sun of prosperity once more shone brightly on the land and its people."

Caleb Heathcote was the owner of a large estate, and was one of six men who at one time owned almost the entire County.

During the period of settlement, there was altogether sixteen large Manor Grants in the State of New York to which the King of England set his Seal. Six of these grants lay in Westchester County.

The Manor of Scarsdale, over which Caleb Heathcote was the Lord was the last of these grants. It was recognized by the King on the 21st of March in the year 1701.

This act of the King made Caleb Heathcote a landed gentleman, the Lord of his Manor, with power to hold court on his estate, to levy taxes, to decide upon the right or wrong of any misdemeanors that might arise and gave him the power of life and death over his peasant farmers.

Heathcote named his Manor Scarsdale, after his home in England. The name means a dale of rocks and was suggested by the rocky outcroppings natural to the surroundings.

The Manor house was burned during the war of the Revolution and was never rebuilt.

(Scharfs History page 29-30, Vol. I)

In 1695 a step was taken that proved of great moment in the future settlement of Friends in Westchester County. John Harrison, of Flush-

ing, purchased of the Indians, a tract of land about nine miles in length and nearly three in width, "bounded on the north by the Rye ponds, on the east by Blind Brook, on the west by the Mamaroneck River, and on the south by the lands of Joseph Budd."

Harrison's purchase was made for the Settlement of Friends from Long Island. They called it "The Purchase", and *it* is still so known.

About the year 1698, a cargo of negroes brought from the coast of Guinea was landed at Rye, in the interest of Frederick Philipse of Philipse Manor.

Slavery continued to exist, without any protest against it until the Quakers took action to free the slaves held by their members.

. . . . . .

In 1799 the Legislature took steps for the general abolition of slavery and all slaves were set free by the State on July 4th, 1827.

When the Quakers of Purchase liberated their slaves, they settled them upon the rugged highlands, a tract of land north of Horton's pond (now Silver Lake) known as the "Nigger Hills".

CHAPTER III

"Quaroppas" During Indian Days

AS has been briefly told, White Plains, called by the Indians "Quaroppas", originally formed a portion of Rye. The original grant specified 4435 acres. As late as the year 1683 this territory was still in the complete possession of its aboriginal owners, uncontested by the white man.

The important Chiefs, identified with the signing of the grant, were *sachems* of the Weckquaskech and Siwanoy Tribes, a portion of the very powerful group whose land lay between the Connecticut River and the Hudson River. To Rye in 1660 came sturdy New England settlers, competent, resourceful and fired by genuine pioneering enthusiasm, who extended their activities as far as the Mamaroneck River by 1683. They purchased the section between this body of water and the Bronx River, thus launching an inspiring chapter in the history of the State.

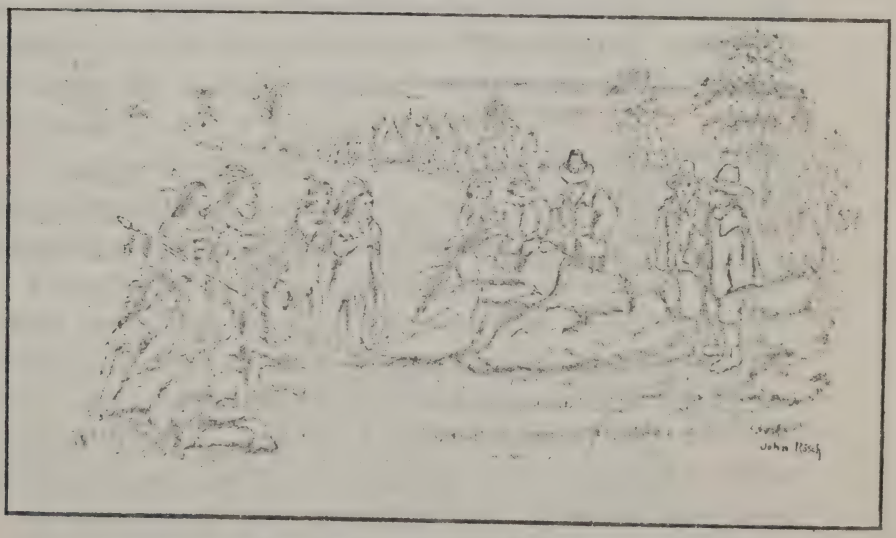
Old Indian Trails

The splendid automobile roads and highways of modern Westchester were once an intricate network of long-used Indian trails. How many of this generation know the beautiful and poetic Indian legends connected with these trails and with our local rivers and lakes, hills and valleys? Although the entire County is rich in such material, little has ever been written about it; and such fragments as exist are scattered through numerous volumes, with little or no continuity.

If we are to know this almost vanished race, the Indian of Westchester County, his lands, habits, and romance, it will be necessary to reconstruct his record with sympathetic attention to the soil that fostered him and every native element of his progress and decline.

The Indians who made the westerly section of White Plains their home constituted the Weekquaskech Tribe, a tribal portion of the well-known Mohican nation. Their main village was what we know as Dobbs Ferry. They were under the subjection of the powerful Iroquois, fierce warriors and rulers of the North Country, comprising the Hudson and Mohawk Valleys. The Iroquois dominated the Federation which bore the descriptive title, The Six Nations.

These Westchester Indians have left us a priceless heritage of early America; and it is impossible to view the scrawled



PURCHASE OF THE WHITE PLAINS — NOVEMBER 22, 1683

names and marks of those eighteen Chiefs on that Deed of Sale, without feelings of awe and respect.

The Signing of the Deed

A large assemblage of Indians, so the records state, gathered to witness and to participate in, the signing of the Deed of Sale. They gathered around a mass of flat rocks at a point generally identified today within the block bounded on the North by Westchester Avenue, on the East by Paulding Street, on the West by Hale Avenue and on the South by Hiram Street, one block west of the Westchester and Boston Railroad Station.

The old "Westchester Path" was the original Indian Trail through this County, and is mentioned in many of the earlier Deeds. At this time, the Easterly part of White Plains was in possession of the Siwanoys, and Poningo (now Rye) was their tribal village, where Ponus, famous Head Chief, was quartered. The emblem of the Siwanoys was a bird, as a rule crudely carved in stone, a mythical "Thunderbird" which according to the Indian traditions, is held sacred and deeply reverenced.

It was in the presence of this strange symbolism that the Green Corn Dance was annually held, at the Thanksgiving period, in gratitude for bountiful harvests.

Taxes levied on them appeared to be as difficult to meet as they are with us today. They came from a source not to be ignored. A grim Mohawk warrior came as a messenger annually, representing the great Confederacy of the Iroquois, demanding tribute. And the tribes understood only too well that they must obey these demands when presented to them by an emissary of their invincible foe. It would have been easy for them to murder him, but no such act ever took place;

for they were aware that all too soon a horde from the Iroquois would descend upon them, taking frightful revenge for the death of their envoy.

The Indians of Westchester at this period were expert, skilled workmen, as remnants of their civilization testify. This writer has found conclusive evidence of their one-time occupancy of Dusenbury Hill, in the shape of carefully fashioned arrow-heads, an exceptionally fine spear-head and a double-faced mortar, weighing 18 pounds. The last-named exhibit was discovered in a dry stone wall, where Park Circle is now located. It had evidently been picked up by farmers of an early day, and placed in the wall during its construction. Embedded in a solid ledge of rock on the North side of Post Road, a few yards west of the extension of Orawaupum Street, another Indian mortar was in plain sight of passersby. A skilled quarryman was employed to extricate this relic and remove it to Broadway Park. Although the utmost care was taken in feather drilling, the mortar could not be rescued intact and a necessary blast harmed it irreparably.

The Community Kitchen

The stone mortar or pot-hole mentioned above was an exceptionally large one and served a dual purpose: when used for cooking it was filled with water, small stones were heated and dropped in, the process repeated until the water reached the boiling point. When dry, it was used for grinding corn into meal. Natural conditions were ideal here for tribal life.

The several tribes living in different sections of the County bore different names, but adhered to their original stock—the Algonquins. In the course of time their lands were either sold to the white man or were wrested from them by sharp prac-

tice in exchange for cooking utensils, necklaces, beads and other paltry trinkets irresistible to the women of the tribes.

It is a dark chapter in the story that one commodity of barter always took first place with the Indian—rum! And early settlers knew this inherent weakness for "fire-water". Because they could not read the contracts drawn up for them, members of the tribes soon became easy prey to the unscrupulous. They had no conception of the principles of "civilized" law and were ignorant of the binding clauses of such contracts and incapable of comprehending any other idea of ownership than actual physical possession.

The same territory was sold by them over again, innocently enough, according to their logic. This was the case in White Plains and Scarsdale. Mr. Richbell—the same Richbell referred to in a previous chapter—was one of the victims. He had become a heavy owner of land hereabouts in 1661 and the Indians "sold" him a parcel between Pell's purchase and the Rye property. Then these same Indians turned about and sold it again to another buyer, and only after years of protracted dispute could he establish the validity of his original claim.

In the matter of religion, they believed in the "Great Spirit", who was good, all-wise, all-powerful and to whose happy hunting grounds they hoped to go after death, although their beliefs also included the exclusion from such idealistic realms of all Indians incurring His displeasure. When the "Spirit of Evil" descended, all hope vanished and punishment was swift and unerring.

Social Customs

The Indians produced fire in the traditional manner by turning a stick very rapidly in the small crevice of another piece

of wood, their agile fingers never failing to bring about practical ignition. Being unable to cut down trees with their stone axes, they resorted to fire, burning the trunk at its extreme base and removing charred portions as they collected.

For food they raised crops of maize or Indian corn, beans and pumpkins, blessed by the fertile Westchester soil; while tobacco, of course, came in for a generous share of cultivation. Agricultural implements were fashioned effectively from clam shells or the shoulder blades of deer. Copper ornaments worn by the women were wrought from metal obtained through barter or from capture in distant areas, since no deposits of copper exist in this region.

Of medical science they knew nothing except the primitive healing of cuts and wounds by application of oil extracted from the beaver, recognized as having many virtues.

As seems to be true the country over, Westchester Indians fell easy victims after their first taste of strong drink. The taste was unpleasant to them in the beginning; but they exulted over the stimulating after-effects of potent rum. Henry Hudson is credited with saying that when he first offered the intoxicating cup to his Indian visitors, while at anchor in New York Bay, they one and all refused the liquor after touching their lips to it. But finally, one of their number, fearing that offense might be taken at the rejection of it, made bold to swallow it and experienced great exhilaration of spirits in consequence, this led his companions to follow his example, with pleasing effects.

Their concept of a Heaven was materialistic, and was supposed to exist in a "southerly direction", replete with every possible comfort and luxury. There would be no work, no sorrow, no struggle for existence, and more game than all the arrows ever fashioned could bring down. Their superstition was

vast, being constantly fed by fear of an Evil Spirit. To keep such peril at a safe distance, every village maintained a *Shaman* or Witch Doctor, that highly specialized job concentrating on concocting such weird and potent charms, medicines and fetiches as would protect those suffering from disease or beset by evil visitants.

The Beginning of Hostilities

Much of the mistrust on the part of the Indians was due to aggravated misunderstandings in regard to permanent ownership of large tracts of land. The Indian could not seem to grasp that an "absolute sale" carried with it complete and perpetual white-man possession, and when a sharp consciousness of this took place, and they were permanently ousted from lifetime ancestral regions, with no hope of ever regaining them in the original sense, rage took the form of bitter conflict. So frequent and so effective were the atrocities committed by them and so severe the reprisals of the Colonists, that extermination became almost a reality.

The early settlers found the Indian hospitable and their reception friendly. Soon, however, the encroachment by these suave, determined strangers took form in subterfuge, intrigue, trickery and, above all else, scientific power; and there were fast-fading dreams of a heritage born of centuries. Dutch arrogance, the selfish motives and the treachery of the English, and allied combative measures, inflamed the Indians, adding fuel to the flames of hatred and a lust for cruel revenge. This quotation from an authentic description of what took place when early settlers sought to make their way from Greenwich, Connecticut, overland, to Bedford Village, is the grim testimonial to what transpired when Indian rage burst its bounds.

The date—December, 1644, and a dark, brooding night set the stage:—

"The combined efforts and plotting of the Calvinists, the Dutch and the English led by Captain John Underhill, noted Indian fighter, surprised the Indian settlement in what is now Bedford Village, and brutually slaughtered over five hundred men, women and children, leaving only a trail of dead and smoldering ashes. The success of this tragedy has been looked upon by the moralists and poets alike as one of the darkest blots in the history of our country."

Flushed with victory, the detachment which committed this wholesale slaughter was feasted at Fort Amsterdam and thanks given for what was looked upon as a brilliant coup of New Netherland arms:

The White Man slaughtered the wild life for his sport and selfish pleasure. The Indian, whose very existence depended upon this wild life that was fast being depleted by the more powerful weapons of the white man, naturally rebelled against this wanton destruction of his daily food. He had no more power of resisting the European than the sheep had of resisting the wolf.

White men as well as red could cherish dreams of revenge, particularly as Indian unrest was a constant threat to white security. Biographers call Underhill, who had been a friend to Mrs. Hutchinson, "an amusing old scamp" and it is he of whom Whittier wrote:—"Goodly and stately and grave to see, into clearing space rode he". Whittier might have added that he bore the sword of vengeance in his hand and an Old Testament hatred in his heart.

The next day's sun rose over a land shorn of its pristine power. Indian dominance was over in Westchester County, though redmen lived on here for years after, but the white man had set his foot firmly and forever on these shores. With the unfurling of the canvas of the Half Moon in 1609, the doom of the redman was sealed in Westchester County.

It is interesting to find that Captain John Underhill, born about 1597, came to this country in 1632 and that Thomas V. Underhill, Ex-Sheriff of Westchester County, born in White

Plains, January 20, 1870, is the eighth generation in descent from Captain Underhill.

Chief Deer, with a wealth of experience and information, was my informant for much of the contents of this paragraph. Chief Deer, portrayed Chief Orawaupum in 1933 on the 250th Anniversary of the purchase of White Plains from the Indians in 1683.

Mr. Frederick H. Dettmer of Port Chester, an authority on Indian Lore of Westchester County, was likewise an informant.

Taken from the Gazetteer of the State of New York by Horatio Gates Spafford, LL.D., published in 1824.

"The Village of White Plains is pleasantly situated on a fine plain three-quarters of a mile E. (Broadway) of Bronx Creek, and contains a court house, two churches and a small collection of houses.

"It is seven miles E. of the Hudson and 7 from Sawpit (now Port Chester).

"The historic events connected with the name of White Plains will live long in the pages of American history; and the autumn of 1776 was made memorable by a bloody battle on these plains, Oct. 28, as well as a series of disasters of the most portentous import. Population, 675, census of 1820; 113 farmers, 46 mechanics, 8 traders, 63 free blacks, 8 slaves; taxable property $237,668. No returns as to schools, etc. Electors 134; 5,300 acres improved land; 653 cattle; 150 horses, 426 sheep; 4,236 yards of cloth; 3 saw mills; 1 oil mill (flax seed), 3 fulling mills and 1 carding machine."

"NEW YORKER" PRINTS INDIAN DATA

Mainia, January 20, 1870, is the eighth generation in descent from Captain Underhill.

Chief Dyer, with a wealth of experience and information, was my informant for much of the contents of this paragraph. Chief Dyer, portrayed Chief Tamanupum in 1923 on the 250th Anniversary of the purchase of White Plains from the Indians in 1683.

Mr. Frederick H. Lettner of Port Chester, an authority on Indian Lore of Westchester county, was likewise an informant.

Taken from the Gazetteer of the State of New York by Horatio Gates Spafford, LL.D. published in 1824

"The Village of White Plains is pleasantly situated on a fine plain three-quarters of a mile E. (Broadway) of Bronx Creek, and contains a court house, two churches and a small collection of houses.

"It is seven miles E. of the Hudson and 7 from Sawpit (now Port Chester).

"The historic events connected with the name of White Plains will live long in the pages of American history; and the autumn of 1776 was made memorable by a bloody battle on these plains, Oct. 28, as well as a series of disasters of the most portentous import. Population, 675, census of 1820; 113 farmers, 10 mechanics, 3 traders, 6.5 free blacks, 8 slaves; taxable property $32,700. No returns as to schools, etc. Electors 134; 5,000 acres improved land; 653 cattle; 150 horses, 720 sheep; 4,250 yards of cloth; 4 saw mills; 1 oil mill (flax seed), 3 fulling mills and 1 card machine.

CHAPTER IV

Highways of Romance

STREETS are the living arteries of life to every new community and as a hamlet becomes a prosperous city, their identities change, their importance grows or decreases. The mere cow-path of the past blossoms into a beautiful boulevard of homes and the muddy little "Main Street" is transformed into an imposing business highway.

White Plains is peculiarly fortunate in having made its communication lines a remarkable memorial to the historic past; and now that we have witnessed the virtual birth of its deeded identity, it is fitting that we look down on that original web of early streets and study their relation to the present day.

What is now known as North Street was originally the first important through artery from Rye to White Plains, six rods wide and known as the "Queens Highway". This was in 1708. Broadway was in existence in 1697, but was not formally laid out and duly recorded until November 22, 1734, when it was described as: "Beginning between the home lots, formally laid out to Thomas Brown and Caleb Hyatt, where the road is laid out that goeth down to Eastchester; from thence, northerly by the fronts of said home lots on each side of the said street or highway, to be the same as now left until it cometh to the Great Madow Brook". (Great Meadow Brook is the stream that flows from our present Reservoir, crosses North Broadway and enters the Bronx River, north of the Rural Cemetery)

The old York Road to Eastchester was formally started in 1717. It followed the original Indian Trail. (now Maple Avenue) The road to the Hudson River, known as the "Dobbs Ferry Road", was begun in 1730 along the north side of the Presbyterian Church. In 1764 the terminus of this road was Broadway, later changed to Rockledge and Spring Street. Lake Street, as we know it now, was laid out in 1762 and was originally called "The Road to Connecticut". The Mamaroneck highway to that section had its inception in 1725. Apart from small, short unimportant lanes and paths, these comprised all vital roads in existence here prior to 1830.

It is appropriate that the streets of White Plains, the great highways and boulevards leading into and out of it and many of its landmarks, should be associated with and in numerous instances, bear names of illustrious founders.

A current writer, in an article entitled "Washington at White Plains" sees the General as a phantom visitor, speaking to direct Descendants of Yesterday:—"A thousand wonderful recollections are inevitable. If you could read my thoughts, you might find them crowded with the rush of events of the long ago.

History and Our Highways

No city of its size in the United States has paid greater or more lasting tribute to its founders and defenders, in the naming of streets and highways, than White Plains, although the fact is not generally appreciated. Its early history is kept alive through these patriotic names, covering not alone pioneer citizens but those who were associated with Washington and who at one time or another walked the same paths with him during the Revolution.

INDEPENDENCE STREET—Named, of course, in honor of the country's most historic events, weighty in both significance and results and famous throughout the civilized world.

WASHINGTON AVENUE—Named after the Father of Our Country and the first President of the United States.

LAFAYETTE STREET—Named in honor of the Marquis de la Fayette, who embraced and fought for the cause of Liberty in America.

MADISON AVENUE—Named for James Madison, the fourth President of the United States, and one of the framers of the Constitution.

FRANKLIN AVENUE—Named after Benjamin Franklin, who assisted in drafting the Declaration of Independence, who was Minister to France from 1776 to 1785 and one of the greatest of all Americans.

DEKALB AVENUE—Named for Baron DeKalb, a courageous and accomplished military officer, who was in White Plains in 1778. He was killed at the Battle of Camden, South Carolina, August 16, 1780.

CONCORD AVENUE—"The Shot heard 'around the World' " thus again reverberates here.

LEXINGTON AVENUE—A name familiar to every patriot—the place where one of the first real clashes of arms of the Revolutionary War occurred.

JEFFERSON AVENUE—Named after Thomas Jefferson, the author of the Declaration of Independence and third President of the United States.

TRENTON AVENUE—On Chatterton Hill commemorates Washington's brilliant exploit on Christmas Eve of 1776 after crossing the Delaware.

Independence Avenue—Named at Boston, in honor of the country's most historic events, weighty in both significance and results and famous throughout the civilized world.

Washington Avenue—Named after the Father of Our Country and the first President of the United States.

Lafayette Street—Named in honor of the Marquis de la Fayette, who embarked and fought for the cause of Liberty in America.

Madison Avenue—Named for James Madison, the fourth President of the United States, and one of the framers of the Constitution.

Franklin Avenue—Named after Benjamin Franklin, who assisted in drafting the Declaration of Independence, who was Minister to France from 1776 to 1785 and [illegible] of the greatest of all Americans.

Dekalb Avenue—Named for Baron DeKalb, a courageous and accomplished military officer, who was in Whites Plains in 1776. He was killed at the Battle of Camden, South Carolina, August 16, 1780.

Cornwallis Avenue—"The Shot heard around the World" rings again reverberates here.

Lexington Avenue—A name familiar to every patriot—the place where one of the first real clashes of arms of the Revolutionary War occurred.

Jefferson Avenue—Named after Thomas Jefferson, the author [illegible] Declaration of Independence and third President of the United States.

Clinton [illegible]

LIBERTY STREET—The Liberty Bell, the symbol of American Independence upon which is inscribed the undying legend, "Proclaim Liberty throughout all the land, unto all the inhabitants thereof".

WAYNE AVENUE—Named after "Mad Anthony" Wayne, who so brilliantly recaptured Stony Point in 1779.

HALE AVENUE—Named after Nathan Hale. Recalls at once the historic cry:—"My only regret is that I have but one life to give to my country!"

HAMILTON AVENUE—This street is in all probability named after Washington's warm personal friend, Alexander Hamilton, the young Captain in command of artillery on Chatterton Hill.

ALEXANDER AVENUE—On Chatterton Hill; also named after Hamilton. On the map of Chatterton Hill Lots filed in the Register's Office September 8, 1891, Map Number 1127, this street is designated as "Alexander Hamilton Avenue."

BATTLE AVENUE—Perpetuates the memory of that part of the mighty struggle for freedom, which took place October 28, 1776.

PUTNAM AVENUE—Named after Major General Israel Putnam who was in command of Purdy Hill (Dusenbury) on the day of the deciding battle.

OAKLEY AVENUE—This area was part of the original Oakley Purchase; and it is not unlikely that those who named this street had in mind the name of the celebrated guide.

PAULDING STREET and VAN WART AVENUE—Undoubtedly these names were selected in honor of two of the captors of Major André.

McDougal Avenue—Named after General McDougal who was in command on Chatterton Hill October 28, 1776.

Smallwood Avenue—Named after the officer who met the first attack on Chatterton Hill.

Haslet Place—Named after the General who was in command of the center of the Hill.

Heath Avenue—Named after General Heath who was in command of Hatfield Hill on Lake Street.

Greene Place—Named after General Nathaniel Greene.

Presidents of the United States have not been overlooked in the naming of the streets and avenues of White Plains, for there are the following: Lincoln, McKinley, Grant, Garfield, Jackson, Harrison, Fillmore, Cleveland, Wilson, Harding, Coolidge and Roosevelt.

Indian Names

It is but natural that in a community so closely identified with Indians, as the original proprietors of the land, there should be streets interestingly named after tribes and individual chiefs. Such names are poetic, musical, romantic and often definitely descriptive. It is likely to be characteristic of many American cities and towns that their names of streets are repetitious and prosaic. Such Indian names as are used here possess an individuality which is appropriate and historically happy.

Of the streets named after Indians, outstandingly characteristic are Orawaupum Street and Kensico Avenue. As regards the latter, Kensico was a sturdy *sachem* of the Siwanoy tribe and one of the signers of the historic land Deed.

Mamaroneck was a tribal Chief of the Siwanoys, and while translations are somewhat in doubt, the name means,

literally, "leading to tide-water" according to some authorities. It would certainly seem appropriate.

Quoropas was the Indian name for White Plains.

MT. MISERY—Existent data reveals no reason for this name, although there are events in connection with the Battle of White Plains which may have given rise to this name. It was during October and November, 1776, that the farmer boys and woodsmen of Washington's army found no solace, no material shelter on this bleak stretch. The trees were leafless, the position exposed, and soon both bitter cold and gnawing hunger beset the brave group who were there.

VIRGINIA ROAD—What could be more natural than that the native State of George Washington should be thus held in historic reverence.

Changing the Names of Streets

Today, and down through the path of the years, incoming generations persist in an attempt to re-christen streets, highways and avenues, often for what must be said to be purely commercial reasons. That a certain number of changes is desirable, as an improvement over the old names, is, of course, true. When White Plains was yet in its infancy, the one principal thoroughfare was called Railroad Avenue, a crude designation. In 1912, a tempestuous agitation took place on the subject of a more pleasing name. Some wanted it to be known as Central Avenue (which it was for a short distance), while others were equally determined to adopt that country-wide "Main Street", so ironically caricatured by Sinclair Lewis in his notable book.

It was Valentine Hodgson who suggested the name of "Graham Avenue", after the man who was instrumental in

literally, "leading to tide-water" corresponding to some authorities. It would certainly seem appropriate.

Quoropas was the Indian name for White Plains.

Mr. Minnay—Existent data reveals no reason for this name, although there are events in connection with the Battle of White Plains which may have given rise to this name. It was during October and November, 1776, that the farmer boys and woodsmen of Washington's army found no solace, no material shelter on this bleak stretch. The trees were leafless, the position exposed, and soon both bitter cold and gnawing hunger beset the brave group who were there.

Kotary Road—What could be more natural than that the native State of George Washington should be thus held in historic reverence.

Changing the Names of Streets

Today, and down through the path of the years, incoming generations persist in an attempt to re-christen streets, highways and avenues, often for what must be said to be purely commercial reasons. That a certain number of changes is desirable, as an improvement over the old names, is, of course, true. When White Plains was yet in its infancy, the one principal thoroughfare was called Railroad Avenue, a crude designation. In 1912, a tempestuous agitation took place on the subject of a more pleasing name. Some wanted it to be known as Central Avenue (which it was for a short distance), while others were equally determined to adopt that country-wide "Main Street" so ironically caricatured by [illegible] in his notable book.

It was also [illegible] suggested to name it "Graham Avenue", after the man who was instrumental in

keeping White Plains as the County Seat. Dr. Graham was a supervisor and a County Judge for six years. Unquestionably, it would have been most fitting to name our principal street in honor of this loyal and patriotic citizen, who, incidentally, gave the ground upon which the first Court House was erected, an act that really resulted in establishing White Plains as the County Seat. But majority opinion ruled; and so it is "Main Street".

There have been frequent movements to rename Mamaroneck Avenue, with an eye to its modern business growth. The objection of difficult pronunciation was also mentioned, but no change has, fortunately, I think, so far resulted.

A city so surely linked with the history of our National struggle, with legend and Indian romance, does well to lovingly and reverently preserve original street names.

CHAPTER V

A Village Begins to Grow

SLOWLY we have seen the actual birth of a typical American village through much desperate travail: the coming of the resolute settlers to territory long under the domain of Indians, the establishment of common centers of progress; the branching-out of individual settlements, one of which was White Plains; the purchases of land from the Indians; insurrection on their part as they became aware of the binding force of regretted signatures.

It will be interesting, therefore, at this juncture, to part the curtains of the Past and look in on White Plains, its people, homes and modes of living when it was but a small hamlet.

There exists today, in the possession of the White Plains City Clerk, a faded, yellowed Minute Book dating back to this primitive community; and, because of the very homeliness of its contents, together with the verbiage of a people more concerned with self-preservation than with niceties of grammar, it supplies a vivid picture of our ancestors.

This is the original Minute Book in which minutes were kept, from year to year, of the meetings of the Free Holders and inhabitants of the White Plains that used to be. Time's hand had dealt severely with the archive, for names and words are often blurred and many pages so mutilated as to defy translation.

CHAPTER V

A Village Begins to Grow

SYNOPTICALLY, we have seen the actual birth of a prehistoric American village through much deliberate travail: the coming of the resolute settlers to territory long under the domain of Indians, the establishment of common centers of property; the branching-out of individual settlements, one of which was White Plains; the purchases of land from the Indians; insurrection on their part as they became aware of the binding force of regretted signatures.

It will be interesting, therefore, at this juncture, to part the curtains of the Past and look in on White Plains, its people, homes and modes of living when it was but a small

There exists today, in the possession of the White Plains City Clerk, a faded, yellowed Minute Book dating back to this primitive community; and, because of [illegible] very homelikeness of its contents, together with the verbiage of a people more concerned with self-preservation than with niceties of grammar, it supplies a vivid picture of our ancestors.

This is the original Minute Book in which minutes were kept, year [illegible] year, of the meetings of the Free Holders and Inhabitants of the White Plains that used to be. Time's hand had dealt severely with the archive, for names and words are often blurred and many pages so m[illegible]

Such intermittent quotations as are given are verbatim and illegible sections are represented by dots. No attempt is made to quote the entire text.

"Minutes of first meeting of Free Holders and inhabitants, 1725-1726, at a meeting held at Ye White Plains—April Ano. Dom. 1726 Caleb Hyat Jr. was chosen Clerk for ye year ensuing:

"Sen. Constable for ye year ensuing.

"Caleb Hyat Se. Supervisor for ye year ensuing. Jonathan . . . . . Jr. Chosen collector for the year ensuing.

"Daniel Lane & Benjamin Brundage was chosen Assessors for ye year ensuing. Samuel H . . . . . and Jonathan Purdy was chosen overseers for roads for the ensuing year. Abraham S . . . . . was chosen pounder of ye year ensuing. Jonathan L . . . . and John Turner was chosen fence viewers for the ensuing year.

"Timothy Purdy, Gilbert Horton, James Sniffen, Assessors."

And here is an extract containing minutes of April 3rd. Familiar names are to be noted:

"At a meeting held by ye freeholders and inhabitants of said place, it was carried by a majority of votes that, etc. The following officers were chosen for one year:

"Caleb Hyatt Jr. Clerk.

"John Turner, Constable and collector and to gather ye quit rents.

"Elisha Budd, Supervisor.

"Caleb Horton
Joshua Hatfield—Assessors

"Jacob Griffen
Abraham Hatfield—overseers of roads

"William Anderson
George French—fence viewers

"Moses Owen—Pounder

"The pounder is to build a good and sufficient pound upon . . . . . cost and charges and is to place ye pound on or near the place where ye school house formerly was and is to have fees as it was stated ye last year.

"Rams not to run at large between August 10th and October 20th. Moses Owne, Gabriel Lynch and Caleb Hyatt Jr. to be sworn that the bounds of ye several (rights) and divisions of ye White Plains land has

been copp(ied) out of ye Original Bounds and has been carefully paired by them and that it is a true coppe.

"also that Caleb Hyatt Jr. is to have a 6 shillings and . . . . . pence for his pains and trouble for copying ye (bounds of ye several rights and divisions of ye White Plains land and findin 9 sheets of paper. Justice Purdy is to have 10 shillings for his pains and trouble for laying out ye fifth and last divisions.

"At a later date the fence viewers were given one shilling each as a reward for their services in viewing fences and damages for time and no more.

"Mose Owen the pounder, sheep not to run on ye common for this year. Hogs not to run upon ye commons without being sufficiently ringed or cut in their noses so as they cannot Roote.

"Dr. Grahamm, Pounder. Pounded horses and neat cattle shall pay 9 pence a head and for sheep one penny.

"Horses and sheep shall not run loose in ye streets."

Compare these minutes with those of the White Plains of today! Yet there are taxes and fines and penalties and even a rule against automobiles "running loose" in ye modern streets.

"All ye shop keepers or tradesmen of any kind shall be assessed by ye assessors best knowing of their incomes and all money that any person may have at interest.

"Horses and mares shall not run in ye streets unless hoppled. Swine shall not run in ye streets unless run or looped."

Entry: No minutes were kept for the years 1777 to 1782 inclusive, the Revolutionary period. Such notes as follow reflect life and conditions, as greater problems inevitably developed — with special emphasis on the scriptural adage: "The poor ye always have with you."

The next meeting was called on April 1st. 1783 at the house of Uriah Travis. The necessary officers were chosen. Among the names we find were those of Cornelius Oakley, the celebrated guide, for assessor; Captain John Falconer, con-

A VILLAGER GROWS TO ADULTHOOD

been compiled) out of ye Original Records and has been carefully perused by them and that it is a true copye.

"Also that Caleb Hyam Jr. to have a 5 shillings and . . . . . pence for his pains and trouble for copying ye (bounds of ye several rights divisions of ye White Plains land and finish 3 sheets of paper. Justice Purdy is to have 10 shillings for his pains and trouble for laying out ye fifth and last division.

"At a later date the town officers were given one shilling each as a reward for their services in [illegible] for [illegible] and no more.

"Those Owen the pound[illegible], have not to run on or common on for this year. They not to run upon [illegible] without [illegible] sufficiently yoked or cut in their noses so as [illegible]

"Item. Orchardman, Pound[illegible] [illegible] shall pay 9 pence a head and for [illegible]

Horses and swine shall not ru[illegible] in ye street.

Compare these minutes with those of "White Plains of today! Yet there are [illegible] and penalties an[illegible] even a rule against automobiles "running loose" in ye modern streets.

"All ye shop keepers or tradesmen of any kind shall be [illegible] by ye assessors best knowing of their measures and all things that any person may have at interest.

"Horses and swine shall not run on ye streets unless hobbled. Swine shall not run in ye streets unless run a lo[illegible]."

Entry: No minutes were kept for the years 1777 to 1782 inclusive, the Revolutionary period. Such notes as follow reflect life and conditions, as greater problems inevitably developed.— with special emphasis on the scriptural adage "The poor ye always have with you."

The next meeting was called on April 1st, 1783 at [illegible] house of Uriah Travis. The necessary office a were chosen. Among the [illegible] were those [illegible]

stable and collector — in whose house Washington was entertained in 1781.

Compensation for services of the overseers of the poor were at the discretion of the Supervisor and Town Clerk. Twelve pounds to be raised for support of the poor.

"If hogs are found without rings and are rutting up the streets, any person may put rings in their noses and shall receive 4 shillings for every hog from the owner.

"The contingent charges of the County to be paid out of the moneys in the hands of the poor masters for the year ensuing."

The Gaoler was exempt from paying the excise money if he kept the Court Room clean and the table therein "decent for worshipping assembleys". The poor masters to pay the taxes for the last year out of the moneys now in their hands belonging to the Town. The person keeping the Court House, to be excused from paying the money for his license for retailing "speritious" liquor.

"In 1802, forty dollars was raised towards the support of the poor. Likewise $200 in 1807, $300 in 1808, $400 in 1809, $250 in 1810. It was voted that the overseers of the poor lay out money for the purchase of a book for their use, at the expense of the Town."

A bone house [illegible] was [illegible]-
[illegible] in 1781.

Compensation for services of the overseers of the poor were at the direction of the Supervisor and Town Clerk. Twelve pounds to be raised for support of the poor.

"If hogs are found without rings and are rutting up the streets, any person may put rings in their noses and shall receive 4 shillings for every hog from the owner.

"The contingent charges of the County to be paid out of the monies in the hands of the poor masters for the year ensuing."

The Grader was exempt from paying the excise money if he kept the Court Room clean and [illegible] table therein "decent for worshipping assembly [illegible] The poor masters to pay the taxes for the last year out of the [illegible] money in their hands belonging to the Town. The person keeping the Court House to be excused from paying the money for his license for retailing "paper liquor" liquor.

"In 1801, forty dollars was raised towards the support of the poor. Likewise $100 in 1807, $100 in 1809, $200 in 1809, $250 in 1810. It was voted that the overseers of the poor lay out money for the [illegible] of a book for their use in the expense of the Town."

CHAPTER VI

Sparks of Independence

WHEN the first Continental Congress assembled in Carpenters Hall, Philadelphia, it was found that many of the ablest men from their various communities had been sent to speak in behalf of their Colonies. Before adjourning, provision was made for a second congress to meet the following May, if necessary; but when this second gathering took place, May 10th, 1775, blows had already been struck at Lexington and Concord.

On June 7th, Richard Henry Lee, in the name of the Virginia delegation, moved that "These united Colonies are and of right, ought to be free and independent States".

In response, a committee was chosen to draft the State paper proclaiming the Revolution, and setting forth the reasons for that momentuous stroke. Thomas Jefferson was made Chairman and the committee assigned to him the delicate task of framing the document.

On July 2nd, 1776, the Congress went on record in favor of Independence. On July 4th the final draft of Jefferson's paper was formally adopted. Contrary to tradition, no drama marked the roll-call, no Independence Bell rang out the news in joyous peals, no far-seeing prophet, looking down the centuries, beheld countless generations celebrating that event with solemn reverence—and fireworks.

A few days later the Declaration was read in the public plaza, later known as Independence Square. Copies were spread broadcast from New Hampshire to Georgia. The air

CHAPTER VI

Scenes of Independence

WHEN the first Continental Congress assembled in Carpenters' Hall, Philadelphia, it was found that many of the delegates, from their various communities, had been sent to speak in behalf of their Colonies. Before adjourning, provision was made for a second congress to meet the following May, if necessary; but when this second gathering took place, May 10th, 1775, blows had already been struck at Lexington and Concord.

On June 7th, Richard Henry Lee, in the second Virginia delegation, moved that "These united Colonies are and of right ought to be free and independent States."

In response, a committee was chosen to draft the State paper proclaiming the Revolution, and setting forth the reasons for that momentous stroke. Thomas Jefferson was made Chairman and the committee assigned to him the delicate task of framing the document.

On July 2nd, 1776, the Congress voted on record in favor of Independence. On July 4th the final draft of Jefferson's paper was formally adopted. Contrary to tradition, no drums marked the roll-call, no Independence Bell rang out the news in joyous peals, no far-seeing prophet, looking down the centuries, beheld countless generations celebrating that event with solemn reverence—and fireworks.

A few days later the Declaration was read in the public square, later known as Independence Square, before a throng of broadcloths from very respectable to "Conestoga."

was vibrant in the opening days of 1776, when Thomas Paine sent forth from the press the first of his powerful pamphlets, "Common Sense", calling for absolute independence without fear and without apologies. Paine boldly challenged the King, the British Constitution and the policies of the British Government.

In serried array he presented political and economic arguments for separation; "The rights of human nature are broad enough and firm enough to support the American cause; the blood of the slain calls for separation; it is not the affair of a city, a county, a province or a Kingdom—but a Continent . It is not a concern of the day but of all posterity to the end of time."

"O, Ye that love mankind! Ye that dare to oppose not only the tyranny but the tyrant, stand forth!" So ran the mighty plea.

"Sound doctrine and unanswerable reason", exclaimed Washington when he read it. Thousands of copies were circulated through all the Colonies, giving heart to the timid and quickening the intrepid.

This Prelude to my chapter and to the events igniting the flame which was soon to reach out to remote White Plains, has been set down in the works of countless historians, innumerable tracts, school books and records of this epoch-making hour. I give it simply, tersely, for the passing years have now written it into the hearts of men.

White Plains Answers the Roll-Call

When Philadelphia staged the opening scene of the great drama, White Plains was a typical small colonial village: a few stores and dwellings, two taverns—the Miles Oakley and Abraham Hattfield's; one church, Presbyterian, all located on

was vibrant in the opening days of 1776, when Thomas Paine sent forth from the press the first of his powerful pamphlets, "Common Sense", calling for absolute independence without fear and without apology. Paine boldly challenged the King, the British Constitution and the policies of the British Government.

In searred array he presented political and economic arguments for separation; "The rights of human nature are broad enough and firm enough to support the American cause; the blood of the slain calls for separation; it is not the affair of a city, a county, a province or a Kingdom—but a Continent. It is not a concern of the day but of all posterity, to the end of time."

"O, Ye that love mankind! Ye that dare to oppose not only the tyranny but the tyrant, stand forth!" So ran the mighty plea.

"Sound doctrine and unanswerable reason", exclaimed Washington when he read it. Thousands of copies were circulated through all the Colonies, giving heart to the timid and quickening the intrepid.

This Prelude to my chapter and to the events igniting the flame which was soon to reach out to remote White Plains, has been set down in the works of countless historians, innumerable tracts, school books and records of this epoch-making hour. I give it simply, tersely, for the passing years have now written it into the hearts of men.

Answers the Roll-Call

[illegible] signed the Declaration [illegible]

"[illegible] was a typical [illegible]

the main street, (now Broadway) and centered around the Court House. Other buildings, of an unpretentious character, were widely scattered over the adjacent farming country.

And farmers, as might be expected, were in the majority. Such produce as they garnered from various sources, was exchanged in the village for merchandise. They were gratefully happy and contented at their wood-burning firesides and under their sputtering home-made candles. Gradually, but surely came the tide which it had been ordained must dim the candles and leave ashes of grief on every hearth.

Neighbor became estranged from neighbor; father differed with son and brother was pitted against brother. The well-known Hatfield family was no exception. Gilbert Hatfield was an ardent patriot, while his brother, Abraham Hatfield, owner of the Tavern, was a rabid Tory. And the Tories were in the majority in White Plains. Despite drawbacks and lack of any real freedom in the truest sense, they feared the loss of their farms, their sources of modest revenue, their very homes.

Circulars and incendiary pamphlets were freely and widely distributed, signed by a mysterious unknown: "A Westchester Farmer". Because of the shrewdness and power with which they were written, the messages carried great weight with those stubbornly remaining loyal to the Kingdom of Great Britain.

Here is a typical abstract from one of the circulars:

"Good God, can we look forward to ruin, destruction and desolation of the British Empire without one relenting thought? Can we contemplate it with pleasure, and promote it with all our might and vigor and at the same time call ourselves His Majesty's most dutiful and loyal subjects?"

Referring to the importance of the flaxseed crops grown by the farmers, this writer unknown at the time continues:

"You know, my friends, that the sale of your seed not only pays your taxes, but furnishes you with many of the little conveniences and comforts of life. The loss of it for one year would be more damage to you than

the main street (now Broadway) and centered around the Court House. Other buildings, of an unprepossessing character, were widely scattered over the adjacent farming country.

And farmers as might be expected were in the majority. Such produce as they purveyed from various sources was exchanged in the village for merchandise. They were generally happy and contented at their wood-burning fireplaces and under their sputtering home-made candles. Gradually, but surely, came the tide which it had been ordained must dim the candles and leave ashes of grief on every hearth.

Neighbor became estranged from neighbor; father differed with son and brother was pitted against brother. The well-known Hatfield family was no exception. Gilbert Hatfield was an ardent patriot, while his brother, Abraham Hatfield, owner of the Tavern, was a rabid Tory. And the Tories were in the majority in White Plains. Despite drawbacks and lack of any real freedom in the truest sense, they feared the loss of their farms, their sources of modest revenue, their very homes.

Circular- and incendiary pamphlets were freely and widely distributed, signed by anonymous unknown: "A Westchester Farmer". Bonfires of the obnoxious and poison with which they were written, the messages carried great weight with those stubbornly remaining loyal to the Kingdom of Great Britain.

Here is a typical abstract from one of the circulars:

"Good God can we look forward to [illegible] of prosperous and desolation of the British Empire [illegible] one relenting thought? Can we contemplate it with pleasure and pride [illegible] it with all our might and view it as the same sun and our [illegible] is Majesty's most loyal and loyal subjects?"

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

paying the three-penny duty on tea, for twenty. Let us compare matters a little. It was inconvenient for me this year to sow more than one bushel of seed. I have threshed and cleaned up eleven bushels. The common price is now at least ten shillings, but I will throw off ten shillings for expenses.

"There remains five pounds. In five pounds there are four hundred three pences. Four hundred three pences currency will pay duty upon two hundred pounds of tea, even reckoning the exchange on London, at two hundred percent.

"I use in my family about six pounds of tea a year. Now two hundred pounds of tea at six pounds a year will last just thirty-three years and eight months. So to raise this monstrous duty on tea, which has raised all this confounded combustion in the country, I have only to sell the produce of one bushel flaxseed, once in twenty-four years."

Insidiously convincing, to be sure. In other fiery pamphlets "The Westchester Farmer" points out that non-importation will result in a great reduction in value of all farm products. The free release of such propaganda, going into homes everywhere in the County, had an immediate tendency to make enemies of life-long friends.

Such was the state of feeling when the Continental Congress met on April 11th, 1775 to take the census of the Free Holders of the County.

The call had the effect of not only bringing to White Plains those who favored a second Congress, but also a strong representation of those opposing the election of any Congress as a revolutionary proceeding. On the day fixed, about five hundred came to White Plains to attend the Court House meeting. The Loyalist (Tory) element proceeded to Hatfield's Tavern (Corner of Broadway and Maple Avenue), now the property of Hon. Humphrey J. Lynch. The Revolutionists (Patriots) met at the Miles Oakley Tavern, which was located opposite the Old Court House, now the State Armory.

The feverish day came; and the Revolutionists were in session, tense with excitement. The Loyalists entered in a

body, took no active part in the proceedings other than to express their objection to the legality thereof; and then as sternly returned to the Abraham Hatfield Tavern, singing lustily: "God Save the King!"

After reaching the Tavern the following protest was drawn up and signed:

"We the subscribers, Freeholders, and Inhabitants of the County of Westchester having assembled at White Plains, in consequence of certain advertisements, do declare our honest abhorence of all unlawful congresses and committees, and that we are determined at the hazard of our lives and properties, to support the King and Constitution, and that we acknowledge no representatives but the General Assembly, to whose wisdom we submit the Guardianship of our rights and privileges".

White Plains stood at the brink of a dangerous conflagration. The fuse had been lighted and its sparks were soon to be seen and heard.

RATIFICATION OF THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE
JULY 9, 1776

CHAPTER VII

Ratification of the Declaration of Independence, July 9th, 1776

BY far the most interesting and important event in the Revolutionary history of White Plains, was the assembling of the Provincial Congress of the Colony of New York, at the old Court House, on the 9th day of July, 1776.

The Congress was organized by the election of General Nathaniel Woodhull as President, who, within a few short weeks thereafter, was destined to lose his life by reason of wounds received at the hands of the British, on Long Island.

The following Deputies from Westchester County were present: Colonel Lewis Graham, Colonel Pierre Van Cortlandt, Major Ebenezer Lockwood, William Paulding, Captain Jonathan Platt, Samuel Haviland, Zebediah Mills, Colonel Gilbert Drake, Jonathan G. Tompkins, General Lewis Morris and Governeur Morris.

The Congress remained in session in White Plains until July 27th, pursuant to an adjournment from New York City.

This letter, dated July 6th, 1776, was received from the Delegates to the Continental Congress, then in session in Philadelphia, as History was made at every tick of the clock:

"Philadelphia, July 6th, 1776.

"Gentlemen:—

Although it is not possible to foresee the consequences of human actions, yet it is nevertheless a duty we owe ourselves and posterity in all our public councils to decide in the best manner we are able, and to trust the event, to that Being who controls both causes and events, so as to bring about his own determination.

"Impressed with this sentiment, and at the same time fully convinced that our affairs may take a more favorable turn, the Congress have judged it necessary to dissolve all connection between Great Britain and the American Colonies, and to declare them free and independent states, as you will perceive by the enclosed Declaration, which I am directed to transmit to you; and to request you will have it proclaimed in your Colony, in the way you shall think most proper.'

"The important consequences to the American States from this Declaration of Independence, considered as the ground and foundation of a future government, will naturally suggest the propriety of having it proclaimed in such a manner, as that the people may be universally informed of it.

"I have the honour to be, gentlemen,

Your most obedient and very humble servant,

"JOHN HANCOCK, *President.*

'Honourable Convention of New York."

The reaction to this great document is to be seen in the two quotations which follow, the first a brief acknowledgment of the President's letter:

"The Committee appointed to take into consideration the letter from our Delegates in Continental Congress, reported the following, which was unanimously agreed to, and is in the words following, that is to say:—"

'In Convention of the Representatives of the State of New York,

"White Plains, July 9, 1776.

"Resoluved unanimously, That the reasons assigned by the Continental Congress for declaring the United Colonies free and independent States are cogent and conclusive; and that while we lament the cruel necessity which has rendered that measure unavoidable, we approve the same, and will, at the risk of our lives and fortunes, join with the other Colonies in supporting it.

'Resolved, That a copy of the said Declaration and the aforegoing resolution be sent to the Chairman of the Committee of the County of Westchester, with orders to publish the same with beat of drums, at this place on Thursday next, and to give directions that it be published with all convenient speed in the several districts within the said county; and that copies thereof be forthwith transmitted to the other county committees within the State of New York, with orders to cause the same to be published in the several districts of their respective Counties."

Extract from the minutes.

ROBERT BENSON, *Secretary.*

Such documentary evidence as completes this dramatic official correspondence, goes to prove with what almost calm deliberation and unwavering fidelity to the Cause, these determined Colonists swept the issue on to its patriotic conclusion:

"Resolved, That 500 copies of the Declaration of Independence, with the two last mentioned resolutions of this Congress, for approving and proclaiming the same, be published in handbills and sent to all the county committees in this State.

"Resolved, That the Delegates of this State in Continental Congress be and they are hereby authorized to consent and adopt all such measures as they may deem conducive to the happiness and welfare of the United States of America.

"Ordered, That copies of the aforesaid resolutions be transmitted to the Continental Congress."

It is an interesting fact and highly suggestive of the readiness of the representatives of the people of this Colony to accept the action of the Continental Congress in dissolving all relations with the mother country, that the above quoted resolutions of July 9th were adopted before official notice of the Declaration of Independence had reached the Provincial Congress. This is shown by a letter from the Congress to the body sitting at Philadelphia:

"July 11th, 1776

"Sir:—Your letter of the 2nd July inst. enclosing a copy of the Declaration of Congress, proclaiming the United Colonies free and independent States, and requesting us to proclaim and publish the same in this Colony, has been received.

"It gives us pleasure to inform you, that, having been informed of that Declaration by our Delegates, we have anticipated the request of the Congress by our resolutions of the 9th inst., a copy of which was enclosed in a letter we did ourselves the honour of writing you this morning.

"We have the honour to be, etc.

By order, (unsigned)

"The Honourable John Hancock.

"A fit ending of this brief account of the circumstances attending the adoption of the Declaration of Independence by the Colony of New York,

[illegible] this [illegible] [illegible] goes to prove with what almost calm and unwavering fidelity to the [illegible] issue, these [illegible] swept the issue on to its patriotic conclusion:

"Resolved, That 500 copies of the Declaration of Independence, with the two last mentioned resolutions of this Congress, for approving [illegible] the same, be published in handbills and sent to all the county committees in this State.

"Resolved, That the Delegates of this State in Continental Congress be and they are hereby authorized to concert and adopt all such measures as they may deem conducive to the happiness and welfare of the United States of America.

"Ordered, That copies of the aforesaid resolutions be transmitted to the Continental Congress."

It is an interesting fact and highly suggestive of the readiness of the representatives of the people of this Colony to accept the action of the Continental Congress in dissolving all relations with the mother country, that the above quoted resolutions of July 9th were adopted before official notice of the Declaration of Independence had reached the Provincial Congress. This is shown by a letter from the Congress to the body sitting at Philadelphia:

"July 11th, 1776.

"Sir:—Your letter of the 2nd July last, enclosing a copy of the Declaration of Con[illegible] declaring the United Colonies free and independent States, and requesting us to proclaim and publish the same in [illegible] has been received.

[illegible] us pleasure to inform you that, having been informed of [illegible] our Delegates, we have anticipated the request of [illegible] resolutions of the 9th inst., a copy of which was en[illegible] of ourselves the honour of [illegible] on this memorable [illegible] etc.

[illegible] order.

[illegible] this brie[illegible]

[illegible] tion of [illegible]

is the following eloquent and prophetic letter from John Hancock to the Committee of Safety, then sitting at Fishkill, during a recess of the Provincial Congress, Viz:

"Baltimore, January 31, 1777

"Gentlemen:—

"As there is not a more distinguished event in the history of America than the Declaration of her Independence, nor any that, in all probability, will so much excite the attention of future ages, it is highly proper that the memory of that transaction, together with the causes that gave rise to it, should be preserved in the most careful manner that can be devised; I am therefore, commanded by Congress to transmit you the enclosed copy of the Act of Independence, with the list of the several members of Congress subscribed thereto, and to request that you will cause the same to be put upon record, that it may henceforth form a part of the archives of your State, and remain a lasting testimony of your approbation of that necessary and important measure.

"I have the honour to be, Gentlemen,

Your most obedient and very humble servant,

"JOHN HANCOCK, *President.*

'Honourable Convention of the State of New York."

The first Constitutional Convention in New York State was held in White Plains in July, 1776, its work being completed in Kingston the following April. (Copied from Manual for use of the Legislature of the State of New York, 1936, page 86.)

Sentiment in New York was sharply divided on this question of Independence. The ardent sons of Liberty and the Mechanics Union had been clamoring for it for several months. The appearance of Tom Paine's "Common Sense" and other pamphlets converted thousands. Young men—Alexander Hamilton, John Jay, Gouverneur Morris—and older leaders—Alexander McDougal, Philip Schuyler, Nicholas Herkimer and George Clinton, carried a majority of the people of the province with them, for severance of all political ties with the Mother Country. At the same time, it must be remembered that the Loyalists bitterly opposed Independence. They formed

a powerful part numerically and among them were many of the most influential persons in the province.

In the election of a new Congress to vote on Independence, New York was confronted by the greatest crisis in its history. Despite the activity of the Loyalists; the champions of Independence won an overwhelming victory. The majority of the old deputies were returned and practically all of the new members were prepared for separation.

At the morning session, the Committee of the convention, after electing General Nathaniel Woodhull president, appointing two secretaries and receiving the credentials of the deputies, listened to the reading of a letter from New York delegates at the Continental Congress, and the Declaration of Independence, which was inclosed with it. These two documents were at once referred to a committee consisting of John Jay, as Chairman, Mr. Yates, Mr. Hobart, Mr. Brasher and Mr. William Smith.

During the afternoon session, the Committee reported in favor of the adoption of the Declaration, and submitted resolutions providing for the publication of the complete document at the Court House in Westchester County on July 11th and also with all convenient speed in the several districts of the county.

This report provided for the printing of 500 copies of the Declaration and the distribution of these copies to the County committees throughout the State. But one original copy of this handbill is known to be in existence, and is now in the Huntington Library in California. The report of the Committee was unanimously adopted and messengers sent throughout the Colonies and to Philadelphia. The thirteen Colonies were transformed into "The United States of America".

a powerful part numerically and among men were many of the most influential persons in the province.

In the election of a new Congress to vote on Independence New York was confronted by the greatest crisis in its history. Despite the activity of the Loyalists, the champions of Independence won an overwhelming victory. The majority of the old deputies were returned and practically all of the new members were prepared for separation.

At the morning session, the Committee of the convention, after electing George Mitchell Woodhull president, appointing two secretaries and receiving credentials of the deputies, listened to the reading of a letter from New York delegates at the Continental Congress, and the Declaration of Independence, which was included with it. These two documents were at once referred to a committee consisting of John Jay, as Chairman, Mr. Yates, Mr. Hobart, Mr. Hamilton and Mr. William Smith.

During the afternoon session, the committee reported in favor of the adoption of the Declaration, and submitted resolutions providing for the publication of the complete document at the Court House in Westchester County on July 11th and also with all convenient speed in the several districts of the county.

This report provided for the printing of 500 copies of the Declaration and the distribution of these copies to the County Committees throughout the State. But one original copy of the document is known to be in existence, and is now in the Congressional Library in Washington. The [illegible] one-

WHITE-PLAINS, JULY, 9 1776.

IN CONVENTION, the REPRESENTATIVES of the STATE of NEW-YORK.

RESOLVED UNANIMOUSLY, That the Reasons assigned by the CONTINENTAL CONGRESS, for declaring the United Colonies FREE AND INDEPENDENT STATES, are cogent and conclusive, and that while we lament the cruel Necessity which has rendered that Measure unavoidable, we approve the same, and will, at the Risque of our Lives and Fortunes, join with the other Colonies in supporting it.

RESOLVED, That a Copy of the said Declaration and the aforegoing Resolution be sent to the Chairman of the Committee of the County of WESTCHESTER, with Orders to publish the same with Beat of Drum, at this Place, on Thursday next, and to give Directions that it be published with all convenient Speed in the several Districts within the said County.——And that Copies thereof be forthwith transmitted to the other County Committees within the STATE of New-York, with Orders to cause the same to be published in the several Districts of their respective Counties.

Extract from the Minutes,

ROBERT BENSON, Secretary.

IN CONGRESS, JULY 4, 1776.

A DECLARATION

BY THE

REPRESENTATIVES

OF THE

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA,

IN GENERAL CONGRESS ASSEMBLED.

WHEN in the course of human events, it becomes necessary for one people to dissolve the political bands which have connected them with another, and to assume among the powers of the earth, the separate and equal station to which the laws of nature and of nature's God entitle them, a decent respect to the opinions of mankind requires that they should declare the causes which impel them to the separation.

We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights, that among these are Life, Liberty and the Pursuit of Happiness.——That to secure these Rights, Governments are instituted among men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the Governed, that whenever any form of Government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the right of the people to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new Government, laying its foundation on such principles, and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to effect their safety and happiness. Prudence, indeed will dictate that Governments long established should not be changed for light and transient causes, and accordingly all experience hath shewn, that mankind are more disposed to suffer, while evils are sufferable, than to right themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed. But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same object, evinces a design to reduce them under absolute despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such Government, and to provide new guards for their future security. Such has been the patient sufferance of these Colonies, and such is now the necessity which constrains them to alter their former systems of Government. The history of the present King of Great Britain, is a history of repeated injuries and usurpations, all having in direct object the establishment of an absolute Tyranny over these States. To prove this, let facts be submitted to a candid world.

He has refused his assent to laws, the most wholesome and necessary for the public good.

He has forbidden his Governors to pass laws of immediate and pressing importance, unless suspended in their operation till his assent should be obtained; and when so suspended, he has utterly neglected to attend to them.

He has refused to pass other laws for the accommodation of large districts of people, unless those people would relinquish the right of representation in the legislature, a right inestimable to them, and formidable to tyrants only.

He has called together legislatures at places unusual, uncomfortable, and distant from the depository of their public records, for the sole purpose of fatiguing them into compliance with his measures.

He has dissolved representative Houses repeatedly, for opposing with manly firmness his invasions on the rights of the people.

He has refused for a long time, after such dissolutions, to cause others to be elected; whereby the legislative powers, incapable of annihilation, have returned to the people at large for their exercise; the State meanwhile exposed to all the dangers of invasion from without, and convulsions within.

He has endeavoured to prevent the population of these states; for that purpose obstructing the laws for naturalization of foreigners; refusing to pass others to encourage their migrations hither, and raising the conditions of new appropriations of lands.

He has obstructed the administration of justice, by refusing his assent to laws for establishing judiciary powers.

He has made judges dependent on his will alone, for the tenure of their offices, and the amount and payment of their salaries.

He has erected a multitude of new offices, and sent hither swarms of officers to harass our people, and eat out their substance.

He has kept among us, in times of peace, standing armies, without the consent of our legislatures.

He has affected to render the military independent of, and superior to, the civil power.

He has combined with others to subject us to a jurisdiction foreign to our constitution, and unacknowledged by our laws; giving his assent to their acts of pretended legislation.

For quartering large bodies of troops among us:

For protecting them, by a mock trial, from punishment for any murders which they should commit on the inhabitants of these states:

For cutting off our trade with all parts of the world:

For imposing taxes on us without our consent:

For depriving us in many cases, of the benefit of trial by jury:

For transporting us beyond seas to be tried for pretended offences:

For abolishing the free system of English laws in a neighbouring Province, establishing therein an arbitrary government, and enlarging its boundaries, so as to render it at once an example and fit instrument for introducing the same absolute rule into these colonies:

For taking away our Charters, abolishing our most valuable laws, and altering fundamentally the forms of our Governments:

For suspending our own Legislatures, and declaring themselves invested with power to legislate for us in all cases whatsoever.

He has abdicated Government here, by declaring us out of his protection and waging war against us.

He has plundered our seas, ravaged our coasts, burnt our towns, and destroyed the lives of our people.

He is at this time, transporting large armies of foreign mercenaries to compleat the works of death, desolation and tyranny, already begun with circumstances of cruelty and perfidy, scarcely paralleled in the most barbarous ages, and totally unworthy the head of a civilized nation.

He has constrained our fellow citizens taken captive on the high seas to bear arms against their country, to become the executioners of their friends and brethren, or to fall by their hands.

He has excited domestic insurrections amongst us, and has endeavoured to bring on the inhabitants of our frontiers, the merciless Indian Savages, whose known rule of warfare, is an undistinguished destruction, of all ages, sexes and conditions.

In every stage of these oppressions we have petitioned for redress, in the most humble terms; Our repeated petitions have been answered only by repeated injury. A Prince, whose character is thus marked by every act which may define a tyrant, is unfit to be the ruler of a free people.

Nor have we been wanting in attention to our British brethren. We have warned them from time to time of attempts by their legislature to extend an unwarrantable jurisdiction over us. We have reminded them of the circumstances of our emigration and settlement here. We have appealed to their native justice and magnanimity, and we have conjured them by the ties of our common kindred to disavow these usurpations, which would inevitably interrupt our connection and correspondence. They too have been deaf to the voice of justice and of consanguinity. We must, therefore, acquiesce in the necessity which denounces our separation, and hold them, as we hold the rest of mankind, enemies in war, in peace, friends.

We, therefore, the Representatives of the UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, in GENERAL CONGRESS assembled, appealing to the Supreme Judge of the world for the rectitude of our intentions, do, in the name, and by the authority of the good people of these Colonies, solemnly publish and declare, That these United Colonies are, and of right ought to be, FREE AND INDEPENDENT STATES; that they are absolved from all allegiance to the British Crown, and that all political connection between them and the State of Great-Britain, is and ought to be totally dissolved; and that as FREE AND INDEPENDENT STATES, they have full power to levy war, conclude peace, contract alliances, establish Commerce, and to do all other acts and things which INDEPENDENT STATES may of right do. And for the support of this declaration, with a firm reliance on the protection of Divine Providence we mutually pledge to each other our lives, our fortunes, and our sacred honour.

Signed by order and in behalf of the Congress,

JOHN HANCOCK, President.

ATTEST.

CHARLES THOMSON, Secretary.

VERSIONA PRINTED BY JOHN HOLT, IN WATERSTREET.

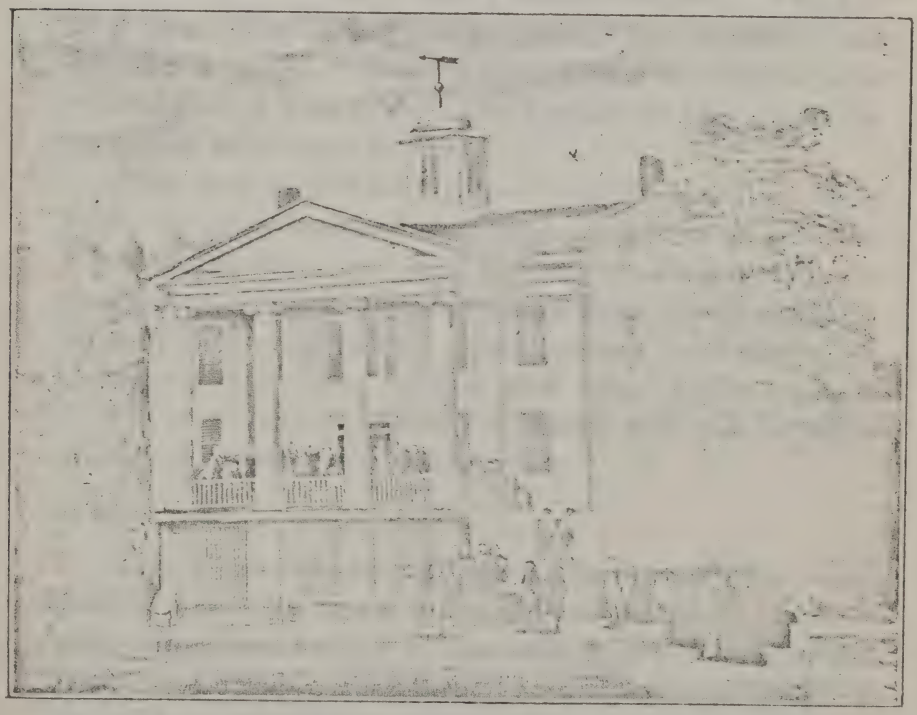
The delegates of the Colony of New York to the Continental Congress at Philadelphia did not vote for the Declaration of Independence on July 4th, 1776, because they lacked authority from official sources. On the 10th, a new Provincial Congress had been summoned to meet early in July and to be instructed by the electors on the great question of Independence. It was on July 2nd that the representatives in Philadelphia, wrote to their own Congress that the Declaration of Independence was likely to pass, complaining that their situation was "singular and delicate". This letter reached New York after the adjournment of the third Provincial Congress.

CHAPTER VIII

Progress of the Revolution

FROM the Court House on Broadway, John Thomas, the representative from our neighboring town of Rye, read and proclaimed to the public, on July 11th, 1776, the Declaration of Independence, as requested by John Hancock, the President of the Continental Congress, sitting in Philadelphia.

We can picture to ourselves the scene which was enacted on that memorable summer morning, when the assembled in-



Reading and Proclaiming the Declaration of Independence July 11th, 1776

habitants of Westchester County heard read from the steps, this impressive document. We can imagine the leaders of the legislative body, newly christened: "The Convention of the Representatives of the State of New York", grouped here, breathless with anticipation.

In the ranks were many of Westchester's most revered sons: Pierre Van Cortlandt, John Jay, Lewis Morris, Gouveneur Morris, Captain Samuel Crawford, Ebenezer Lockwood and Jonathan A. Tompkins, as previously mentioned. The hamlet was still small, primitive and of pioneer stock, yet great dignity attached to that assemblage. Nearby were the taverns where embittered men had met and formulated plans. "Main Street" had never known such excitement before. It was in 1734 that "The White Plains Street" was formally and officially dedicated. There is no record as to why the name was changed to Broadway. The Registry of Deeds does not reveal that name prior to 1850.

From that same Court House could be seen the fertile fields, the sunny meadows, the scattered farms of an area that would shortly know the blight of conflict. How great is the change that has taken place in the once dusty street! Its character has altered completely. Then it was the center of all community life where political and legal activity reigned. Now it is a beautiful highway of homes with the inevitable apartment houses slowly transgressing.

White Plains Before the Storm

White Plains was originally settled by men from the shoretown of Rye. By reason of its inland situation it played a quite inconspicuous part in the early public affairs of the American Colonies. Its inhabitants were intent on tillage of the soil and the incidental milling of their grain and sawing of

their lumber for the practical uses of their peaceful life. They were loyal to their sovereign and the oppression of the British was less sorely felt than in the more accessible coast towns.

By the removal of the County Court House from Westchester to White Plains in 1759, the life of the village grew steadily more variegated and interesting, and came into closer touch with the stirring events of the times. It became, naturally, the gathering place for public assemblies where the political affairs of the Colony were hotly discussed, and appeals to the spirit of liberty and independence were frequent and in deadly earnest.

It was inevitable that this small community should rise to a prominent position in Colonial affairs. And here was soon to be enacted one of the most important events in the history of the American Revolution. The Battle of White Plains, as a contest of arms, takes no rank among the great battles of history; but its bearing on the future of the American nation was of the utmost importance.

Lexington, April, 1775.

The Revolution, begun at the battle of Lexington, in April, 1775, had been, up to August, 1776, almost entirely favorable to the Colonists. The British Army, under Howe, had been forced to retire from Boston and take shelter in Halifax. Montgomery, though finally defeated at Quebec, had driven Carleton from Lake Champlain back to Montreal and then to Quebec. Clinton's naval expedition to South Carolina had been a complete debacle. The British had no foothold within the thirteen colonies.

But Parliament had at last begun to realize the magnitude of the task it had undertaken, had appropriated 1,000,000 pounds for a vigorous prosecution of the War, had raised a

their number for the practical uses of their peaceful life. They were loyal to their sovereign and the oppression of the British was less sorely felt than in the more accessible coast towns.

By the removal of the County Court House from Westchester to White Plains in 1759, the life of the village grew steadily more variegated and interesting, and came into closer touch with the stirring events of the times. It became, naturally, the gathering place for public assemblies where political affairs of the Colony were hotly discussed, and appeals to the spirit of liberty and independence were frequent and in deadly earnest.

It was inevitable that this small community should rise to a prominent position in Colonial affairs. And here was soon to be enacted one of the most important events in the history of the American Revolution. The Battle of White Plains, as a contest of arms, takes no rank among the great battles of history; but its bearing on the future of the American nation was of the utmost importance.

Lexington, April, 1775.

The Revolution, begun at the battle of Lexington, in April, 1775, had been, up to August, 1776, almost entirely favorable to the Colonists. The British Army, under Howe, had been forced to retire from Boston and take shelter in Halifax. Montgomery, though finally defeated at Quebec, had driven Carleton from Lake Champlain back to Montreal and then to Quebec. Clinton's naval expedition to South Carolina had been a complete debacle. The British had no foothold within the thirteen colonies.

large force of skilled soldiery at home and had hired disciplined Hessian troops from Germany.

Their purpose was to concentrate the combined forces at New York, effect a union with Carleton from the North, take possession of the Hudson and so cut off connection between New England and the other Colonies.

This huge Army was sent over in August, 1776, and landed at Staten Island. Washington had massed his troops, 14,000 strong, for the protection of New York, and a large force was entrenched on Brooklyn Heights. The American Army was completely defeated at the battle of Long Island. Howe then took possession of New York and many indecisive skirmishes took place.

General Howe's plan now was to get in the rear of Washington, in the hope of annihilating his entire army and crushing the rebellion at a single blow. Accordingly, he landed his troops at Throgg's Neck to intercept him. Washington, ever alert, saw Howe's purpose and sent a detachment to Throgg's Neck to block him.

This expedition was so successful, up to this point, that it kept the British at bay for five days, while Washington made preparations to move his army to White Plains.

Destiny was to bring White Plains into the forefront of stirring events.

Painful as it must have been to Washington, there was now no alternative left him but to abandon Manhattan Island in order to save his army and the cause. Fort Washington alone was left with a garrison; and with the remainder of his men, Washington pressed rapidly on over King's Bridge, over Valentine's Hill and along the west bank of the Bronx to White Plains, where his stores had already been concentrated.

large force of skilled soldiery — some and had hired disciplined mercenary troops from Germany.

Their purpose was to concentrate the combined forces on New York, effect a union with Carleton from the North, take possession of the Hudson and so cut off communication between New England and the other Colonies.

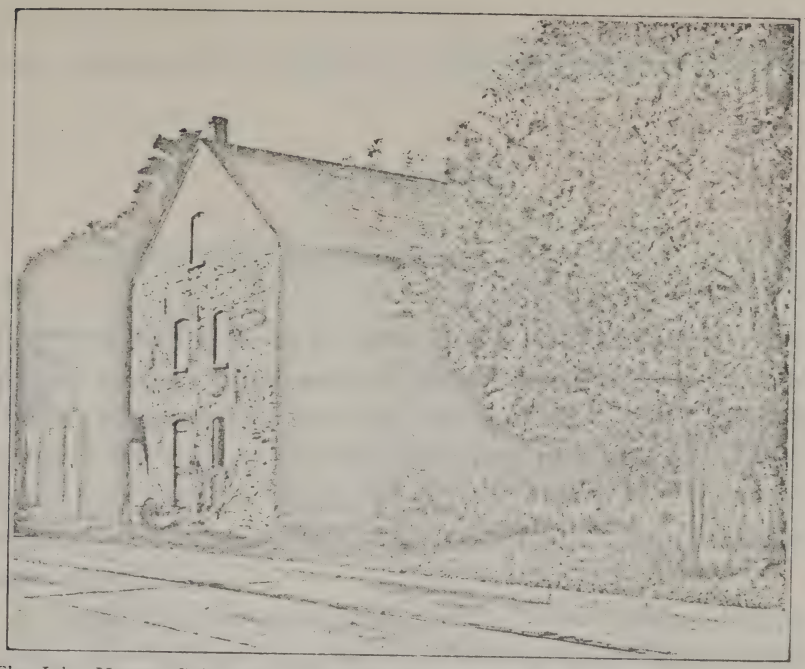
This huge Army was sent over in August 1776, and landed at Staten Island; Washington had mustered his troops, 14,000 strong, for the protection of New York, and a large force was entrenched on Brooklyn Heights. The American Army was completely defeated at the battle of Long Island. Howe then took possession of New York and many indecisive skirmishes took place.

General Howe's plan now was to get in the rear of Washington, in the hope of annihilating his entire army and crushing the rebellion at a single blow. Accordingly, he landed his troops at Throgg's Neck to intercept him. Washington, ever alert, saw Howe's purpose and sent a detachment to Throgg's Neck to block him.

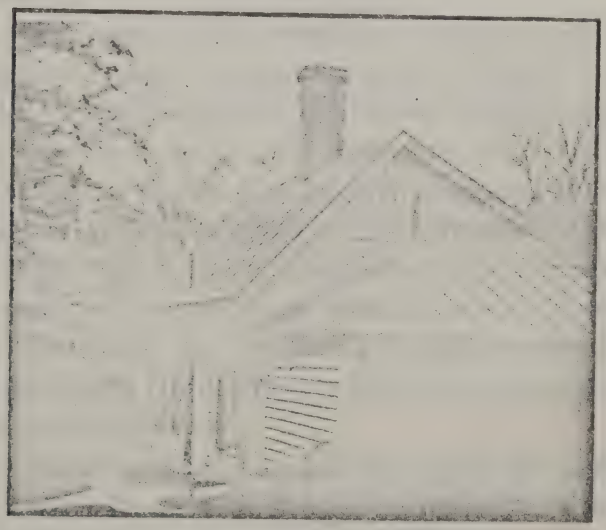
This expedition was so successful, up to this point, that it kept the British at bay for five days, while Washington made preparations to move his army to White Plains.

Destiny was to bring White Plains into the forefront of stirring events.

Painful as it must have been to Washington, there was now no alternative left him but to abandon Manhattan Island in order to save his army and the cause. For Washington alone was left with [illegible] commission [illegible] to run [illegible] his men, [illegible]



The John Horton Grist Mill, where Washington stored his supplies. Later known as the Deutermann Mill.



The John Horton House

CHAPTER IX

The Battle of White Plains

SPURRED on by an extremity of circumstances, Washington's army arrived in strategically located White Plains on October 21st, and rested on the hilly ground, north of the village; the lines extending from the Bronx over Dusenbury's Hill, across Broadway and eastward to the rocky territory at Horton's Pond, later known as St. Mary's Lake, now Silver Lake.

There, on the two following days, three lines of breastworks were built on the hillsides at varying elevations. General Lee from the South had arrived with two divisions and the total number of troops was about 25,000, at least one half of these however, sick or unfit for duty.

The remaining 13,000 were raw recruits, farmers' boys, undisciplined, mostly without uniforms, ragged, ill-fed and disheartened, while hundreds, their terms of enlistment having expired, were daily leaving the ranks and going home. With infinite patience, Washington inspired them and kept them at work, preparing for the conflict which now seemed inevitable.

Meantime, Howe, abandoning the attempt to reach the rear of Washington's Army, had withdrawn his forces from Throgg's Neck, and landing them at Pelham, marched through New Rochelle, up North Street to Scarsdale, where they rested in camp for several days.

Here Howe methodically laid his plans for a final and what he believed to be a deciding engagement that would annihilate the rebel Army, and end the rebellion.

CHAPTER IX

The Battle of White Plains

[illegible] PURSUED on by an extremity of strength, Washington's army arrived in strategically located White Plains on October 21 and rested on the hilly ground north of the village; the lines extending from the Bronx over Chatterton's Hill, across Broadway and centered to the rocky territory at Horton's Pond, later known as St. Mary's Lake, now Silver Lake.

There, on the two following days, three lines of breastworks were built on the hillsides at varying elevations. General Lee from the South had arrived with two divisions and the total number of troops was about 25,000, at least one half of these however, sick or unfit for duty.

The remaining 13,000 were raw recruits, farmers' boys, undisciplined, mostly without uniforms, ragged, ill-fed and disheartened, while hundreds, their terms of enlistment having expired, were daily leaving the ranks and going home. With infinite patience, Washington inspired them and kept them at work, preparing for the conflict which now seemed inevitable.

Meantime, Howe, abandoning the attempt to reach the rear of Washington's Army, had withdrawn his forces from Throgg's Neck, and landing them at Pelham, marched through New Rochelle, up North Street to Scarsdale, [illegible] rested in [illegible]

The Ford, Bronx River. Photo 1880.

Everything being ready, on October 28th, Howe with his entire force, came up the Post Road from Scarsdale, driving in the American pickets, and spread out his lines eastward over the plains from the Bronx to the Mamaroneck Road. His army numbered 15,000 fully disciplined soldiers.

Washington had despatched five regiments with some artillery, under command of General MacDougal, to hold Chatterton Hill. Howe, perceiving their position, sent a detachment of Hessian infantry and grenadiers with the 2nd English Brigade to dislodge them, crossing the Bronx at the ford and covered by the fire of the British cannon from the plateau on the east side of the river.

Suddenly facing to the left, in a long line they rushed up the steep and rugged hill in the face of a galling, deadly fire from the summit, while the bulk of the hostile armies, Washington from Purdy Hill (now Dusenbury Hill) and Howe from the summit of the hill near the Scarsdale line, no doubt watched the combat from these positions.

Laboriously, but with the steadfastness of trained soldiers, the Royal forces stormed the most southerly slope of Chatterton Hill. When they reached its brow, the British batteries ceased firing. Up to this time they had twice been repulsed, under the deadly attack from the summit. The Americans were apparently holding their own, when, without warning, Colonel Rall, in command of two regiments of well-drilled and perfectly-disciplined Hessians, (hirelings of the British Government, without a spark of real patriotism in their hearts for the cause) suddenly appeared over the crest of the hill, from the southwest and opened a merciless cross fire on the gallant—and almost victorious—Colonists.

This swift outflanking turned the tide of battle in favor of the British. Pressed on two sides by overwhelming forces,

the Americans wisely retreated to the north of the hill to the Dobbs Ferry Road, (now Battle Avenue) thence to the bridge crossing the Bronx River, through the lowlands (now the Bronx Parkway) and up the westerly slope of Dusenbury Hill, where they joined Washington and the main Army.

The "lay of the land" should be kept clearly in mind, with reference to the topographical map. Dusenbury Hill was less than a quarter of a mile from the base of Chatterton Hill. Washington had thrown out his first line of defense, with Chatterton Hill on his extreme right, Purdy Hill, (now Dusenbury Hill) across Broadway, including Hatfield and Merritt Hills to the extreme left.

It is this author's firm conviction, that immediately upon Washington's arrival here on the 23rd, he at once decided to include the hills of North Castle as his final stand, notwithstanding the fact that General Heath credits Lee with suggesting to General Washington, on the 28th, the date of the battle: "Yonder is the ground we ought to occupy"!

Hatfield, Fisher and Merritt Hills were part of the range pointed out on this occasion. A fundamental reason for the opinion stated above is based on the knowledge that Washington had already included three of the five Hills in his first line of defense.

In this connection this extract from Kembles Journal, a daily diary kept by General Howe's secretary, is illuminating:

"In the action of the 28th, we lost about one hundred and eighty men killed and wounded, with several officers. Col. Carr killed, with two Captains. Hessians included."

"October 28th.—The Rebels very strongly entrenched on a tongue of land with a hollow-way on each side, particularly on their right, where a deep valley runs, at the head of which are strong hills to the right of their rear, where they are fortifying and have a strong camp."

Estimates of killed and wounded in the Battle of White Plains vary. It appears probable that somewhere about 500 men fell in this engagement. (About forty years ago, while widening a curve on Battle Avenue, near Washington [illegible] three skeletons were found by Mr. Morton who was in charge of the road work.)

From the Historical Collections of the State of New York; by John H. Barber and Henry Howe, Published in 1844.

"Upon the approach of the British to the White Plains, Washington all at once called in his detachments and abandoned the positions he had occupied along the Bronx, assembled all his troops in a strong camp upon the heights, near these Plains, in front of the enemy.

"His right flank was protected by the Bronx, which by its windings also covered the front of the right wing. The main body was nearly parallel to the river, and the left wing, being placed at a right angle upon the course and consequently parallel to the right, extended towards the north upon the hills.

"As much as was necessary to guard the defiles leading to the upper mountainous regions into which the army, if expedient, might retire, the right wing, being posted in more level and less difficult ground, found itself more exposed; wherefore General McDougal was ordered to occupy with strong detachments a mountain about a mile distant from the camp. He intrenched himself there as well as the time would admit of.

"Such was the position of the American Army, when the Hessians arrived within seven or eight miles of White Plains, and prepared themselves to attack without loss of time.

"On the morning of October 28th, they advanced in two columns, the right column led by General Clinton and the left by General Heister. At noon, all the [illegible] being driven back by the English and Hessian [illegible] mitraillery, the British Army appeared before the American camp. [illegible] there existed a cannonade, but to very little [illegible]

"The English drew up in order of battle, their right [illegible] which leads to Mamaroneck, about [illegible] mile distant from the enemy; and while the left, equally distant from the right, [illegible]

"The British Generals meeting [illegible]
[illegible] General Howe, and [illegible]

as it should be protected by a post of such strength, resolved to wrest it from the Americans.

"He ordered a Hessian regiment, commanded by Colonel Ralle, to ford the Bronx and by a circuitous movement to fall upon the flank of General McDougal, while General Leslie should attack him in front with a brigade of English and Hessians.

"Colonel Ralle having arrived at the point indicated, Leslie, who had also crossed the Bronx, furiously assaulted the entrenchments of McDougal. The Militia soon fled, but the regular troops made a valiant resistance. A regiment of Maryland, conducted by Colonel Smallwood and a regiment of New York under Colonel Ratzemar, ventured even to come out of the lines and to charge the enemy at the very foot of the mountains, but they were overpowered and forced to retire.

"Then the English and Hessians ascended the heights with singular intrepidity and took possession of them after a vigorous struggle. The Americans however continued for some time to fire from behind the walls of enclosures and thus retarded the progress of the assailants, but General Putnam, who had been sent to their succor, could not arrive in season. The loss of men in the action was great on the one part as well as the other.

"Washington, calmly expecting the enemy would come to attack him next, had already sent into the rear, the sick and the baggage, but it drew towards the close of the day and the English General determined to defer the assault until the next morning. He caused his troops to encamp within cannon shot of the American lines.

"Washington took advantage of the night to strengthen them with additional works and to occupy a stronger position in the rear of his left wing, which by the loss of the mountain (Chatterton Hill) had become more exposed.

George Clinton Letter

The following letter by George Clinton, dated Camp at old Place near White Plains, November 2nd, 1776, to a friend, is copied from the Journal of the Provincial Congress, Vol. II p. 317:

"My Dear Sir:

"Your favours of the 30th and 31st ultimo, were left at my tent a few minutes since. Since my last to you, dated the day before yesterday, the

as it should be passesse by a post of such strength, resolved to wrest it from the Americans.

"He ordered a Hessian regiment, commanded by Colonel Rahle, to hold the Bronx and by a circuitous movement to fall upon the flank of General McDougal while General Lacific should attack it in front with a brigade of English and Hessians.

"Colonel Rahle having arrived at the point indicated, Lacific, who had also crossed the Bronx furiously assaulted the entrenchments of McDougal. The Militia, even that, but the regular troops made a valiant resistance. A regiment of Maryland commanded by Colonel Smallwood and a regiment of New York under Colonel Livingston, ventured even to come out of the lines and to charge the enemy at the very foot of the mountains, but they were overpowered and forced to retire.

"Then the English and Hessians ascended in double with irregular intrepidity and took possession of their lines a vigorous struggle. The Americans however continued for some time to fire from behind the walls of enclosures and thus repulsed the efforts of the assailants, but General Putnam, who had been sent to [illegible] reserve, could not arrive in season. The loss of men [illegible] the action was great on the one part as well as the other.

"Washington, calmly surveying the enemy, would [illegible] attack him next, had already sent into the rear, on sick and the baggage, but it drew towards the close of the day and the English General determined to defer the assault until the next morning. He [illegible] his troops to [illegible] within cannon shot of the American lines.

"Washington took advantage of the night to strengthen them with additional work and to occupy a [illegible] position in the rear of his left wing, which by the loss of the mountain (Chatter at Hill) had become more exposed.

George Clinton Letter

The following letter by George Clinton, dated Camp at old Place near White Plains, November 2nd, 1776, to a friend, is [illegible] from the Journal of the Provincial Congress, Vol. II p. 317:

centre and right wing of the enemy of our army, having possessed themselves of the heights in their rear northwest of the road leading to Young's yesterday morning, evacuated that part of our lines which passed through the town and southeast of N— and fell back of those heights, firing all the barns, hay and corn stacks in front.

"This induced the enemy to believe we had again retreated and determined to take advantage of our apparent flight, their army instantly moved forward into the part of our lines which we evacuated.

"This brought us on a pretty brisk cannonade, though at too great a distance to do much execution. I lost one man and had two wounded. I have heard of no other injury done us. We are by the late movements now far advanced, in front of course most exposed.

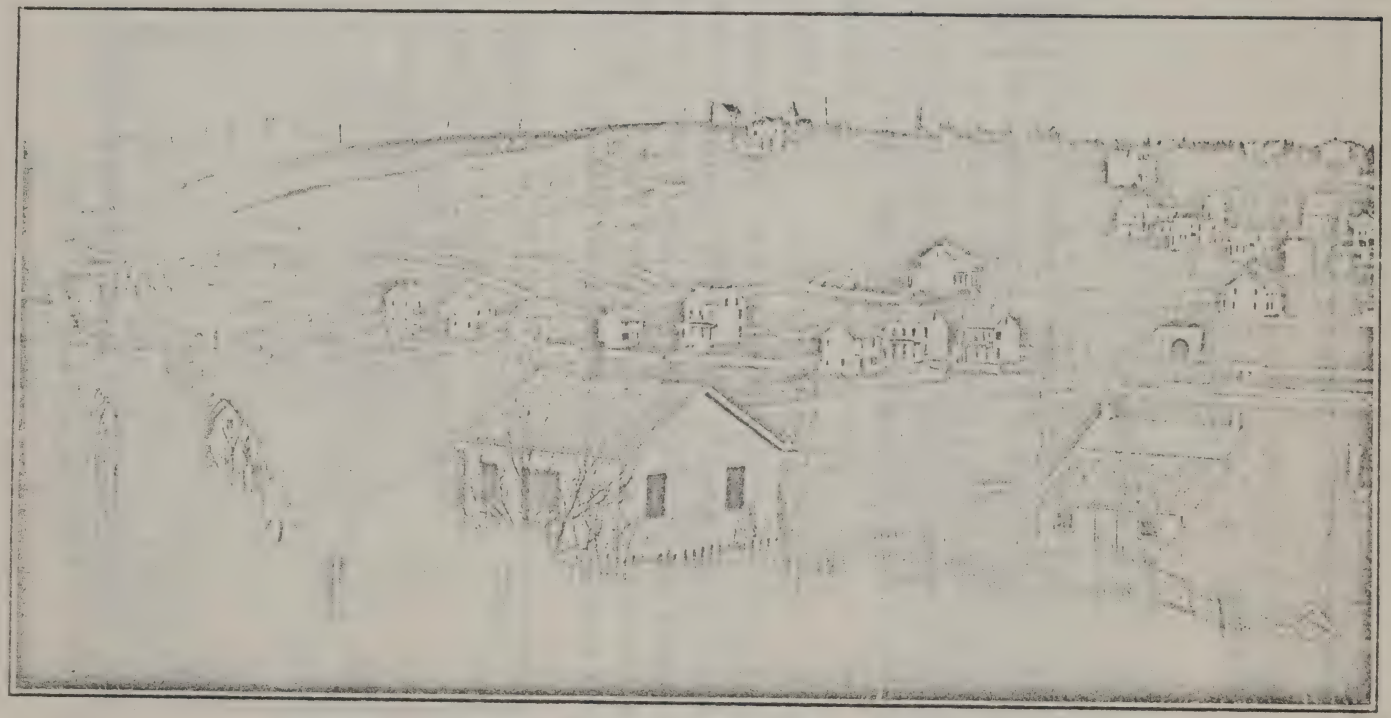
"The enemy retired to their former encampment in the evening leaving strong advanced pickets and working parties, who are busily employed in erecting banks on the heights in and near the town. Deserters (especially from the Queen's Light Dragoons) come daily over to us, and now and then our Rangers send in a straggling prisoner.

"Captain Van Wick of my brigade, who, at his earnest desire was appointed to a company of Rangers was the day before yesterday unfortunately killed. He went out in the morning with about thirty men and fell in with about 100 of the enemy in a house far distant from their lines, charged them with spirit, gave them a brisk fire, but unfortunately when loading his piece the second time was shot in the head and fell dead.

"His Lieutenant shot down the man who killed his Captain. The enemy fled, and party brought off their Captain and yesterday evening I had him interred with the honors of War. He was a good man and a valiant officer. Pray communicate this news to his widow to whom I would write, had I the leisure, in a manner that will least affect her."

A remarkable document, written during the heat of conflict and the ever-present spectre of Fear of the Unknown. The soil they had tilled was beginning to serve as a great grave for these heroes of White Plains, who fought to create American Independence. Its concluding paragraphs round out the character study of Colonial heroism:

"I know of no other news worth communicating you, some brigades to the southeast of us in my humble opinion, where they do no good, perhaps I am mistaken, I am not well acquainted with the country.



Purdy Hill (Dusenbury Hill). View from Chatterton Hill. Picture taken in 1872.

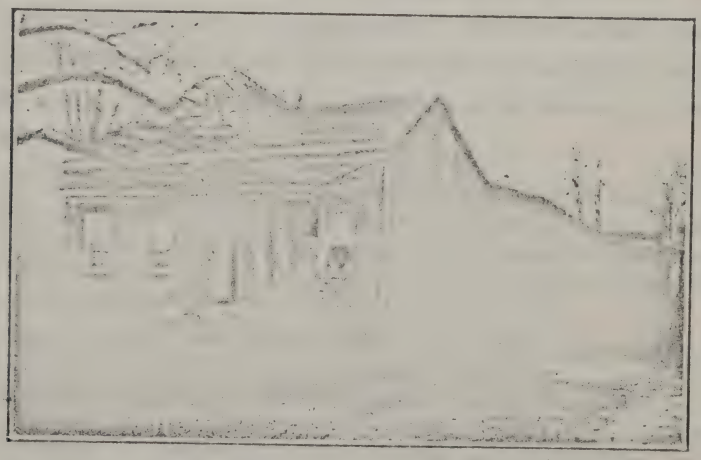
CHAPTER X

Hills That Made History

FROM a number of sources, together with the same hills that were stages of the embattled days, as existent landmarks, it is possible to patch in much of the detail not actually encountered in any written histories of The Battle of White Plains, together with important events preceding and following it.

Hatfield Hill

Hatfield Hill, west of St. Mary's Lake (Silver Lake) is sufficiently high to permit a view of Long Island Sound on a clear day; and by night, the illumination of the Empire State Building, in New York City, is visible. On this hill, to the north, was located the home of Gilbert Hatfield, in the year



The Hatfield House on Hatfield Hill.

1776. He was the owner of the entire area. This old house still stands on the original spot, amid rural surroundings, although now known as the Klugg Farm.

The hand of progress has not quite reached this quiet and secluded spot. The Hill itself, up to the split-rail gateway of the Klugg Farm, has been subdivided into building lots, with fine roads and beautiful residences, all evidence of the period of 1776 gradually but surely disappearing. This ancient homestead was, to the writer's recollection, the only house on the top of the hill during the late seventies and early eighties. Other dwellings were located at the foot of the Hill, on Lake Street.

This Hill was occupied by the Army under General Heath and being the sole house on it, it is reasonable to conclude, although there is no data to prove it, that it was used by General Heath and his staff as their Headquarters during those days of grave anxiety.

Highlights of the conflict on, around and at the base of the range of hills, dominated by Hatfield Hill, have been painstakingly collected by a tireless zealot, who embodied them in his "McDonald's Papers" and of whom we will write more at length later. Because of their indispensable relevancy a number of extracts follow:

"Washington proceeded with utmost energy to fortify the hills. To facilitate the speedy completion of their field work, a novel element in their construction in the shape of cornstalks was upon this occasion first introduced to notice by General Heath and was subsequently much used during the continuance of the campaign in Westchester.

"The following is the account given by an officer of the experiment made with this new material in fortification: 'On this day, November 1st, our General, (that is to say Heath himself) ordered three redoubts, with a line in front, to be thrown up on the summit of his post, so constructed that the whole of them could make a defense and support each other at the same time, if attacked.

1776. He was the owner of the entire area. This old house still stands on the original spot, amid rural surroundings, although now known as the Kluge Farm.

The hand of progress has not quite reached this quiet and secluded spot. The Hill itself, up to the splintered gateway of the Kluge Farm, has been subdivided into building lots, with fine roads and beautiful residences, all evidence of the period of 1776 gradually but surely disappearing. This season happy-stead was, to the writer's recollection, the only house on the top of the hill during the late seventies and early eighties. Other dwellings were located at the foot of the Hill, on Lake Street.

This Hill was occupied by the Army under General Heath and being the sole house on it, it is reasonable to conclude, although there is no data to prove it, that it was used by General Heath and his staff as their Headquarters during those days of grave anxiety.

Highlights of the conflict on, around and at the base of the range of hills, dominated by Harnield Hill, have been painstakingly collected by a tireless reader, who embodied them in his "McDonald's Papers" and of whom we will write more at length later. Because of their instructive relevancy, a number of extracts follow:

"Washington encamped with usual energy to fortify the hills. To hasten the speedy completion of their field work, a novel element in their construction in the shape of cheveaux-de-frise was upon this occasion first introduced to notice by General Heath and was subsequently much used during the continuance of the campaign in Westchester.

"The following is the account given by an officer of the army made with this new material. [illegible] fortification: 'On this [illegible] rock (that is to say, Heath's march) [illegible] three [illegible] ft. in [illegible] drawn up [illegible] hook.

"These, to the enemy, in whose view they fully were, must have appeared very formidable, although they were principally for defense against small arms and perhaps works were never raised quicker.

"These were the stalks of a large cornfield at the spot. Pulling these up in hills took up a large lump of earth with each. The roots and stalks and earth on them, placed in the face of the works, answered the purpose of sods or fascines.

"The tops being placed inwards, as the loose earth was thrown upon them, became as so many ties to the work which was carried on with a dispatch scarcely conceivable." (McDonald's Papers.)

"A few days afterward, while a body of Continental troops lay at North Castle, one of the American Commanders, wishing to make use of a large quantity of corn stalks, made an arrangement with a Quaker farmer named William Carpenter, for all he could furnish from his corn then standing, and consisting of a field of twelve acres.

"To expedite the business, a detachment of the military was ordered out, which cut down, husked and carried up the whole crop into his granary.

"All this was accomplished in a single day, and Friend Carpenter was much gratified with the operation. He manifested upon the occasion the well-known kindness of his disposition by borrowing all the pots and kettles in the neighborhood and making Indian pudding, enough to give the soldiers a hearty supper of suppown and milk, which they declared to be the greatest treat they had had since the commencement of the campaign."

Strategic Manoeuvres

All available data bearing upon the arrival of Washington's troops, encourages the belief that not an hour was lost in throwing up earthworks. The effect and the result of spade and mattock is silent evidence to this very day. The entrenchments or dugouts are plainly visible after a century and a half of the elements and the encroachment of new generations. This is very definitely true on Fisher Hill, Mount Misery and Miller Hill.

After the 28th, Howe was in possession of Chatterton and Purdy Hills, the right and center of Washington's first line of defense. Howe, on November 1st, with a large force of cavalry,

[illegible] So the events, in which they fully [illegible] must have [illegible] pered were formidable, although they were [illegible] for defence against small arms and perhaps works [illegible] never raised [illegible].

[illegible] were the walls of a large [illegible] at the spot. Filling these up in hills took up a large [illegible] with earth. The [illegible] and earth on them, placed in the [illegible] of the works, answered the purpose of sods or fascines.

"The tops being placed [illegible] as the [illegible] was thrown upon them, became as so many [illegible] to the work which was [illegible] on with a dispatch scarcely [illegible] (Mills's Papers).

"A few days afterward, while a body of [illegible] [illegible] North Castle, one of the American [illegible] [illegible] a large quantity of corn stalks [illegible] farmer named William [illegible] [illegible] them standing, and consisting of a [illegible] of [illegible] arms.

"To expedite the business, a detachment of [illegible] militia was ordered out, which cut down, hacked and carried up the whole crop into his granary.

"All this was accomplished in a single day, and Friend Cheesman was much [illegible] the operation. It [illegible] [illegible] upon the occasion the well-known [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] all the pots and kettles in the neighborhood and making Indian pudding, enough to give the soldiers a hearty supper of stir-pudding and milk, which they declared to be the greatest treat they had had since the commencement of the campaign."

Strategic Measures

All available data bearing upon the arrival of Washington's troops, encourages the belief that not an hour was lost in throwing up earthworks. The effort and the result of spade and mattock is silent evidence to this very day. The entrenchments or dugouts are plainly visible after a century and a half of the elements and the encroachment of new generations. This is very definitely true on Fisher Hill, Mount Misery and Miller Hill.

After the 28th [illegible] [illegible] possession of [illegible] Pumpkin [illegible] the [illegible] (Wood) [illegible]

artillery and several columns of infantry, opened fire on Hatfield Hill.

It was at this crucial point that Howe, most likely, intended to carry out his boast and ambition to crush Washington and his army, thus ending the war. But, as was true in the case of Purdy Hill, Howe was confronted with the same difficulty, by reason of the great swamp to the south of Hatfield Hill, and west of Merritt Hill. This swamp covered the area from the (new) extension of Kensico Avenue on the West, Underhill Avenue on the East, Westchester Avenue on the South and Lake Street on the North. (See map.)

This baffling situation left Howe but one alternative; the approach by Broadway. This, of necessity, crowded his army into a comparatively small area for so large an undertaking. The problem that presented itself to the attackers at this point would tax the skill of the most expert strategist. The ground from Broadway was all down hill to a brook in the ravine or hollow that separated the approach at the foot and West side of Hatfield Hill. The manoeuvering necessary to get the various units into position for final attack on the side of the Hill, was in plain view of General Heath and the defenders of the Hatfield territory.

The size of this army does not warrant historians looking upon the attack as a mere "skirmish", or for mere purposes of "reconnoiter". No General, no Commander would send such an army on a "skirmish". It was here that Howe intended to give battle.

The point of attack was at the southwest of the Hill. (On Lake Street and the new Parkway.) This furious cannonade was promptly answered by the hidden field pieces of Captain Bryant and Lieutenant Jaxon, under command of General Heath. The firing from the ridge was such as to throw the

artillery and several columns of infantry, opened fire on Hatfield Hill.

It was at this crucial point that Howe, most likely, inspired to carry out his boast and ambition to crush Washington and his army, thus ending the war. But, as was true in the case of Purdy Hill, Howe was confronted with the same difficulty, by reason of the great swamp to the south of Hatfield Hill, and west of Merritt Hill. This swamp covered the area from the (new) extension of Kensico Avenue on the West, Underhill Avenue on the East, Westchester Avenue on the South and Lake Street on the North. (See map.)

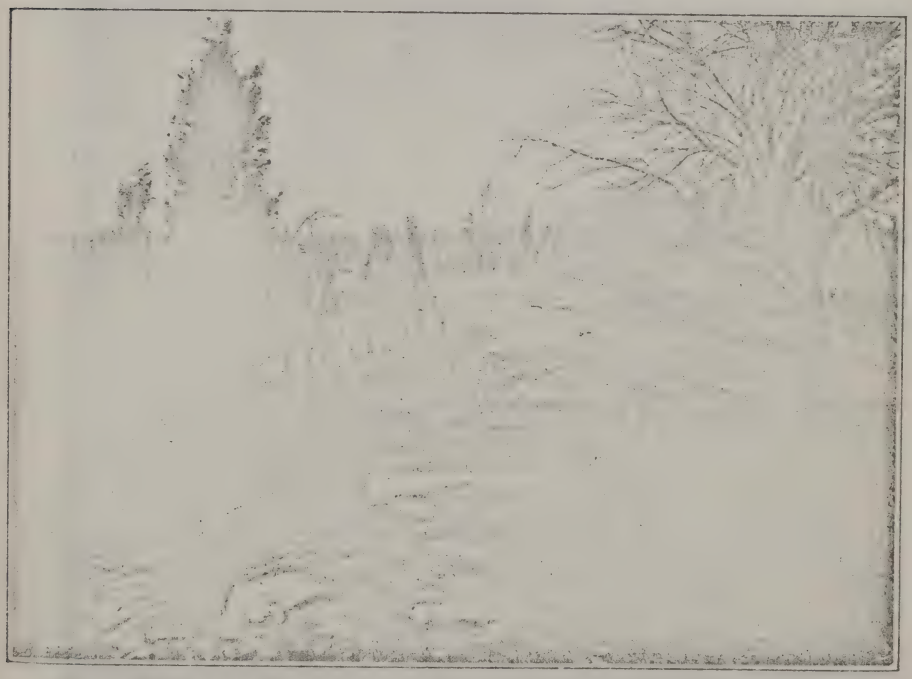
This baffling situation left Howe but one alternative: the approach by Broadway. This, of necessity, crowded his army into a comparatively small area for so large an undertaking. The problem that presented itself to the attackers at this point would tax the skill of the most expert strategist. The ground from Broadway was all down hill to a brook in the ravine or hollow that separated the approach at the foot and West side of Hatfield Hill. The manoeuvering necessary to put the various units into position for final attack on the side of the Hill, was in plain view of General Heath and the defenders of the Hatfield territory.

The size of this army does not warrant historians looking upon the attack as a mere "skirmish", or for mere purposes of "reconnoiter". No General, no Commander would send such an army on a "skirmish". It was here that Howe intended to give battle.

The point of attack was at the southwest of the Hill. (On Lake Street and the new Parkway.) This serious cannonade was promptly answered by the hidden field pieces of Captain Heath. The firing from the ridge was such as to

front ranks of the assailants into confusion. Howe, finding he could make no impression, without great loss of life, retreated, crossing Broadway in a northwesterly direction; crossed the Bronx River about where Shampnoies Bridge spans it at the foot of Cemetery Lane, over the Bronx Parkway to Travis Hill. This Hill is west of and approximately opposite Miller Hill, which was then under the command of Colonel Glover. While the enemy was ascending Travis Hill, Colonel Glover unmasked his batteries and surprised his adversaries by an animated fire.

They mounted the Hill; but after Dragoons and field pieces were brought into hasty action four times, made a re-

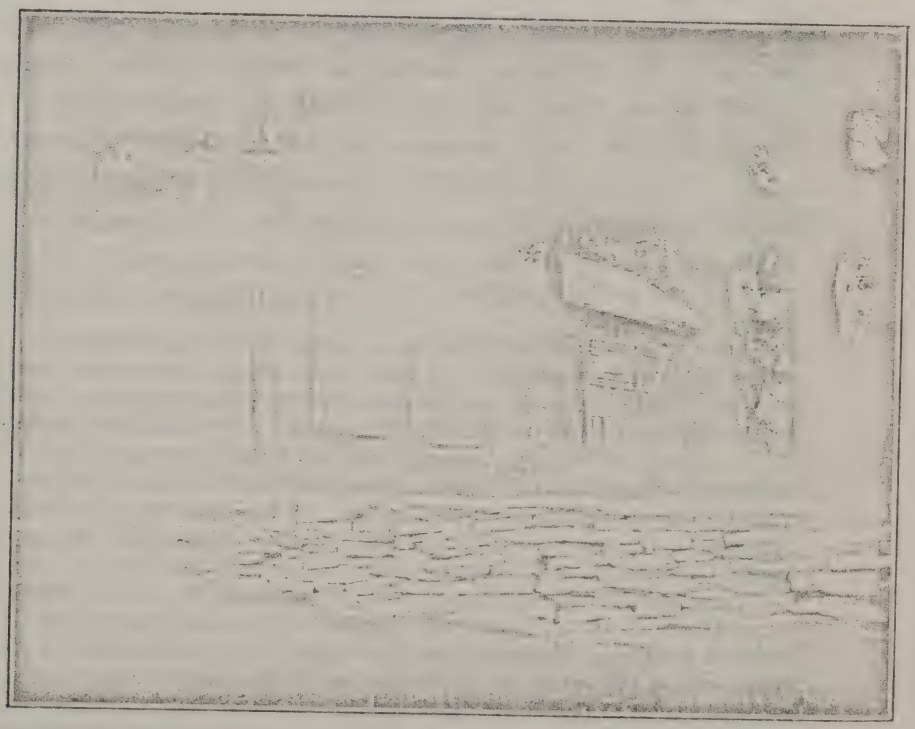


Entrenchments on Miller Hill, from which the shot was fired that ended the campaign in White Plains. Picture taken in 1902.

treat. The number of casualties sustained in this day of conflict is unknown. Howe perceived that Washington had outgeneraled him and knowing that any further attempt to force his lines would be attended with great loss of life and uncertain results, evidently decided to close the campaign in White Plains.

It was from Miller Hill that the last shot was fired, bringing the actual fighting in White Plains to an end.

Washington's defensive strategy, ambushed as he was, in the hills, enabled him to concentrate his fire on the narrow, open highway. The only approach leading to the Hills of Mount Misery and Miller, was Broadway, as has been shown.



The Field Tavern on Lake Street.

where it intersected the famous oak tree mentioned in the deed of sale by the Indians, and Virginia Road, at the foot of Miller Hill, thence running northeast one thousand feet, and north between Mount Misery on the east and Miller Hill on the west. (Now Route 22.)

Merritt Hill

The Field Tavern on Merritt Hill (Silver Lake Park) long known as "Uncle" Daniel Gray's homestead, and for many years the only house on this hill, was located just east of St. Mary's Lake, on the road to Connecticut (now Lake Street). It was a stopping-place for the mail coaches running from New York to Danbury and Boston. Merritt Hill was the extreme left wing of Washington's first and second lines of defense, under command of Colonel Malcolm. It is in the town of Harrison. St. Mary's Lake and outlet, the tributary stream, headwaters of the Mamaroneck River, form the dividing line between Harrison and White Plains.

Here we quote a remarkable extract from one of the Heath Memoirs, descriptive of the part played by Merritt Hill during these eventful hours:

"November 1st. In the morning the British advanced with a number of field pieces to the North of the road, near late headquarters, (a heavy column appearing behind the hill ready to move forward) and commenced a furious cannonade on our General's division, which was nobly returned by Capt. Lieutenant Bryant and Lieutenant Jaxon of the Artillery.

"Our first anxiety was for Col. Malcolm's regiment on the hill to the east of the hollow on the left, lest the enemy should push a column into the hollow and cut the regiment off from the Division. He, therefore, ordered Major Keith, one of his aides, to gallop over and order Colonel Malcolm to come off immediately, with Lieutenant Fenno's artillery.

"But, upon a more critical view of the ground in the hollow (at the head of which there was a stone wall, well situated to cover a body of troops to throw a heavy fire directly down it, while an oblique fire could be thrown in on both sides) he ordered Major Pollard, his other aide, to gallop after Keith and countermand the first order and direct the Colonel

[illegible] 1 Raymond [illegible] moors only too memorable is the last of any by the Indians, and Virginia Road, at the foot of Miller Hill, thence running northeast one thousand feet, and north between Mount Misery on the east and Miller Hill on the west. (*See* Route 22.)

Merrill Hill

The Field Tavern on Merrill Hill (Silver Lake Park) long known as "Uncle" Daniel Gray's homestead, and for many years the only house on this hill, was located just east of St. Mary's Lake, on the road to Connecticut from Lake Street. It was a stopping-place for the mail coaches running from New York to Danbury and Boston. Merrill Hill was the extreme left wing of Washington's first and second lines of defense, under command of Colonel Malcolm. It is [illegible] town of Harrison. St. Mary's Lake and outlet, the tributary stream, headwaters of the Mamaroneck River, form the dividing line between Harrison and White Plains.

Here we quote a remarkable extract from one of the Heath Memoirs, descriptive of the part played by Merrill Hill during these eventful hours:

"November 1st. In the morning the British [illegible] with a [illegible] of field piece to the North of the road, [illegible] column appear by behind the hill [illegible] a furious cannonade on our General's division, which was [illegible] by Capt. Lieutenant Bryant and Lieutenant Lyon of the Artillery.

"[illegible] first anxiety was for Col. Malcolm's regiment on Merrill [illegible] east of the bottom on the left, but the enemy should push a column [illegible] and cut the regiment off from the division. He therefore [illegible] Major Keith, one [illegible] to come off [illegible] with [illegible] of the ground in the [illegible] [illegible] well situated to cover a body of [illegible] direct [illegible] the [illegible] [illegible]

to remain at his post and he should be supported. The cannonade was brisk on both sides, through which the two aides-de-camp passed in going and returning. At this instant George Washington rode up to the hills. His first question to our General was, "How is your division?"

"He was answered, 'They are all in order'. 'Have you', said the Commander-in-Chief, 'any troops on the hill over the hollow?' He was answered: 'Malcolm's regiment is there'. 'If you do not call them off immediately,' said the General, 'you may lose them, if the enemy push a column up the hollow.' He was answered that even in that case their retreat should be made safe; that a strong regiment was posted at the head of the hollow behind the wall; that this regiment with oblique fire of the division would so check the enemy as to allow Malcolm to make a safe retreat.

"The Commander-in-Chief concluded by saying: 'Take care that you do not lose him."

The following extracts are from McDonald's Papers:

"The quiet that for three days had reigned in the hostile armies was put to an end on the night of the 4th by a busy hum which proceeded from the enemy's camp, and increased with the advance of daylight, when the rumbling of artillery—carriages and baggage wagons, plainly indicated some great movement on the part of the British Commander.

"The morning of the 5th of November at last came, but revealed nothing to the sight for a dense fog hid behind every object from view and rendered the noisy demonstrations of Sir William Howe's army more mysterious than ever. Reconnoitering parties sent out from the left of the American lines by General George Clinton and Scott after a while ascertained that the enemy had withdrawn their advance guards and broken up their nearest encampment.

"Apprehensive of an attack, Washington placed all of his men under arms. It was supposed by many that the British army was moving in a westerly direction but conjectures were various, and for some hours all was suspense and anxiety. At length, about two o'clock in the afternoon, the fog cleared away, when it was found that the royal forces were retiring toward the North River by the Dobbs Ferry Road; their retreat being covered by strong detachments which were drawn up on Chatterton Hill and the adjacent heights.

"Colonel Malcolm immediately sent fifty men from his regiment to take possession of the Court House and ordered a company of rangers under command to reconnoiter toward the east and south. None of Washington's officers probably felt so much relieved by the withdrawal of the enemy as the worthy and patriotic Malcolm, who for eight days had maintained a perilous position on Merritt's Hill within musket shot of one of the British advance posts, and a mile distant from the American lines.

"In a letter written by him during the same afternoon to McKesson he says, 'It is now past three o'clock. The enemy are moved off to our right, i.e. to the heights northwest of the Court House. I can make no further discoveries in this quarter but that I am delivered from troublesome neighbors and have a prospect of sleep tonight."

Fisher Hill

Fisher Hill lies about midway between Hatfield Hill and Mount Misery. On the west side and summit, there can be traced to this day, evidences of hurriedly thrown up earthworks by the Continental Army, extending for several hundred feet. The positions of these entrenchments fully covered any attack the enemy might make upon Mount Misery or Miller Hill.

The noble gift of the widow of Charles J. Dunlap, late President of the Westchester Historical Society is commendable, as a tribute to the departed heroes of the conflict; and it is to be hoped that other well-disposed and patriotic citizens will follow this excellent example, thus saving silent reminders of the hardships suffered by those who battled day and night, despite inclement weather and lack of food.

From the standpoint of historic interest, this site, as in the case of Miller's Hill, would be an invaluable historical acquisition, as it affords an opportunity to keep intact for future generations the best-preserved Revolutionary earthworks in White Plains.

The road shown in the earlier maps, dividing Hatfield and Fisher Hills, is now Hall Avenue. The southerly slope of Fisher Hill was in position to give valuable aid in attack on Hatfield Hill. Foster Hill, northeast of Fisher Hill, was likewise in position to cover and give protection to the westerly slope of Mount Misery. Less than a quarter of a mile distant, the brook at the foot of the ravine that divided the two hills, empties into the great swamp below, at present the White

"In a letter written by him during the early afternoon to Mr. Wesson he says, 'It is now past three o'clock. The enemy are [illegible] off to our right, i.e. to the heights northwest of the Mount Hurra. I can make no further discoveries in this quarter but that I [illegible] to distribute some neighbors and have a prospect of sleep tonight.'"

Fisher Hill

Fisher Hill lies about midway between Hatfield Hill and Mount Misery. On the west side and summit, there can be traced to this day, evidences of hurriedly thrown up earthworks by the Continental Army, extending for several hundred feet. The positions of these entrenchments fully covered any attack the enemy might make upon Mount Misery or Miller Hill.

The noble gift of the widow of Charles J. Dunlap late President of the Westchester Historical Society is commendable, as a tribute to the departed heroes of the country; and it is to be hoped that other well-disposed and patriotic citizens will follow this excellent example, thus saving silent reminders of the hardships suffered by those who battled day and night despite inclement weather and lack of food.

From the standpoint of historic interest, this site, as in the case of Miller's Hill, would be an invaluable historical acquisition, as it affords an opportunity to keep intact for future generations the best-preserved Revolutionary earthworks in White Plains.

The road shown in the earlier maps, dividing Hatfield and Fisher Hills, is now Hall Avenue. The southerly slope of Fisher Hill was in position to give valuable aid in attack on Hatfield Hill. Foster Hill, northward of Fisher Hill, was likewise in position to cover and give protection to the eastern slope of Mount Misery. [illegible] a quarter of a mile [illegible] road at the foot of the ravine that divides [illegible] purchase into [illegible] running below; it [illegible] the White

Ramparts on Mount Misery

Plains Storage Reservoir No. 2 and covers the area between the two hills.

Mount Misery

Perhaps the best definition of Mount Misery, as it relates to the battle-ground in White Plains, is this: A strategic point lying mid-way between Miller Hill on the West and Fisher Hill on the East, in position to cover both hills, and commanding both passes.

On its southerly slope, about two thirds of the distance to the summit, was a natural fortress of rock. Huge boulders weighing tons each, seem almost to have been piled up there

by the hand of Providence, as if to aid and protect the lives of the gallant defenders, and, in rugged defiance of the enemy, to send an echoing challenge down the slopes: "Come if you dare!"

On this hill also, there are long lines of earthworks, built under the stress of terrific haste. They can be seen today. Further north and on the east side, other entrenchments have not lost their original identity.

Both armies were at close grips, but the marshes intervened. Howe's problem was how to overcome this nature-made obstacle, in an endeavor to reach the actual battleground. Under existing circumstances, Howe dared not venture an attack against an enemy so strongly posted, and the strategic move, therefore, was to cross the Bronx River, to Travis Hill.

The Honored Dead

While no complete roster of the Revolutionary dead is in existence in any archives exclusively pertaining to White Plains, these names are known and their memories held in deepest respect and reverence:

John Becks
James Carpenter
John Drake
John Falkoner
William Field
Elijah Fisher
Jeremiah Fisher
John Fisher
Nicolas Fisher
Moses Fowler
Robert Graham
John Hosier
Benjamin Lyon
Joseph Lyon
Samuel Lyon
John Martin
Caleb Merritt
Daniel Merritt, Jr.
John Miller
Anthony Miller
Elijah Miller
James Miller
Elijah Miller, Jr.
Nicah Townsend
Jacob Travis
Uriah Travis
Benjamin Travis
Abraham Hatfield
Daniel Hatfield
Joshua Hatfield, Sr.
Joshua Hatfield, Jr.
Joseph Hatfield
Peter B. Hatfield
Richard Hatfield
Ambrose Horton
Daniel Horton
James Horton
John Horton, Sr.
John Horton
William Horton, Sr.
William Horton
Cornelius Oakley
Isaac Oakley, Jr.
Barach Prior
Joseph Prior
James Purdy
Jacob Purdy
Stephen Shelly
Thomas Smith
James Sniffen, Jr.
William Sniffen
George Titlar
Benjamin Vredenburgh
William Vredenburgh

WAR OF 1812

Dr. Henry Graham
Dr. William Hatfield
Dr. Daniel Hatfield

by the hand of Providence, as it is and proved the time of the gallant defenders, and in rugged defiance of the enemy, to send an echoing challenge down the slope: "Come if you dare!"

On this hill also, there are long lines of earthworks, built under the stress of terrific battle. They can be seen today. In other north and on the east side other entrenchments have not lost their original identity.

Both armies were at close grips in a peculiar intervened. Howe's problem was how to overcome the nature made obstacle, in an endeavor to reach the national underground. Under existing circumstances, Howe dared not venture an attack against an enemy so strong and so well the strategic move therefore, was [illegible] Brown River to Trans Hill.

The Honored Dead

Little no complete roster [illegible] no ko ourtrymen dead [illegible] in existence in any public [illegible] official [illegible] name to [illegible] Italians, these names are known and their [illegible] held in deepest respect and reverence.

John Hoffa	[illegible]	[illegible]
James Swanner	[illegible]	[illegible]
John Hoffa	[illegible]	[illegible]
John L. Hoover	[illegible]	[illegible]
William Field	[illegible]	[illegible]
Elijah Fisher	[illegible]	[illegible]
Jeremiah Fisher	[illegible]	[illegible]
John Fisher	[illegible]	[illegible]
Nicholas Fisher	[illegible]	[illegible]
Moses Fisher	[illegible]	[illegible]
Robert [illegible]	[illegible]	[illegible]
John Hoover	[illegible]	[illegible]
Hermann Lyon	[illegible]	[illegible]
Joseph Lyon	[illegible]	[illegible]
Samuel Lyon	[illegible]	[illegible]
John Martin	[illegible]	[illegible]
Caleb Martin	[illegible]	[illegible]
Daniel Martin, Jr.	[illegible]	[illegible]

WAR OF 1812

[illegible]	[illegible]	[illegible]

CHAPTER XI

After the Battle of White Plains

IT IS essential, in any compilation of chapters having to do with the Battle of White Plains and swiftly moving events following it, to quote from known authorities,—limited in number it must be confessed,—and to piece together important details through this medium, although there may occur occasional duplication. Such duplication, however, may be excused on the ground that descriptive styles vary and facts or incidents contained in one document may not be found in another.

Nor can there be too fixed a chronological order in the events recorded if full advantage is taken of this most valuable material. In his remarkable Papers, McDonald, as you have reason to observe, seems to have performed an unexampled task in both research work and in clarity of description. The two excerpts now set down are characteristic of his fidelity to the subject.

"The night after the battle was spent by the American commander in strengthening his positions. On the morning of the 29th, the American fortifications scowled upon General Howe with an aspect so threatening that he deferred his intended attack.

"The expected reinforcements reached the British camp in the afternoon of the 30th, dispositions were thereupon made for the assault upon the American Camp on the morning of the last day in October, but towards nightfall, a cold and heavy rainstorm set in, which continued until the middle of the next day.

"During the whole of this night, which the survivors afterward described as the most miserable of their lives, the Americans, expecting an attack, were either on the alert under arms or working uncovered in their trenches.

"They were engaged in different places at this time, in the construction of redoubts, lines and abatis, both for the protection of a new one in their rear. At two o'clock in the afternoon of the next day, it cleared off and the weather became fine, but the ground wet and slippery was considered by the British Commander unfit for rapid movement. The assault, in consequence, was once more postponed until the following morning.

"I assume that Washington, from the first, had determined to fall back upon stronger ground. After the battle, he determined upon another position and made the utmost exertion for the immediate removal of his hospital, baggage and stores, within the newly selected lines.

"These operations were not entirely completed, but perceiving Howe's great anxiety for a general action, which the American commander was desirous for many reasons to avoid, the latter determined to get into new position forthwith. Accordingly, during the night of the last day of October, the Americans evacuated their works in White Plains, (Dusenbury Hill and line across Broadway) setting fire to several barns and to one or two dwelling houses containing forage and stores that could not be removed.

"They entered upon the new ground by a backward wheel. The extreme left near Horton's mill (now Silver Lake) remained where it had been, and formed a pivot upon which the whole army moved, while the extreme right retrograded a distance of about two miles. The lines as now formed, ran nearly east and west. They passed from Horton's across Hatfield's, Foster's and Fisher's Heights to Mount Misery and Miller's Hill.

"Along these grounds, naturally very strong, the Americans had already commenced throwing up earthworks for the purpose of giving additional security to the new encampment. The prosecution of this undertaking was continued for several days subsequently."

Howe's Last Stand

Quoting the McDonald Papers for the final chapter in this concluding period of conflict, we find additional evidences of General Washington's superb leadership:

"On the morning of the first of November, the King's forces were at last ready for the assault. Great was their surprise on beholding the exploits of a single night. Mortified to find his antagonist in a new and apparently strong attitude, when all the preparations to crush him were complete, General Howe decided at once to make a careful examination of the new position by a grand reconnoissance for the purpose of finding some weak point that might justify an immediate attack. The right and center of the British Army got under arms in haste and took possession of the grounds from which Washington's troops had retired.

They were engaged in different places at this time, in throwing up of redoubts, lines and abatis, both for the protection of a new line in their rear. At two o'clock in the afternoon of the next day, it cleared off and the weather became fine. But the ground was so slippery that it considered by the British Commander until for rapid movement. The attack, in consequence, was delayed until the following morning.

I assume that Washington, from the first, had determined to fall back upon strongly ground. After the battle, he returned upon another position and made the utmost exertion for the immediate removal of the hospital, baggage and stores within the newly selected lines.

"These operations were so artfully conducted, but perceiving there great anxiety for a general action, which the American commander was desirous for many reasons to avoid, the latter determined to get into a position forthwith. Accordingly, during the night of the last day October, the Americans commenced their works in Chilton Plains, Dippsbury Hill and the Stone Hundred way, setting fire to several farms and one or two dwelling houses containing forage and stores that could not be removed.

"They entered upon the ground by a lockening pitch. The extreme left rest Horton on the Silver. [illegible] had been, and formed a pivot upon which the whole army moved, while the extreme right retreated [illegible] distance of about two miles. The lines so formed, run nearly east and west. They passed from Horton's across Hartfield's Forest and Fisher's Heights to Mount Alverno and Lillington Hill.

"Along these grounds, naturally very strong, the Americans had already commenced throwing up redoubts, for the purpose of giving additional security to the new foundation. The possession of this undertaking was continued for several days subsequently.

Howe's Last Stand

Quoting the McDonald Papers for the final chapter in this concluding period of conflict, we find additional evidence of General Washington's superb leadership:

"On the morning of the first of November, the King's forces were at last ready for the assault. Great was their surprise on beholding the emplacements of a single night. Alertified to find his [illegible] apparently serene attitude, when all the preparations to repel his [illegible] complete. General Howe decided at once to make a careful examination of the new positions by a [illegible] reconnaissance. The [illegible] [illegible] on horse.

"A strong force of Cavalry and Artillery, supported by several columns of Infantry, then marched upon the American left, against which a furious cannonade was commenced. This was answered with spirit and effect by the field pieces of Captain Bryant and Lieutenant Jaxson. The British artillerymen were several times thrown into confusion. Their loss is not known. Howe, finding that no impression could be made upon this part of the American lines, ordered his artillery to be drawn back, and making a detour, came down upon the right, towards Miller Hill where Colonel Glover commanded.

"This active and vigilant officer had with him field-pieces, which he carefully concealed from sight. They consisted of a twenty-four, a six and a three-pounder of brass, and three iron twelve-pounders. The enemy's forces with cavalry and artillery in front, approached in four columns. When about three quarters of a mile from Miller's Hill, they wheeled to the left, crossed the Bronx and advanced northwesterly for the purpose of taking possession of Travis Hill.

"Colonel Glover unmasked his battery and surprised his adversaries by an animated fire, which at first threw them into confusion. They ascended the hill however with the dragoons and a field piece, which they hastily discharged four times, and then retreated.

"A Hessian cannoneer and an artillery horse were found upon Travis Hill; what other losses were sustained remains unknown. Howe made no further movement against the American forces.

"Heath's memoirs say: 'The two armies lay looking at each other and within a long cannon shot. In the night time, the British lighted up a vast number of fires, the weather growing pretty cold. These fires, some at the foot of the hills, and at all distances to their brows, some of which were lofty, seemed to the eye to mix with the stars and at different magnitudes. The American side doubtless exhibited to them a similar appearance.'

"Baird in his history of Rye says: 'Rye was only seven miles distant from the field of this engagement.' The roar of the cannon must have been heard here distinctly, through that eventful day. Many of the inhabitants doubtless were interested spectators of the affair from the surrounding hills. But more anxious times were near at hand for them. On the fourth of November, General Howe withdrew his forces from White Plains.

"That night, our inhabitants saw against the northern sky the glare of a conflagration, the locality of which they could scarcely doubt. (The burning of the village.) Scenes like this soon became familiar enough to our people. Many a night the reddened horizon or the visible flames betokened the ruin of some unhappy family, whose barns or houses were consumed within the region of the debatable land."

"A strong force of cavalry and Artillery, supported by several columns of Infantry, then marched upon the American left against which a furious cannonade was commenced. This was answered with spirit [illegible] the field pieces of Captain Bryant and Lieutenant Jackson. The British artillery-men were several times thrown into confusion. [illegible] known. Here, finding that no an impression could be made [illegible] of the American lines, ordered his troops to be drawn [illegible] a detour, came down upon the rear with Major Hill when Colonel Glover commanded.

"This action was virtual [illegible] ... [illegible] carefully concealed in an ambush. They [illegible] and a three-pounder of brass, and there is a twenty-pound [illegible] enemy's forces with cavalry and infantry in [illegible] columns. Upon about three quarters [illegible] wheeled to the left. Passed the Bloody Run [illegible] purpose of taking possession of Lower Hill.

"Colonel Glover [illegible] a matter [illegible] by an animated fire which [illegible] ascended the hill however with the [illegible] hastily discharged four times [illegible]

"A Hessian commander [illegible] Hill; what other forces were [illegible] further movements against the American [illegible]

"Hearth's memoirs say: 'The [illegible] and within a long cannon shot [illegible] a vast number of fires the weather [illegible] at the foot of the hills, and [illegible] were lofty, second to the [illegible] tudes. The American [illegible] ance.'

"Halted in his flight of Rye [illegible] from the field of this engagement. The [illegible] been heard here distinctly throughout that [illegible] habitants distributes were interested spectators [illegible] surrounding hills. But more [illegible] On the fourth of November, General [illegible] Valley Plains.

"That night, our fortifications were [illegible] of a conflagration, the locality of which they could scarcely define. [illegible] burning of the village. Scenes like this soon [illegible] to our people [illegible] night the red tinted horizon or the visible flames [illegible] my family, where [illegible]

"[illegible] detachable legal"

Another Illuminating Document Concerning the Battle of White Plains and Events Leading Up to It

The following account of military movements in this town and its vicinity, in October 1776, is from the address of J. W. Tompkins, Esq., delivered at White Plains on the 28th of October, 1845:

"The County of Westchester, at the Commencement of the Revolution, contained a multitude of hardy yeomen, inured to toil, whose ancestry had fled from oppression abroad, and in enjoyment of greater freedom in the Colony, had imbibed an ardent love of liberty.

"When the star of Independence arose in the East, they were ready to follow its lead, and when New York, in 1776 was threatened with invasion, they flocked with alacrity to its defense; when the Battle of Long Island turned the tide of war against us, they still adhered to the American Army, contending every inch of ground to Harlem, thence to King's Bridge, and through the southern part of Westchester County to White Plains, where General Washington determined to entrench himself and make another stand against an overwhelming force of the choicest troops, flushed with victory and confident of success. A brief account of the movements of the two armies to this place, and of their operations here, it is my purpose to give.

"The City of New York was selected by the English as a centre of their military operations, with the view of commanding the North River and acting in conjunction with a force from Canada, descending through Lake Champlain, thus securing the Colonies.

"Their march into Westchester County was designed to obtain command of the two principal routes, leading to New England, one through Rye and the other by way of Bedford, and thereby cut off the American Army from its source of supplies, principally derived from the East, and obtain the rear of General Washington's Army, and force him to a general battle—or to a precipitate defeat.

"But Washington penetrated their intentions and conducted his forces northward from King's Bridge, with great skill, moving in a line parallel with the British, a little in advance of them, facing them constantly, with the Bronx River in the front, which was fortified at every assailable point. On the 12th of October, '76, a portion of the British Army, consisting of the guard, light infantry reserve, and Count Dunop's Corps, landed at Throgg's Neck, and on the night of the day, Col. William Smith (then a Lieutenant) with a corporal's guard, broke down the bridge connecting the Neck with Westchester Town, and left Sir William Howe upon an island.

Address of Mr. Tompkins Concerning the Battle of White Plains and Events Leading Up to It

The following account of military movements in this county and its vicinity, in October 1776, is from the address of W. Tompkins, Esq., delivered at White Plains on the 23th of October, 1845:

"The County of Westchester, at the Revolutionary period, the Revolution, contained a multitude of loyal citizens, moved to and, where necessary had fled from oppression abroad, and in an amount of numbers proportion in the colony, had had an active hand in the liberty.

"When the war of Independence arose in the [illegible] they were ready to follow its lead and when New York in 1776 was threatened with invasion, they flocked with alacrity to its [illegible] when the battle of Long Island turned the tide of war against us they suffered in the American Army, contributing every inch [illegible] ground to Harlem, thence to King's Bridge, and thence the southern part of Westchester County. White Plains, where General Washington determined to entrench himself and make another stand against [illegible] victorious army of the British troops, flushed with victory and confident [illegible] A brief account of the movements of the two armies in this place, and of their operations here, is my purpose to give.

"The City of New York was selected by the English as a central of their military operations, with the view of cutting off the North River and acting in conjunction with [illegible] from Canada, descending through Lake Champlain, thus securing the Colonies.

"Their march into North Carolina was designed to obtain command of the two principal rivers, leading to New England, one through Rye and the other by way of Redford, and thereby cut off the Northern Army from its source of supplies, principally [illegible] from [illegible] and obtain the rear of General Washington's [illegible] army, and force him to a general battle—or to a precipitate retreat.

"But Washington penetrated their intentions and conducted his forces marched from King's bridge, with great skill, moving in a line parallel with the Bronx, a little in advance of them, facing them constantly, with the Bronx River in the front, which was fordable at many assailable points. On the 12th of October '76, a portion of the British Army, consisting of the second division [illegible] and Corps, landed at Throg's Neck, and on [illegible] night of the [illegible] (now [illegible]) with a [illegible] the Neck with

"On the 16th and 17th of October, the English forces at Throgg's Neck were augmented by the 1st, 2nd, and 6th Brigades, crossing from Long Island, and by the 3rd Hessian battalions from New York. On the 18th, the whole British Army crossed to Pelham Point, and marching northerly, encamped the same night on the high ground between Hutchinson's River and New Rochelle, where it remained till the 21st.

"On the 21st, the British removed and encamped on New Rochelle Heights, north of the village and on both sides of the road leading to Scarsdale. This camp was broken up on the 25th, and the Army moved forward to a position upon the high grounds in Scarsdale, in the vicinity of the late John Bennet's Farm; and there remained till the morning of the 28th of October.

"General Washington during that time had remained inactive; as early as the 11th of October, a part of his Army crossed from Harlem Heights, reached White Plains on the 12th and commenced erecting fortifications. And on the 22nd General Washington, leaving his headquarters at Fort Washington, established them at Valentine's Hill, when they were removed to White Plains on the 23rd."

It is to be now noted that while different writers, historians and private citizens touched upon the same general material and the same situations, they present new facts and interesting details exclusive to their individual sources of information. That is why any book of this character should preserve them all.

"The entrenchments at White Plains were erected under the directions of a French engineer, and consisted of a square fort of sods in the main street (Broadway) with breastworks on each side running westerly over the south side of Purdy's Hill, to the Bronx, and easterly across the hills, to Horton's Pond (now Silver Lake).

"When the English attacked Chatterton's Hill on the 28th, they were unfinished, but during the night of the 28th, and the 29th, of October, they were raised and straightened, being only intended for temporary use until the position above Abraham Miller's, in North Castle, could be fortified, which was done, and to which the American Army afterwards retired.

"On the morning of the 28th, of October, the British Army marched from their camp, in two columns, the right commanded by General Clinton, the left by De Hiester, and came in sight of the American forces about 10 o'clock. On the 27th, of October, two militia regiments had been sent over to throw up entrenchments on Chatterton Hill, and on the morning of the 28th, General Washington ordered Colonel Haslet to

take command of the Hill, having him command his own (The Delaware) regiment, the militia and part of the 1st, Maryland troops. General McDougal soon followed him and took command.

"Colonel Haslet says the enemy in the first place moved towards the fortifications in the village; they then halted and the General officers had a council of war, on horseback, in the wheat fields, and the result was that their forces inclined towards the Bronx.

"Fifteen or twenty pieces of artillery were placed upon the high grounds opposite the Hill, and commenced a furious cannonade upon McDougal's forces, under cover of which fire, the British built a bridge (?) over the Bronx and prepared to cross. General McDougal placed two field pieces upon a ledge of table rock, which did great execution among the British officers and soldiers.

"As soon as the bridge (?) would admit their crossing, they marched forward and attempted to take the two pieces by a charge up the hill. These two cannon were in charge of the late Alexander Hamilton, then a Captain of Artillery, and never did officers or men do better execution.

"When upon the spot in after years, describing it to a youthful friend, he was heard to say: 'For three successive discharges, the advancing column of British troops was swept from hilltop to river.'

"The British finding this table rock inaccessible, inclined to the left, down the river and joined the troops under General Rahl, which had crossed about a quarter of a mile below. They now attacked McDougal and attempted to turn his right flank. He retreated, but contested the ground all the way to the summit of the hill, making a stand at every favorable point.

"At length the British cavalry gained the crest of the Hill and charging, cut to pieces the militia on McDougal's right. The last stand was made by the Americans behind a wall at the top of the Hill, where the Delaware regiment and part of McDougal's brigade, twice repulsed the British light infantry and cavalry.

"At length, compelled to retreat, it was done in good order over the bridge at the foot of the hill, under cover of some regiments detached by Washington from the main Army. The militia and a few of the regulars were dispersed among the hills of Greenburgh, but soon returned to headquarters.

"The British forces engaged in that attack were the flower of the Army, consisting of the second brigade of the British, the 28th, 5th, and 49th, Regiments, Rahl's battalion, the Hessian Grenadiers under Dunop, and a party of light dragoons, all commanded by General Leslie.

"That General Washington did make a successful stand at this place has ever excited the wonder of military men. His troops were greatly inferior in numbers and discipline and composed in part of militia and raw recruits. After the battle, the enemy for several days attempted to gain

Washington's rear; tried to alarm him and induce him to retreat or fight, by threatening his flanks.

"At several times they formed a semi-circle about him and on the night of the 31st. of October, Washington evacuated his camp at White Plains and established his new position in the hills of North Castle, about one mile in the rear of his former encampment, when the British appear to have relinquished all further offensive operations."

Continuing, this document traces, step by step, events following Washington's final master-stroke of military strategy:

"At the advance of the British Army to White Plains, the Whig families were seen hurrying unprotected before them, with thin clothing and a scanty supply of provisions, to seek shelter for the coming Winter, they knew not where. Desolation and famine marked that fair region over which the two armies passed.

"The English Army finding all attempts to circumvent General Washington hopeless, they broke up their camp at White Plains on the morning of the 5th of November and retired to Dobbs Ferry, and from thence to King's Bridge, where they encamped on the 13th of the month.

"Thus ended in Westchester for the year 1776, the movements of the British Army; but soon the inhabitants of the North were overrun by Loyalists from Morrisania, and for a long time without protection, were exposed to every danger and suffering. In short, till the peace of 1782, Westchester was the battleground of the disaffected and the prey of both friend and foe.

"General Howe committed a great mistake in not attacking General Washington's fortifications in White Plains on the 28th, instead of Chatterton Hill. He gained nothing in taking that Hill, after the works at White Plains were completed: great loss to Howe's Army must have attended their capture and Washington's new position, (above Miller's) appears to have been regarded as impregnable.

"Washington's policy at this time was, as he expressed it: 'To entrench and fight with the spade and mattock'. The experience at Bunker's Hill had made the British cautious in attacking Americans behind entrenchments. During the march of the two Armies to White Plains, frequent skirmishes occurred on the 18th, the vanguard of the British Army were attacked by a detachment under General Sullivan, and the fight which ensued (near the road reaching from New Rochelle) has been always represented as very creditable to the Americans.

"On the 21st, Colonel Rogers, a celebrated partisan officer in the French war, had accepted a command in the English service and lay at Mamaroneck. An attack on him was planned by Lord Stirling, and executed by a force under the command of Colonel Haslet of the Delaware regiment.

"Rogers was completely surprised, seventy or eighty of his men were killed or made prisoners and a considerable quantity of arms, ammunition and clothing taken by the Americans.

"On the 23rd of October, a spirited skirmish took place between Hand's Pennsylvania riflemen, and a detachment of Hessian Chasseurs, about 240 strong, in which the Hessians were routed. These harassing encounters of the Americans (attended invariably with success) tended to delay the advance of the British and to make them cautious, while it cheered the desponding courage of the American soldiers, and above all, gave General Washington time to remove his stores and entrench himself where no army dare assail him.

"Scenes of cruelty and bloodshed, unknown to civilized warfare, marked their partisan engagements, and in the defence of their homes, her valiant sons exhibited frequent instances of personal bravery, unexcelled in ancient and modern times. Among the most daring were the guides, such men as Cornelius Oakley and John Odell and Abraham Dyckman. In the darkness of night they have often surprised and carried off officers and men, under the guns of the British forts at Morrisania, or in small parties, amused themselves by beating up De Lancey's quarters. Frequent alarms had made them watchful of surprises, and success rendered them reckless of danger, till they became the chosen leaders of each dangerous enterprise against the enemy."

CHAPTER XII

Lawlessness On Both Sides

THE sweeping resolutions of the ninth of July, 1776, at once destroyed all the authority of the Crown, without, however, providing any other form of civil government than that assumed by the convention itself. Locally its power was delegated to County Committees, who, with practically unlimited authority, had no means of enforcing it. In Westchester County the difficulty was clearly illustrated. Here a great number of Tories and suspects were committed to jail. James Delancy the last sheriff under the crown in 1770 to 1777, commanded the most notorious body of Tories.

1. "The withdrawal of the two armies after the battle of White Plains left the country between them, where all civil government had ceased, and to which the military control of either army did not extend, as a 'no-man's Land' open to minor expeditions from both armies in which the military laws were often violated and to the operations of roving bands which robbed patriots and tories alike."

But worse than those incursions of soldiers and refugees were the visits of the marauding bands of "Cowboys and Skinners" who were governed neither by law nor mercy. Almost without exception they were the worthless and criminal element of the neighborhood.

James Delancy's military career was confined to his native county and no man did more to bring misery and suffering to his neighbors during the war period.

1. Hufeland's Westchester County during the American Revolution. Page 183-236 75.

General Orders, Headquarters, White Plains
October 31, 1776.

It is with astonishment that the General hears that some officers have taken horses between the enemy's camp and ours, and sent them into the country for their private use.

Can it be possible that persons bearing commissions and fighting in such a cause can degrade themselves into plunderers of horses.

He hopes every officer will set his face against it in the future: and he does insist that the Colonels and commanding officers of the Regiments immediately enquire into the matter and report to him those who have been guilty of these practices; and that they take account of the horses in their respective encampments and send to the Quarter-Master-General all that are not in some public service.

General Washington to General Green, White Plains, November 7, 1776.

"The people who remained in this part of the country, through which we passed have been most cruelly plundered; many helpless women had even their shifts taken from their backs by the soldiers' wives, after the great plunderers had done; and in this general ravage, no discrimination was made of Whig or Tory."

Nor were the offenses confined to horse stealing. Below is the "petition of Miles Oakley" which requires no explanation. Oakley kept the tavern opposite to the court house, which was the rallying place of the patriots of this vicinity. It was at his tavern the patriots met at the time of the great convention in April, 1775.

Petition of Miles Oakley

"To His Excellency, General Washington, Commander-in-chief of all the forces of the United States of America:

The Petition of Miles Oakley humbly showeth that by his labour and industry he hath procured himself a small piece of land at the

White Plains, contiguous to the Court-house; that on it, within the last four or five years he built him a comfortable and convenient house and barn, that he kept an Inn for the entertainment of travelers, which enabled him to maintain his family, which consists of a wife and four small children; that on the approach of the enemy he removed his wife (who lay in bed but six days before) with his children to the north of the lines formed by the troops under your Excellency's command; that on his return to bring off some of his furniture and most valuable effects, he found his house robbed and pillaged, his desk split to pieces, his money, books and papers taken and carried away by our own troops by which means he is left without a second bed and scarse a change of cloths for himself, his wife or his children; this your petitioner bore with resignation, not doubting but if he should again get into his house he should by his industry in time retrieve his losses. But so it is, may it please your Excellency, that on Tuesday night last, your petitioner's house and barn was by some of the American troops burnt to the ground, and your petitioner left without any means whatever of obtaining a subsistence. That your petitioner's losses do not amount together to less than seven hundred pounds currency.

Your petitioner begs leave to observe to your Excellency that he has ever been a friend to his country, that he served as Lieutenant in the late northern expedition under the command of Generals Schuyler and Montgomery. Your petitioner, therefore begs your Excellency will be favorably pleased to take his melancholy case into consideration, and give him such relief in the premises as to you in your great wisdom shall seem just and reasonable.

Your petitioner further begs if your Excellency should be of the opinion that the granting of your petitioner relief is not properly in your department, that your Excellency will be pleased to inquire into the truth of the facts within set forth, and give your petitioner such certificates and recommendations, either to the honorable Continental or Provincial Congress as you think your petitioner's hard case truly deserves, and your petitioner will ever pray.

MILES OAKLEY

November 9, 1776
Scharf Vol. 1, Page 455.

CORNELIUS OAKLEY

A White Plains Boy

There are many brave and patriotic men, who, during the great contest, did good service and helped bring about Ameri-

can independence whose names have perished,—where deeds have been lost in the passing of time. Here is the name of one born on our home soil, who could not be induced to dishonor his name, under any circumstances.

Among the principal Westchester guides were the brothers Cornelius Oakley and Isaac Oakley of White Plains, and their cousin James Oakley of the Borough town of Westchester.

Their ancestors were among the early settlers of the Borough town of Westchester and White Plains. Cornelius Oakley was born on the 15th of January, 1757 in White Plains, to which his father had moved several years previously.

Some time in the spring of 1775 when it had become evident that a struggle with the forces of the mother-country was at hand, Cornelius and his brother Isaac enrolled themselves in a volunteer company composed of ardent Whigs of their own age, belonging to this part of the county. They took this measure without the knowledge of their father who had attached himself to the Society of Quakers, and consequently heard of it with extreme disapprobation.

At the time of putting his forces in motion, General Heath applied to the committee of safety for some persons minutely acquainted with the county, and especially the roads leading to New York, who might act as guides and assist him in the capacity of aides. That body appointed Cornelius Oakley with others to accompany the Division under General Scott in that capacity.

This body of guides was first organized when General Heath made the demonstration against Fort Independence in January 1777. He applied to the committee of safety for some persons closely acquainted with the roads leading to New York to act as guides and to assist him in the capacity of aides. It was due to their skilful guidance that the divisions arrived

simultaneously before the British outposts without having been discovered.

In 1781 during the whole time the combined armies were in Westchester County, Oakley was constantly near General Rochambeau. He made a strong impression upon the principal officers, both French and American.

Rochambeau once said to him, "Oakley, Nature designed you for a leader of an army".

He always possessed a nice sense of what was due to him as a man of honor. When the combined forces retired from Westchester County on their way to Yorktown, Washington invited him to dinner at Headquarters, where he met several of the superior officers, convened, as he soon afterwards discovered, for the purpose of persuading him to go below as a spy. Accordingly, as soon as the cloth was removed, the proposition was made to him by the American commander and rejected instantly with indignation. The officers present then joined Washington in indeavoring to pacify this unexpected outbreak of displeasure, and after some time had elapsed, the whole party, renewing the subject, made another attempt to accomplish the object which had brought them together. They urged at much length that at that particular moment, the good cause stood in great need of a confidential agent to reside with the enemy for special purposes; they expressed the exalted opinion entertained by them of his fidelity and address; declared that of all the persons they could think of, he was the one best fitted for the required service, and concluded by appealing to his patriotism, for the sacrifice of all feelings that stood in the way of his consent.

He replied that he was ready at all times to do whatever was just and reasonable in the cause in which they had all embarked; and if his country required him, he would sur-

multaneously before the British outposts without having been discovered.

In 1781 during the whole time the combined armies were in Westchester County, Tarleton was constantly near General Rochambeau. He made a strong impression on the principal officers, both French and American.

Rochambeau once said [illegible] Nature designed you for a leader [illegible]

He always possess[illegible] to him as a man of honor [illegible] obtained [illegible] fired from Westchester [illegible] invited him to [illegible] of the situation [illegible] covered, for the purpo[illegible] him [illegible] spy. According [illegible] and the situation was made [illegible] jected instantly [illegible] officers present then joined Washington [illegible] this movement outbreak [illegible] whole party [illegible] accompanied the [illegible] urged at much [illegible] cause stood in great need [illegible] to resist with the enemy for equal numbers [illegible] opinion entertained by them of his talents and address: declared that of all the persons they could name, he was the one best fitted for the required service, and concluded by appealing to his patriotism, for the sacrifice of all feelings that stood in the way of his consent.

He replied that he was ready at all times to do whatever was just and reasonable in the cause in which they had all embarked; and if his country required him, he would sur-

render for her sake everything he possessed except his honor, but that he would not forfeit his good name by acting in the infamous capacity of a spy. When the officers present again persisted in pressing the subject upon his consideration, he rose from the table, and after expressing in a few words his regret that the commander-in-chief and company had not conceived a more favourable opinion of his principles, abruptly took his leave. So profoundly disgusted was he at this attempt to draw from his services that which he deemed dishonorable, that he resigned his employment as a guide, and withdrew to a distant part of the country, and it was not till after the expiration of several months, and after much entreaty, that he consented to return and resume his situation.

One of Oakley's Numerous Exploits,
An Attempt to Capture Captain Delancy

Delancy's Refugees were particularly bold and to stop this indiscriminate plundering of the inhabitants Colonel Millen planned an attack on their headquarters, which at that time was the Archer House (near Kings Bridge). For this service he had selected about one hundred and fifty men from three Massachusetts regiments with thirty volunteers and eight or ten of the Westchester guides, formed into a detachment which was to attempt Delancy's capture.

Colonel Millen sent Captain Cushing with the detachment that had been formed for the raid. When Cushing reached Mile Square a heavy rain storm set in, which ended the pursuit and he decided to return. The guides earnestly opposed this, although Cushing pleaded lack of authority, persuaded him to attempt the attack on the Archer House at once, using as arguments the fatigue of the enemy, as well as the storm and the darkness of the night. After a short rest about five miles

of the house, he sent out an advance party who fell in with a patrol of three men whom they surrounded and captured without raising an alarm. From these Cushing obtained information as to the number of men and the conditions in the house, as well as the countersign for the night. The prisoners also told them that the door was secured by heavy iron bars, but that the window and shutters were not so secure. Cornelius Oakley asked the privilege of leading the attack by breaking open the shutters. In this he succeeded, jumping into the room, carrying the sash with him and instantly followed by Dykman and Lieutenant Blake, all three sprawling on the floor among the astonished troopers. They recovered at once and informed them that the house was surrounded and any attempt to fight or escape would mean instant death. Dykman unbolted the door and admitted Captain Cushing with about thirty men to whom the inmates, consisting of one captain, two subalterns and seventeen non-commissioned officers and privates, all that were in the house at the time surrendered. Unfortunately Colonel Delancy was absent, having gone to Williamsbridge where the heavy storm detained him.

Cornelius Oakley continued with the Continental and State troops until the spring of 1783. After the Proclamation of Peace, he returned to agricultural pursuits.

Upon the great questions which agitated the public mind, he invariably formed opinions for himself, sometimes reducing them to writing.

In disposition he was sanguine, kind and sociable and blameless in all his domestic relations. Although he had occupied stations of authority in early life, there was sometimes a seeming severity in his manners; and where he had a right to command, he always exacted a prompt obedience.

of the house, he sent out an advance party. He left in with a patrol of three men whom they surrounded and captured without raising an alarm. From the prisoners obtained information as to the number of men and the conditions in the house, as well as the counter sign for the night. The prisoners also told them that the door was secured by heavy iron bars, but that the window and shutters were not so secure. Cornelius Oakley asked the pitiful [illegible] attempt [illegible] breaking open the shutters. In this he [illegible] pumping [illegible] carrying the sash [illegible] from [illegible] Lieutenant Blake [illegible] Dutchman [illegible] the astonished trooper. The [illegible] and informed them that the house was surrounded [illegible] and [illegible] pump [illegible] or escape would meet instant [illegible] Dutchman unbolted door and admitted Captain [illegible] with about thirty [illegible] to whom the inmates, consisting [illegible] captain [illegible] and seventeen non-commissioned officers and [illegible] all that were in the house at the time surrendered. Fortunately Colonel Delaney was absent, having gone to Mill [illegible] where the heavy storm detained him.

Cornelius Oakley continued with the continental militia troops until the spring of 1783. Peace [illegible] returned to agricultural pursuits.

Upon the great questions [illegible] agitated the public mind, he invariably formed opinions for himself, sometimes requiring them to writing.

In disposition he was sanguine, kind and sociable and blameless in all his domestic relations. Although he had occupied stations of authority in early life, there was nothing in seeming severity in his manners; and where he had right to command, he always exacted a prompt obedience.

During the later part of his life, his constitution became impaired, in consequence of the great exposures to which he had been subjected while in the public service.

He died at White Plains on the 29th of January, 1805, age 49 years. "Where shall we find the monuments that have been erected by the gratitude of the age to indicate the sepulchres of such men, and commemorate their lives, services and virtues? Vain would be the inquiry, unsatisfactory the research".

A stranger, traversing in these days what was once the "Neutral Ground" and hearing for the first time the adventures of the "Great Guides", might judge that they were entirely fictitious.

In our utilitarian age, their deeds have faded almost from memory. Generations that owe them so much, fail from want of information to give them recognition, and tread without reverence upon the ashes of these heroes. Names that ought to awaken veneration, sound in the ears of a new race as names of strangers. No one has ever depicted their exploits in painting or sculpture, nor in chronicle or song. Lavish in the praise of others, they are silent in respect to them. Let us devoutly hope that such forgetfulness will not be permanent.

The mortal remains of Oakley were interred in the Purchase street burying ground in the town of Harrison, where, unmarked and unhonored, they long lay, mingling with the ashes of the peaceful children of Fox.

Later, and when almost half a century had passed by, the burial place was fortunately identified and a plain stone put up with the inscription (all that Quakerism permits).

Will of Cornelius Oakley March 1, 1805. Third clause in will. He wills to his wife and children his farm in White Plains. (Liber F. P. 117, Surrogate's Office.)

Purchase Executive and Preparative Meeting of Friends held April 11, 1926.

Mr. William S. Hadaway representing the Historical Society of Westchester County, New York, requested permission of those meeting for the Historical Society to place a Tablet on the grave of Cornelius Oakley in the Purchase Cemetery.

This meeting is united in granting the request and the clerk was directed to so notify the Historical Society of Westchester County.

(Signed) DAVID R. BARNES,
Clerk.

The Cornelius Oakley Memorial

It has been noted that the interviews by John M. McDonald aroused interest in the seemingly forgotten grave of Cornelius Oakley.

In 1926 James S. Haviland and Charles C. Haviland, both formerly of Purchase, learned of the McDonald Manuscripts through the activities of the Historical Society and were prompted to aid in the erection of a memorial to Cornelius Oakley. The tablet was dedicated on Sunday, November 14, 1926 with appropriate exercises. The tablet is of bronze and is mounted on a field stone in front of the Oakley grave. The first part of the tablet is the memorial proper:

"In Memory of Cornelius Oakley a courageous and zealous guide in Westchester County during the American Revolution."

The second portion of the tablet is a prayer for peace as befits its location:

"They shall beat their swords into ploughshares and their spears into pruning hooks; Nation shall not lift up sword against Nation, neither shall they learn war any more.—ISAIAH II, 4."

The third portion reads: "Erected by the Westchester County Historical Society, 1926."

LAST INSCRIPTIONS ON MOTTO STONES

Purchase Incentives on Preservative Selection at Friends's held April 11, 1929.

Mr. William S. [illegible] Westchester County Seen [illegible] for the Historical Society [illegible] Oakley in the [illegible] This meeting [illegible] directed to so non [illegible] the H [illegible]

aroused interest in [illegible] Oakley.

In [illegible] Jan [illegible] 3, Morvital [illegible] through [illegible] prompted [illegible]

1929 with [illegible] is mounted on a [illegible] first part [illegible]

In Alan [illegible] guide in W [illegible] tion.'

The second [illegible] helps its location:

"They shall beat men swords [illegible] and their spears into pruning hooks: nation shall not lift up sword against Nation, neither shall they learn war any more.—ISAIAH II, 4."

The third portion reads: "Erected by the Westchester County Historical Society, 1929."

The simple dignity of the Oakley memorial and its peaceful environment are fitting emblems of the modest spirits who brought about its erection.

There are now memorials to Oakley, Dykman and Odell in the cemeteries at Purchase, Yorktown Heights and Tarrytown respectively, "The three great guides" are permanently enshrined in bronze and stone for the memories of those that will follow us due primarily to the activities of the historian.

The McDonald papers, edited by William S. Hadaway and published by the Westchester County Historical Society in 1926 and 1927 contain much valuable information from interviews of persons between 70 and 96 years of age in the years 1844 to 1850.

It is but fitting that in this volume, special acknowledgement should be paid to John McLean McDonald. The people of White Plains endorse the sentiments expressed by Mr. William S. Hadaway, who edited the McDonald papers and heartily join Mr. Hadaway in honorable and grateful remembrance of one of her citizens, who devoted so much of his time, and contributed such valuable historical information.

John M. McDonald was educated as a lawyer and practiced his profession for several years. He suffered a stroke of paralysis which left him a physical wreck, but with unimpaired intellect. His illness compelled him to abandon his professional career, and therefore during his intervals between suffering, he spent the balance of his life in literary studies and was particularly devoted to all incidents in connection with Revolutionary activities in Westchester County. For twenty-eight years he was an infirm paralytic, requiring the services of an attendant. His fortunes became in some degree those of the other members of his family and particularly of his brothers Allan and James.

The simple dignity of the Oakley memorial and its peaceful environment are fitting emblems of the modest spirits who brought about [illegible].

These are non-memorials to Oakley, Lennan and Odell in the cemeteries at [illegible] Toronto in Ilkeston and Tarra[illegible] own respectively. The three [illegible] are permanently enshrined in brons[illegible] the memories of those that will follow us du[illegible] the [illegible] of the b[illegible]

The McDonal[illegible] and published b[illegible] in 1926 and [illegible] interviews or perso[illegible] years 1844

It is but fitting [illegible] ment should be p[illegible] in M[illegible] of Nine Plains [illegible] Liam S[illegible] the McDonald pages [illegible] heartily join Mr. Hadaway [illegible] a honorable and grateful remembrance of [illegible] deceased so much of his time and contribute [illegible] historical information.

John M. McDonald [illegible] and [illegible] ted his pr[illegible] for seven years. He suffered a stroke of paralysis which left him [illegible] but with unimpaired intellect. His illne[illegible] compelled him to abandon his professional career, and therefore during his intervals between suffering, he spent the balance of his life in literary studies. He was particularly devoted to all incidents in connection with Revolutionary activities in Westchester County. For twenty-eight years he was an invalid paralytic, requiring the services of an attendant. His fortunes became in some degree those of the other members of his family and particularly of his brothers Allan and James.

John McLean McDonald was the eldest son of Dr. Archibald McDonald. He grew into manhood under the paternal roof which was located on the Dobbs Ferry Road (now the northwest corner of Spring Street and North Broadway).

Liber I Page 239 Register's Office

ISAAC STOUTENBURGH and
PHILIP VAN CORTLANDT
to
CORNELIUS OAKLEY and ISAAC OAKLEY

This indenture, made this twentieth day of August in the ninth year of the independence of the State of New York and in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and eighty four.

Between, Isaac Stoutenburgh and Philip Van Courtlandt, Esquires, Commissioners of Forfeiture for the Southern District of the said State appointed in pursuance of an Act of the legislature of the said state entitled "An Act for the speedy sale of the confiscated and forfeited Estates within this state, and for other purposes therein mentioned passed the twelfth day of May one thousand seven hundred and eighty four of the one part and Cornelius Oakley and Isaack Oakley both of the County of Westchester and sons of Isaack Oakley farmer of the other part.

Witnesseth, that the said Isaack Stoutenburgh and Philip Van Courtlandt, Commissioners as aforesaid by virtue of the power and authority to them in and by the said act granted and for and in consideration of the sum of two hundred and two Pounds lawful money of the State of New York to them in hand paid by the said Cornelius Oakley and Isaack Oakley the receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged have granted, bar-

John McLean McDonald, the eldest son of Dr. Archibald McDonald. He gradu[illegible] graduated under the paternal roof which was located on the Dobbs Ferry Road (now the northwest corner of Sixth Street and North Broadway).

Liber I Page 240 [illegible]

Isaac Stou[illegible]

Philip Van C[illegible]

Cornelius Van [illegible]

This indenture, [illegible] in the year of [illegible] eighty four

Between, Isaac [illegible]

Esquires, Commissi[illegible] for the Southern [illegible] trict of the said State [illegible] Legislature of the [illegible] of the confiscati[illegible] for other purposes [illegible] of Van one thousand [illegible] part and Cornelius [illegible] County of Westchester [illegible] the other part.

Witnesseth, that the said Isaac Stoutenburgh and Philip Van Courtlandt, commissioners [illegible] by virtue of the power and authority to them in and by the said act granted and for and in consideration of the sum of two hundred [illegible] Pounds lawful money of the State of New York to them in hand paid by the said Cornelius Oakley and Isaac Oakley [illegible] receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged have granted, bar-

gained, sold enfeoffed and confirmed and by these presents do grant, bargain, sell enfeoff and confirm unto the said Cornelius Oakley and Isaac Oakley and their heirs and assigns, all that certain lot and parcel of land lying easterly from the place where the Court House at White Plains in the County of Westchester formerly stood, bounded on the south by the road leading from White Plains to Rye, on the east by the road that leads to Brown's point (now the N. Y. Hospital) on the north by the lands of William Ascew deceased and Robert Graham and contains about eleven acres.

Also one other lot facing the ruins of said Court House bounded on the south by the lands of Isaack Oakley, Shoemaker, on the east by lands of Isaack Oakley, Farmer, and Robert Graham on the north by the road leading from White Plains to Harrison's precinct and on the West by the road fronting the ruins of the Court House, containing about four acres.

In witness whereof the parties to these presents have hereunto interchangeably set their hands and seals the day and year first above written.

Sealed and delivered in the presence of us

ISAAC STOUTENBURGH (L.S.)
PH. V. COURTLANDT (L.S.)

Be it remembered that on the fifteenth day of November one thousand seven hundred and eighty four personally came and appeared before me John Sloss Hobart one of the Judges of the Supreme Court of Judicature for the State of NY the above named Isaack Stoutenburgh and Philip Van Courtlandt, Esquire and each of them respectively acknowledge that he had executed the above indenture by sealing and delivering thereof as a voluntary act and deed for the uses and purposes therein mentioned, and I having examined the said indenture

and found no material erazures or interliniations therein do allow it to be recorded.

JNO SLOSS HOBART

A true copy of original deed and acknowledgement indorsed and acknowledgement taken and entered this 12th day of January, 1785.

PR RICHARD HATFIELD,
Clerk.

Andrew Corsa

In the summer of 1778, Andrew Corsa, then a youth of 20, was called upon to aid the American forces. Corsa's family served in the British army and were loyalists. Notwithstanding this embarrassing fact, the enthusiastic lad disregarded his parental interests, and gave aid to the government which subsequently deprived him of his patrimony.

It was on July 22nd, 1781 that Cornelius Oakley informed Corsa that Washington required his services as a guide. This young man, who possessed intelligence, and accurate knowledge of the roads and passes in Westchester County, accepted the commission.

William A. Walton, father of Louisa W. Depew of 90 Waller Avenue, and William F. Walton of Lincoln Avenue, East White Plains, were the grandsons of Andrew Corsa on his mother's side. Corsa was the great, grandfather of Samuel J. Walton, who gave his life for his country in the Spanish-American War.

Major William Popham

Major William Popham of Scarsdale is referred to in Bolton's History of Westchester County, and we are indebted to the New York Express, of September 27th, 1847, for this account of Major Popham:

"He was born in the town of Bandon, Cork County, Ireland, on the 19th, of September, 1752. . . . It was his intention to enter upon the holy office of the Ministry, but on the breaking out of the Revolutionary War, he was fired by military zeal and accepted a Commission in the Army, and immediately raised a Company in defence of his Country.

"His first engagement was at the Battle of Long Island, where he greatly distinguished himself by taking prisoner the famous Captain Raag, with eighteen more of the enemy.

"He was then appointed a Captain in the Army, and having followed the American arms to White Plains, he there again distinguished himself as an accomplished soldier and a brave man . . . He was the friend and companion of Washington and claimed as his intimates many of the most remarkable men of his day.

"His funeral took place on Sunday last and Bishop De Laney, an old and well-tried friend of the departed, officiated on this occasion. The remains of the deceased were conveyed to White Plains and interred in the little church-yard of the village, (the Old Grace Episcopal Church-yard on South Broadway, and about 1850, his remains were removed to Scarsdale and placed in the family plot.)

"Major Popham was President of the New York State Society of Cincinnati, and as the oldest member, President General of the Society of Cincinnati of the United States."

CHAPTER XIII

Critics and Debatable Points

MILITARY leaders and historians alike seemed to have overlooked the importance of the part that White Plains actually took in the struggle for American Independence. The cause for freedom looked dark and gloomy until Washington selected White Plains and its natural topographical advantages, as the strategic locality on which to stake his all: to defy the enemy and to check its triumphant march.

The story of the almost superhuman task that confronted Washington while here, has yet to be told, together with the vast, decisive significance of the Battle of White Plains. To the thoughtful student of today, this struggle looms more and more as one of the most notable events of the Revolutionary War.

Historians labor under the impression that Howe's dilatory methods were to blame for his failure to capture Washington here, and thus end the War. This is to belittle Washington's skill and, in a measure, to discredit him. In other words, too much emphasis has been placed on Howe's inability, and too little on Washington's ability.

Washington, ever alert, and rising superior to every defeat, had, by his foresight in the selection of the semi-circle of hills surrounding White Plains, giving protection to his men, outplayed the enemy. Howe saw that the "game" was ended and made no further attempt to dislodge the Americans. The very obvious assumption is that he decided his prospects of success were futile.

The historians have characterized General Howe as "the half-hearted", as not "taking advantage of his opportunity"; "inactive", "irresolute", "slow to decide", and, finally, that he "lacked courage". We find him charged with "continuing to omit pressing the various advantages so dearly gained from time to time". Chatterton Hill is cited in such charges. We likewise find that his critics go so far as to infer that "he was friendly to the Revolution and connived to bring about its success".

I hold no special brief for Howe but look upon him with critical though impartial eyes, as he pursued his object while in White Plains and operated to the best of his judgment. Nothing in his previous record indicates that he was inherently weak as a soldier and strategist. Sir William Howe was looked upon and everywhere considered, as one of the best soldiers in England. After careful consideration, he was selected as best fitted to perform the vitally important task of subduing the revolting Colonies.

In all fairness to Howe, I firmly believe he should be held technically blameless of the charges heaped upon him for his record in White Plains. The censure was as unjust as it was severe.

I am inclined to believe that his critics were never on these battle-grounds: were not scientifically and intimately conversant with the topography of the battle area. Any other assumption is incredible. Had his critics been more familiar with the conditions that prevailed when Howe faced the enormous task of attempting to dislodge Washington from the securely fortified and apparently impregnable hills of North White Plains, and the North Castle territory, they would have been less severe in their criticism.

How essential it is, then, that we approach our estimate of Howe with an open mind, free from prejudice based on ready-made ideas or theories and with an unwillingness to accept as necessarily true hearsay and traditions.

This subject is approached by me with a complete consciousness of its importance and my personal responsibility to my readers. As a close life-time student of the scene of the Battle, I have had access to very convincing data. Before arriving at any conclusion, I familiarized myself thoroughly with the area under discussion. Years were spent in quest for authentic historical records, before venturing to differ with former writers and to question the authenticity of their statements and the force of their opinions.

I familiarized myself of the *conditions* which must have prevailed at the time of the conflict, before a decision was reached to offer my findings and to see that justice was done. If I am to correct errors and challenge others, I must speak with both authority and an honest conviction.

A Stupendous Game of Checkers

Washington, in my judgment, played his "Game of War" as might a shrewdly expert hand at checkers, who lays plans for a final objective by seemingly "giving away" points of advantage to his opponent, but certain of the crucial decision and outcome. It would appear inevitable that Washington anticipated Howe, as his first "move", would make an attack on Chatterton Hill, where General McDougal was stationed, in command.

Washington himself comes in for sharp criticism and censure by critics also, because about 2,500 men were stationed on Chatterton Hill, "entirely open to the flank movement on the part of the enemy". Had Howe attempted a flank movement

of this character, to the right of Chatterton, he would have exposed his own army to cross-fire from both Chatterton and Dusenbury Hills, whereon Washington and his main army were located.

It is fair to assume that if Howe had successfully attempted the flank movement, his ambition to end the War here would no doubt have been gratified—but in favor of the patriotic forces under the command of Washington, who always had before him a mental picture of the character of the country over which the struggle was taking place or might take place.

The indications are that the Commander-in-Chief knew that McDougal could not hold Chatterton Hill against overwhelming British forces. He had taken every precaution to cover and protect the retreat of his men on the Hill, from the westerly slope of Dusenbury Hill.

The fact that the Americans did make a successful retreat, proves how shrewdly effective were Washington's methods in conducting the defensive by first permitting the enemy to develop a plan. He must be credited with almost uncanny and infallible foresight in anticipating the points of enemy attack.

When Howe arrived in the forenoon of October 28th, there was no alternative of action: it was compulsory that he meet the situation as he found it. The troops stationed on Chatterton Hill constituted the first menace, to attract his attention. He immediately concentrated his forces for action on the grounds south of the present Rochambeau School, for the selection of this place gave him an unobstructed view of Chatterton Hill. In one of the McDonald Papers there are pertinent observations:

"Before he landed in Westchester, General Howe's tardiness of movement had become manifest: Washington ever afterward seems to have counted it in his operations. It has generally been the opinion of military

men that had the American Army, on the 28th day of October, been promptly attacked upon the right and center, it would have been overthrown. All was then confusion and alarm in Washington's camp.

"The lapse of a single night took from the British commander his golden opportunity. His hesitation and timidity at White Plains have generally been accounted for by his unwillingness to attack American troops when covered by any kind of entrenchments. He commanded for the King at the Battle of Bunker Hill and the dear-bought experience of that day is supposed to have influenced him throughout the rest of his military life."

But again it is called to your attention, considered in conjunction with such chronicles as the above and those which have preceded it, that both military observers and historians have persistently overlooked the swamps and marshes that faced Howe on this occasion. (Refer to Map.)

The Bronx valley, separating the point of retreat on Chatterton Hill and the West end of Purdy Hill (now Dusenbury Hill) from which place the retreat was covered, is less than a quarter of a mile. Here was a vast swamp that covered the entire space between the two sectors, with the Bronx River occupying a midway position. The Americans in their retreat, passed over a small wooden bridge (this bridge was known as Chatterton bridge) spanning the river here, and joined the main army on Purdy Hill, where Washington was located.

Books on Military strategy discuss the advantage of the offensive in land warfare. For example, note the principles of war advocated by General Foch:

"The direction chosen for attack must offer:

(1) Good approaches

(2) Few obstacles

(3) Space to manoeuver

The nature of the ground has a part in determining the choice of the objective for decisive attack."

None of the three major principles advanced by General Foch prevailed in White Plains at the time of the conflict under discussion.

The existence of the marshes, located as they were, directly in front of Purdy Hill, Miller, Mt. Misery, Fisher, Hatfield and Merritt Hills, constituted an "obstacle of protection", far greater than any hastily thrown-up entrenchments, however acceptible to Washington and his brave troops.

Here were natural advantages due to the geographical situation of the semi-circle of hills surrounding White Plains. I am of the opinion that these marshes, situated as they were, and aggravated by the downpour of heavy rains, seasonal during the latter part of October, were a vitally important strategic factor, and a problem of the most serious character to Howe and his engineers, not entering into their plans when they determined to "crush the rebels and end the Rebellion" here in White Plains.

All that territory to the south of Purdy Hill, from the Dobbs Ferry Road (Rockledge) was low, boggy, swampy land as far south as the present Post Road, with a brook running through the entire length of a practically impassable area—Golden Pine Brook, clearly designated in early maps, and later known as Davis Brook.

The unfavorable conditions of the swamp-land did not permit of the passing of large forces nor of such maneuvering as would be necessary for a successful frontal attack. Howe's problem, then, was how to move around this boggy sector and institute an attack. There was but one alternative—the road (Broadway). It should be kept in mind that there were, at this time, no roads running north and south, between Broadway and Chatterton Hill. Mill Lane ran parallel with Chatterton Hill on the West side of the river, and to the East of its

None of the three major principles advanced by General Poch prevailed in White Plains at the time the conflict took discussion.

The existence of the morasses, located as they were, directly in front of Purdy Hill, Mill Mountain, Fisher, Chatfield and Merritt Hills, constituted an obstacle of protection, far greater than any hastily thrown-up entrenchments, however accessible to Washington on his heavy troops.

Here were natural advantages due to the geographical situation of the semi-circle of hills surrounding White Plains. I am of the opinion that these marshes, flooded as they were and aggravated by the downpour of heavy rains, seasonal during the latter part of October, were a vitally important strategic factor, and a problem [illegible] to Howe's chagrin. Howe and his engineers, not anxious into their plans when they determined to "crush the rebels and end the 'Rebellion' here in White Plains."

All that territory to the south of Purdy Hill, from the Dobbs Ferry Road (Rockledge) was low-lying swampy land as far south as the present Post Road, with a brook running through the entire length to a practically impassable area—Golden Fine Brook, clearly designated in early maps, and later known as Davis Brook.

The unfavorable conditions of the swamp-land did not permit of the passing of large forces nor of such massed artillery as would be necessary for a successful frontal attack. Howe's problem, then, was how to move around this boggy sector and institute an attack. There was but one alternative—the roadway. It should be kept in mind that there were, at this time, no roads running north and south, between Broadway and Chatterton Hill. Mill Lane [illegible] Chatterton Hill on the West side of the river, and to the East of

base: and to the North only where it intersected the Dobbs Ferry Road (Battle Avenue). How definitely and clearly these facts are substantiated when you refer to the Map.

Mill Lane was out of the question for it was far too narrow for practical Army use. Therefore, as matters stood, one road and one only, Broadway, was available for Howe's troops to take, in column. Such troops in column of route, take up a great deal of space as to depth, and if the object is to fight a battle facing in the direction of the line of advance, the time required for rear troops to swing into direct action, depends upon their distance from the front column, and the breadth of space to be traversed.

Had Howe followed up his gains, on Washington's right wing on Chatterton Hill, by taking the only approach of open road, and, had he succeeded in mobilizing and concentrating his forces at a point on Broadway, which would have been to the left of Washington's center on Purdy Hill, the chances were that he would have been trapped.

Howe no doubt foresaw this and realized the danger of an attack based on this strategy, for it would have made a center target of his troops from three different points—Purdy Hill on the West, Hatfield Hill on the East and Fisher Hill on the Northeast.

There were no roads as previously noted running North and South between Broadway and Chatterton Hill and no roads running East and West between Rockledge Avenue and the present Maple Avenue.

When laying out the roads, the engineers followed the lines of least resistance: Dobbs Ferry Road (now Spring Street and Rockledge Avenue) to Broadway and the Connecticut Road (Lake Street). They followed the natural contour at the base of the hills, thus avoiding the crossing of the bogs and marshes.

bases and to the North only where it intersected the Double Ferry Road (Battle Avenue). Hon definitely and clearly these facts are substantiated when we refer to the Map.

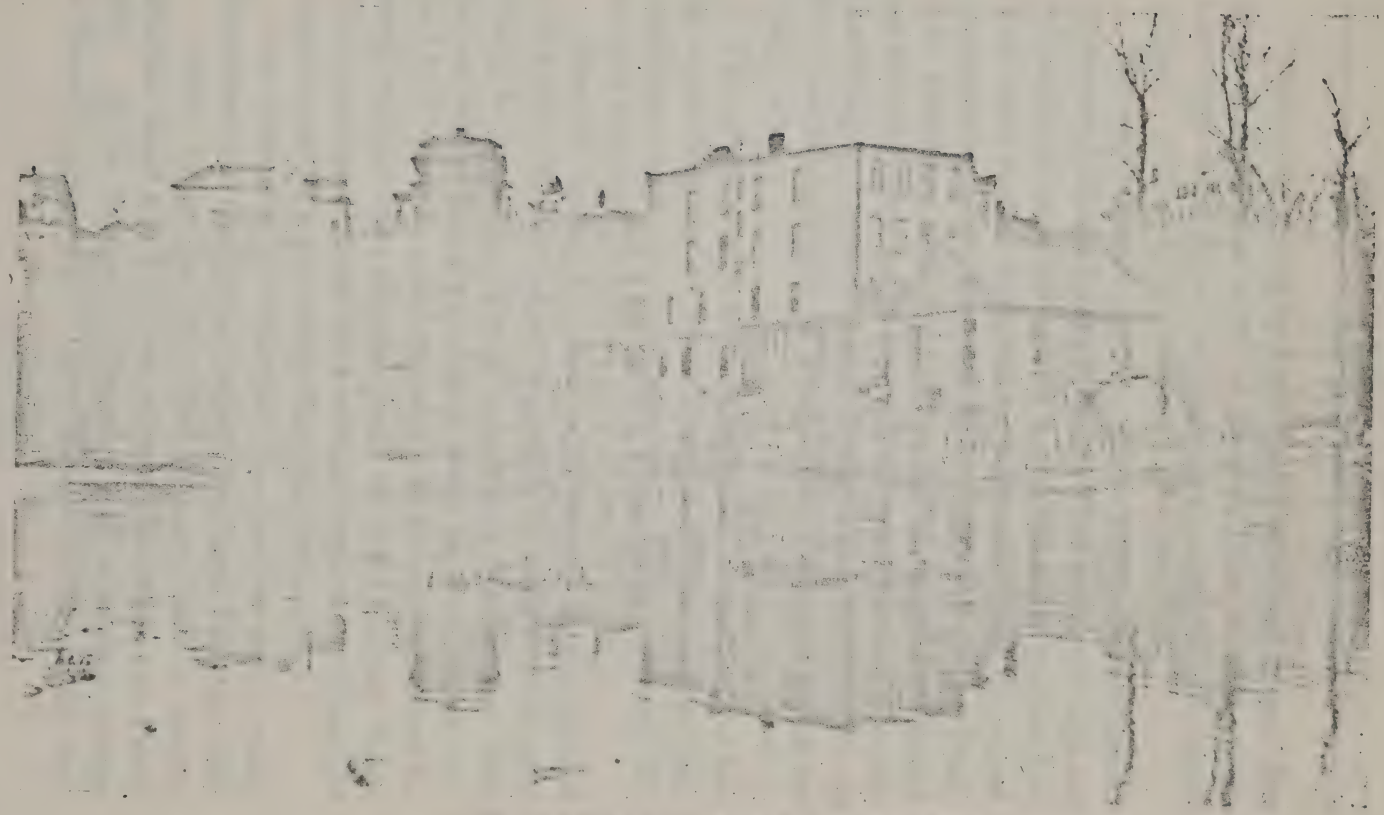
Mill Lane was out of the question for it was far too narrow for practical Army use. Therefore, as matters stood, one road and one only, Broadway, was available for Howe's troops to take, in column. Such [illegible] column of route take a great deal of space as a deployed [illegible] object is to fight a battle facing in the direction [illegible] the [illegible] obstacle the time required for rear troops [illegible] direction depends upon their distance from the [illegible] breadth of space to be traversed.

Had Howe followed in his [illegible] Washington's right wing on Chatterton Hill [illegible] the only approach of open road, and had he succeeded [illegible] and [illegible] concentrating his forces at a point on the [illegible] have been to the left of Washington [illegible] Hill, the [illegible] would that he would have been trapped.

Howe no doubt foresaw [illegible] and realis[illegible] the danger of attack based on this strategy, for it would have made a greater target of his troops from three different points—Penny Hill on the West, Hatfield Hill on the [illegible] and Fish's Hill on the Northeast.

There were no roads as previously noted running North and South between Broadway and Chatterton Hill and no roads running East and West between Rockledge Avenue and the present Maple Avenue.

When laying out the roads, the engineers followed the lines of least resistance: Dobbs Ferry Road (now Spring Street, Rockledge Avenue) to Broadway and the Connecticut Road (Lake Street). They followed the natural contour at the base of the hills, thus avoiding the crossing of the bogs and marshes.



SITE OF RECREATION PARK, LAKE STREET

This photograph was taken about 1910 showing Hatfield Hill and the marshes in foreground as they were in 1874 when the writer came to town. The house on the extreme right of the picture on top of the hill was built by the late Theodore Doll, father of the present owner, Mrs. Charles Deutermann, in 1897. The others were built at a later date. General Heath was in command of this hill on November 1st, 1776. The material excavated from the side and slope at the base of the hill, as shown in the picture, was used to construct the Connecticut roadbed when laid out in 1763 (see Lake Street).

Prior to the taking by New York City of the natural flow of the Bronx River, north of Kensico Dam in 1885, to the knowledge of the writer, the river was too deep to wade in this section.

The only means of crossing this swamp and river between Chatterton Hill and Purdy Hill was a low wooden bridge and this section of now Main Street was raised to the present level of the stone bridge. This was the point over which the Americans retreated under the protection of the west end of Purdy Hill. Had Howe ventured to follow up his success on Chatterton Hill, his Army would from necessity have had to cross this same bridge. This would have localized and concentrated the fire from the ramparts on Purdy Hill. (Some of which are visible today.)

This situation gave the Americans the advantage; for had the enemy attempted to cross the bridge, the losses under these conditions would have been enormous; Howe's generals did not take this risk.

Howe in making his attack of November 1st on Hatfield Hill found a frontal attack impossible by reason of the great swamp to the south. The only approach feasible was from the east side of Broadway, facing along the west side of Hatfield Hill. Here he was confronted with the ravine between the brook midway from the pond back of Good Counsel Farm. This brook flowed under the wooden bridge on Lake Street and emptied into the great swamp (now Recreation Park).

Not being able to accomplish his objective at this point, Howe then tried the approach toward the Rural Cemetery Hill.

When he reached the Rural Cemetery Hill, a similar situation faced him like that between Chatterton and Purdy Hills. At the bottom of Cemetery Hill, a wooden bridge on Broadway crossed the "Great Meadow Brook" which sup-

plied the power of Anthony Miller's fulling mill and emptied into the Bronx River. This great meadow swamp covered the entire front of Fisher Hill, Mt. Misery and Miller Hills and, like Hatfield Hill, it was an obstacle too great to overcome for a frontal attack.

Broadway roadbed crossing a little to the west of the middle of the swamp was raised later to the present level.

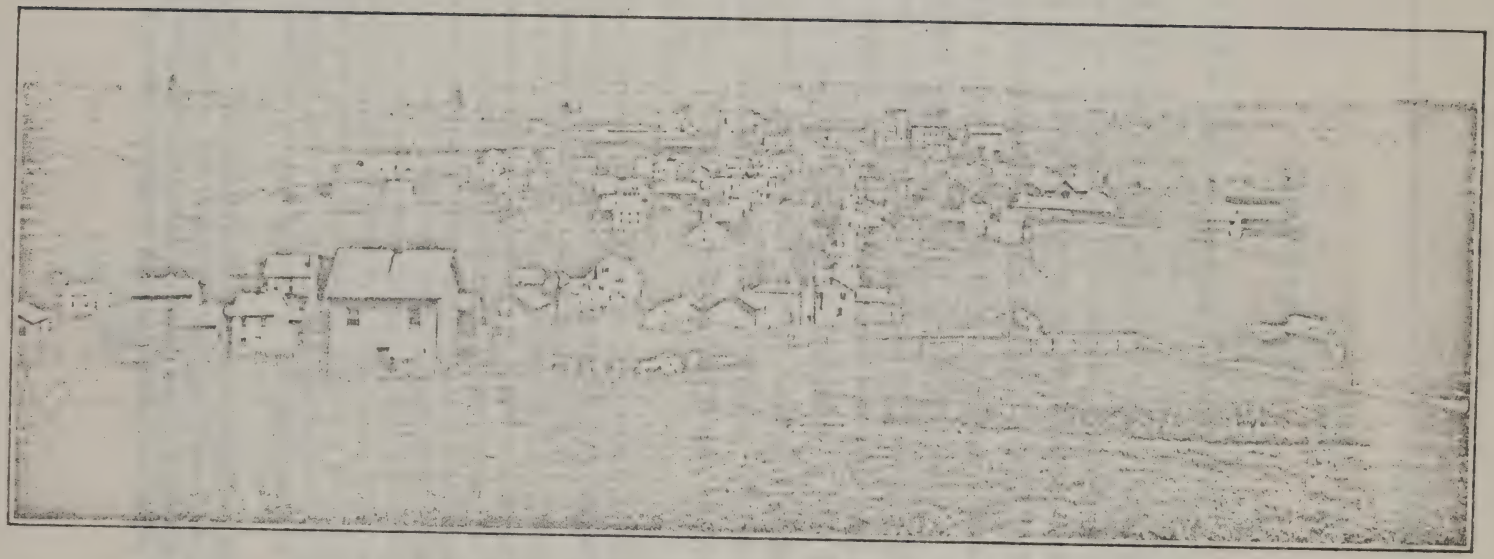
This roadbed and bridge were within range of the batteries from Fisher, Mt. Misery and Miller Hills.

Howe made no attempt to concentrate his troops over this narrow defile; and then followed the route to Travis Hill as stated in a former chapter.

Consider this extract from Sir William Howe's speech of April 22nd, 1779, in the Parliamentary History of England, Vol. XX, pages 679, 680:

"In 1779 when Howe was addressing the House of Commons in his own defense, he laid it down as the most essential duty of a General, never wantonly to expose His Majesty's troops in a case where the required end could only be attained with much bloodshed. He further pleaded ignorance of the mainland. (This included White Plains.)

"The country, he said, was ill-adapted for reconnoitering parties of Infantry."



VIEW FROM CHATTERTON HILL, WHITE PLAINS, IN 1876

CHAPTER XIV

"The Call of the Old Village Street"

WE HAVE sketched in rapid succession, the early pioneer life, the Indians of Westchester, war clouds culminating in a great victory for a great cause, and some of the topographical aspects of the country. Now it will be well to pause for a more detailed study of Revolutionary times, people, and the homelier side of village existence.

And here again it is both wise and necessary to quote from documents written by men whose contacts with rare reference data, justifies the claim that it is authentic. There follows a stirringly penned paper read at the Annual Meeting of the Village Park Association of White Plains, Friday evening, March 3, 1905, at Grace Church Parish House, by William A. Woodworth, Esq.

"I ask your attention this evening to a study of the old White Plains street, in its historical aspects and the claims that its associations make on us of the present generation for our reverent care.

"The Town of Rye, on the Sound shore, had been settled for many years by an over-flow from Connecticut. Its lands were marshy or rocky and altogether unsuited for agriculture. A trail over the hills and through the woods led to the rolling, fertile plains of Quarroppas, which a peaceful Indian tribe had tilled and cultivated with their native maize.

"Toward their productive soil the men of Rye looked with longing eyes. The trail gradually widened to a bridle path, with the frequent visits of the Rye prospectors, till at length, in 1683, a bargain was struck with the Orawaupum and other chiefs, and Quarroppas, or The White Plains, was formally conveyed by deed to the 'Inhabitants of the Town of Rye'.

"How many of these 'inhabitants' availed themselves of the purchase is not definitely known; but it appears from numerous deeds on record, that prior to 1697, there had been an allotment of various home plots, followed by a prompt settlement thereon, so that the bridle path had

broadened again into a wagon road, which, in 1708, was officially laid out and christened the 'Queen's Highway', and along which the home lots were located.

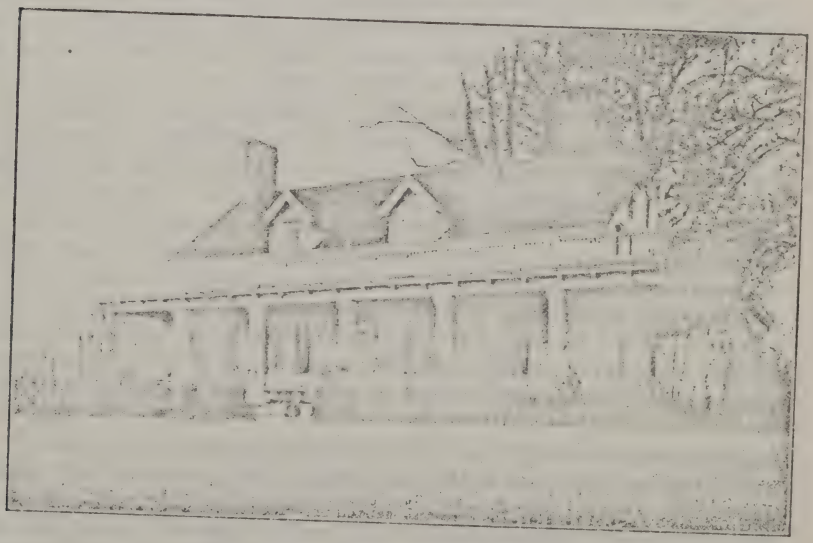
"All other lands in the purchase were undivided, unfenced and held in common.

"Later, as more inhabitants came in, there was another allotment of undivided lands. In 1721 there was a third, and, about 1750, a fifth and last allotment. All the lands left after the last allotment were common lands and are mostly comprised in what is now known as Broadway.

"The only other piece which I know of lay on the north side of the Presbyterian Church, which was conveyed in 1764 after the course of the Dobbs Ferry Road had been changed to its present location, to the church, for a common burying ground.

"In this respect White Plains came nearer to the type of New England towns, where almost invariably a large square was left unoccupied and called the Commons. This was variously used for pasturage, village sports and training grounds; for there the primitive militia were drilled on training days for the war duties to which they were subject.

"The earlier home lots were situated along the low lands at the foot of the hill and gradually extended up to the Great Meadow Brook, where one Anthony Miller, built a fulling mill, the remains of which can still be seen below the Rural Cemetery.



The Anthony Miller House, Restored

"Then some home lots were assigned at the top of the hill on the west side of the street, from which in 1717 a road was la'd out to Eastchester and so to New York. In 1727 the Presbyterian Meeting House was erected at its present site, and the land around it was the burying ground for the passing generations."

"In 1734 the White Plains Street was formally and officially laid out as follows: Beginning between ye home lot, formerly laid out to Thomas Brown and Caleb Hyatt, where ye road is laid out that goeth down to Eastchester, and from thence runneth northerly by the fronts of said home lots on each side of ye street, said street or highway to be ye same width as was left when said lot was laid out, until it cometh to the Great Meadow Brook; then still northward between lands of Anthony Miller, four rods wide, and from said Miller's lands still northward by marked trees ye same width until it cometh to Bruncksesses River, where it meets ye road that cometh off the manor of Phillipsborrogh, by Pinet's House."

"The White Plains Street, or Broadway now, was then the centre of the business and social interests of the town. In 1758 the town had grown to be of such importance, socially and politically, that the Colonial Legislature ordered the removal of the Court House from Westchester to White Plains. During the ensuing year the Court House was built at the lower end of the street, on what is now the site of Mr. Fiero's house (now the State Armory).

"That event, of course, added greatly to the dignity of the street and the fame of the town, which then became the capital of the County. People came to it from New York and the surrounding towns to transact their law business, record their deeds, probate their wills, legislate for County affairs and discuss their relations with the mother country.

"A line of stages was started to Eastchester and New York and later on northward to Bedford and Danbury, and the village street daily resounded with the fanfares of the bugle horn. Taverns were built, shops also, and law offices, all centering about the Court House.

"From this time on to the period of the Revolution, we have no pictures showing how the street appeared, or what was the architecture on it. There were no houses now standing on Broadway that were there in 1776. The old Brundage Homestead, built in 1697, stood just north of the entrance to the residence of Mr. William R. Brown (in 1776 known as the Captain John Falconer house and stood directly back of the present Civil War Monument on Broadway), but was torn down some twenty years ago.

"There was in those days no decorative park work or landscape gardening. The street was then a broad, open plain, unshaded except by here and there a tree, and down at the lower end tangles of bushes. The daisy and wild parsnip bloomed on the commons and doubtless the red rose and honeysuckle and hollyhock embellished some home lots.

"A brook trickled down the street making a marshy stretch below the church, and finally chattered down the hill by sedgy banks to join the brimming Mamaroneck River.

"Horses were hitched on week days in front of the stores and public houses, stamping holes in the turf and chewing up the hitching posts or venturesome saplings, and, on the Sabbath, in front of the Meeting House, patiently waiting for the long sermon to be over, and lazily whisking off the summer flies.

"With the coming on of the Revolution there began here a series of events which ought to enshrine the Village Street not only in the hearts of our own citizens, but of the people of the whole State."

That some repetition of facts already stated now appear in the present paper, is to be expected, always however, given interest by a fresh point of view and certain important observations not included in such documents previously quoted.

"In the spring of 1775, while the events at Lexington and Concord were stirring the blood of the Eastern Colonists, an assembly of freeholders from all parts of Westchester County convened at The White Plains to discuss the moving questions of the day, and to determine on some course of action.

"The people of Westchester County had not felt so keenly the oppression and exactions of England as the Eastern Colonists, and were disposed to seek for redress by peaceful measures and not risk their fortunes upon an untried sea of political independence; and the number of these peaceful loyalists rather exceeded that of the more hot-headed, rebellious spirits.

"But a mighty wave was moving on with a momentum which numbers were powerless to overcome. On the day of the conventions, farmers and lawyers and business men from all over the County, thronged the Village Street, and long and loud were the discussions that broke the wonted quiet of the village.

"The revolutionists rallied at Oakley's tavern, opposite the Court House, and without delay convened in the Court Room, and, with Col. Lewis Morris as Chairman, proceeded at once to the business they had in mind. The headquarters of the Conservatives was at Captain Hatfield's tavern, around the corner from the late residence of Mr. James Waller. They were resolved to take no part in the rebellious proceedings, but marched two hundred strong to the Court House, where, instead of joining in the business of the day and outvoting the Revolutionists, they contented themselves by formally entering their protest against the proceedings, and then marched back to the tavern singing "God Save Great George, Our King".

"The protest was received, but neither it nor anything else could deflect the Convention from its settled purpose. Resolutions were adopted denouncing the course of the Parliament, advocating immediate separation and armed revolution, and appointing deputies to meet the deputies from other counties at New York, to elect delegates to the first Continental Congress to convene at Philadelphia.

"Thus was White Plains, in spite of itself, committed to the Revolutionary cause.

"A year later, in July 1776, the Provincial Assembly of the Colony of New York, held its session in the Court House, and its doings and deliberations were fraught with mighty consequences. Here were gathered John Jay, Nathanial Woodhull, Lewis Morris, Gouverneur Morris, Jonathan G. Tompkins, William Paulding, Philip Livingston and other leading men of the Colony.

"On the fourth day of July the Continental Congress, at Philadelphia, had adopted the famous Declaration of Independence, which was received at White Plains by the Provincial Assembly on the 9th, and, after grave deliberation, was solemnly approved and all allegiance to Great Britain was forever renounced. Here, on that day, on the village green, in front of the Court House, at beat of drums, was read for the first time within the confines of New York, this immortal Declaration. Copies were printed and bills were posted along the street, at the shops and taverns, and sent to all the towns and local Assemblies in the Province.

"On that same day, the Assembly by resolution changed its title from the 'Provincial Congress of the Colony of New York,' to the 'Convention of the Representatives of the State of New York'.

"Here then, on this old street, the great State of New York was born. But later on that same year there was enacted in White Plains another drama full of interest and of the most momentous importance to the destiny of the nation.

"The war had been going on for over a year, with no decisive results. The British Parliament awakened at last, and determined to crush the rebellion in one fell blow, had sent across the ocean an army of 40,000 fresh troops, which had landed on Staten Island. The Battle of Long Island soon followed, full of disaster, defeat and discouragement to the Americans, who were forced back to New York, and then to Harlem Heights.

"General Howe, landing a large army at Throggs Neck, threatened Washington's rear. His object was to hem in and annihilate the rebel army, establish a line of posts along the Hudson, Lake George and Champlain, and so cut off the Eastern from the Southern Colonies. Apparently everything now pointed to the speedy accomplishment of that purpose.

"The Americans had been defeated, driven back and were disheartened. Thousands were sick, all were scantily clothed, poorly fed and

badly sheltered. The terms of enlistment were daily expiring and hundreds were leaving in disgust.

"No wonder Washington is said to have fallen into a mental condition bordering on despair.

"Having at length recovered his self control, he skilfully and with great celerity abandoned Manhattan Island, removed his stores, and, on October 26, mustered his troops at White Plains, prepared to meet the enemy face to face. On October 28, General Howe, with his army, appeared marching up the Post Road.

"Arriving at White Plains they defiled into the fields and formed in battle array, resplendent in glowing uniforms, their arms glittering in the morning sun. They were the flower of the British army, well disciplined, well fed, comfortably clothed and elated by a tide of victories. Their hired Hessian troops were professional soldiers, drilled to perfection and obedient as machines. Who, looking at these hostile armies, but would have foretold the doom of the Revolutionists?

"The preliminary engagement, when the invaders drove the defenders from Chatterton Hill, the story of which is familiar to us all, was one more of British successes. But the loss of men that morning was so great, that General Howe paused before striking the decisive blow, and waited for another day, although some skirmishes appear to have taken place along the Village Street.

"Washington meanwhile retired his left wing to the summit of the northward hills, threw up a new line of redoubts stretching from Dusenbury Hill eastward across the Village Street to Horton's Mills. It is said that a part of the entrenchment was made of corn stalks, pulled up by the roots with a large clod of earth clinging to each, which, being laid with the clod side outward, presented so formidable a defense to the British officers as they reconnoitered the situation on the morning of the 29th that they decided to wait another day, till reinforcements should arrive from New Rochelle.

"The next day it rained, and still another day General Howe waited, and planned. But Washington did not wait. While appearing to be strengthening his works, a large body of his men were industriously at work preparing intrenchments on the North Castle Hills, and on the night of October 31, the whole American camp retired to those inaccessible heights.

"Imagine the dismay of Howe as he galloped up the street on the morning of November 1st, to the forsaken redoubts, and, from the summit, saw across the valley, his enemy secure in their rocky fastnesses. Nothing short of a long siege could dislodge them and Winter was approaching, cold and bleak.

"General Howe had thought to crush the rebel army with one decisive blow, and had he been alert he would have done it, and the cause

of independence would have been lost. But his chance had gone; he had waited too long; the enemy had eluded him; Washington had outgeneraled him; the tide was turned. General Howe at once changed his plans and betook himself with his army to the more comfortable life of Winter in New York.

"Here was a sequence of events which, though not specially remarkable in themselves as incidents of war, nevertheless marked the passage of a critical point in the progress of humanity. How many times in history actions seemingly trivial have diverted the current of events and determined the destiny of nations.

"Here was a well formed plan to crush the Rebellion, the mainstay of which was Washington and his army. The power, the wealth and the pride of England were arrayed against the weakness, the poverty and the discouragements of the Colonists. The plan was hopeful; its success seemingly undoubted. But 'the best laid schemes of mice and men—' etc. The victory on Chatterton Hill was bought dearly and that was the first check; a rainy day was the second; the Fabian strategy of Washington, in his successive retreats, was the third; the coming on of Winter a fourth; and the plan failed, the army was spared; the cause was saved."

The Sense of Patriotism Wavers

As will be observed now, the author of this fine paper deplores the fact that present generations seem singularly blind to the patriotic significance of grounds and houses that should forever be safeguarded as memorials.

"Who can say what would have been the current of events if Howe had pushed on with vigor on the 28th, and 29th, and put to rout, or captured, the entire American army? Probably the Colonies would still have remained British dependencies, like Canada, and the great experiment of republican institutions would never have been tried. The Declaration of Independence, read in the Village Street on the 11th, of the previous July, was not to be an empty blast of a few disaffected ambitious office seekers. It still held its own, and from this time forth daily gained new adherents.

"True, there were still to be long, weary, discouraging years before independence would be finally achieved, but the first step toward final success had been taken here at White Plains, on the very grounds where we live today.

"The Association is striving today to develop and improve this old historic street. It is a worthy object. But what have we or those who have gone before us done to commemorate these stirring and important events?

"What stories of these days are we telling to our children and the strangers who visit us? No granite shaft marks the battle on Chatterton

Hill; no tablet tells the story of the first reading of the Declaration of Independence; no monument honors the birthplace of the great State of New York now. The house where the great Washington lived—his headquarters where he and Clinton and Lee, and Heath, and Hamilton held their councils of war, is fast falling to ruin. The mound and mortar, on Upper Broadway, are mute memorials of some forgotten event, and a British cannon, excavated near Broadway a decade ago, lay ignominiously in a New York junk shop. (This cannon was recovered in 1926 and is now on a granite marker on the Bronx River Parkway. Likewise the mortar has found a proper setting.)

"The only monuments standing on that historic street are the telephone and electric light poles, uncouth memorials of a barbaric age of 'hustle' and 'get there', before yet the race of men had learned the art of expressing public utilities in terms of beauty.

"Are we as a people in this hustling, speeding age losing the sentiment of patriotism, and is the sense of gratitude to those who have suffered and endured all privations for our prosperity obliterated? On April 19th, 1775, at Lexington, a dozen patriots armed with shotguns stood on the village green, and when Major Pitcairn called to them: 'Rebels, lay down your arms and disperse', they stood immovable; were charged; one man fell dead and the rebels dispersed without a shot.

"The same day, at Concord, another sally of the British took place with like effect. These events in themselves were insignificant compared with the later events at The White Plains; and yet Lexington and Concord are flooded with monuments and memorials of that day to remind Americans of all the succeeding generations of their debt to their ancestors, and to keep forever alive within them the fire of patriotism.

"The Village street calls upon her citizens, old and young, men and women, boys and girls, to pay homage to the memories that cluster about its past, to do honor to the men who bivouaced here and to the generals whose infinite patience, hopefulness and skill saved our cause from utter and final destruction, by the erection of some suitable and enduring monument.

"On the night following the retirement of the British Army the old street witnessed an outrage which may account for the apathy which for many years thereafter prevailed with regard to the commemoration of these great events. Some irresponsible Massachusetts militia, perhaps, impressed with the idea, which doubtless to some extent was true, that the inhabitants of the village were not zealously devoted to war, and perhaps elated with the success of their general's strategy, set fire to and burned to the ground nearly all the houses and stores, the Presbyterian Church and the Court House; pillaged and plundered the inhabitants, and reduced the village to a state of desolation from which it took years to recover.

"The Court House was not rebuilt until 1784; The Presbyterian Church, which had recently been founded, was not built till 1785. During all that period of the war this was neutral ground, harried by skinner and cow-boy; weeds grew rank in the street and all its former prosperity seemed to have departed. In 1781, the French Army, under General Lauzan, encamped on the plains. Lauzan's headquarters being at the old Falconer, formerly Brundage house, on Broadway.

"The subsequent history of the old street is uneventful. In 1824 the village took a new lease of life, a new Presbyterian Church was built and in 1826 Grace Episcopal Church was erected on Lower Broadway, (now the abandoned Grace Episcopal Church grave-yard. Business was resumed, shops sprang up, taverns multiplied. When and why the 'White Plains Street' came to be called 'Broadway' there is no record. The registry of deeds does not reveal the name of Broadway prior to 1850.

"It may have been so named accidentally at first, and the propriety of the name at once recognized and adopted by the people.

"The late Minott M. Silliman, a year or so before his death, gave me a description of the village as he remembered it in 1845. Beginning around the corner of the Waller place, there had stood Foshay's Hotel, formerly Captain Hatfield's, which, however, at this time had been moved to the corner of Broadway and New York Post Road, and was demolished only a few years ago.

"Then came the residence of Sam E. Lyon, one of the most prominent and successful lawyers of his time. Next to that was the Episcopal Church and burying ground. On the corner of the New York Post Road was Morton's grocery store, then the old Foshay tavern, above mentioned; next to that the Brigg's tavern, afterward occupied by Dr. Prime; then the Eastern State Journal Building, which in later years was moved to the Presbyterian Church-yard and used for a chapel, and now stands in the Negro Hills, where it is used for a Sunday School, under control of the Presbyterian Church.

"Next, north of that was the residence of E. G. Sutherland, editor of the Eastern State Journal. Next to that was the County Clerk's office, then the law office of Sam E. Lyon, later removed to Railroad Avenue and occupied for many years by Close and Robertson. Then the Surrogate's office and the Court House; next Minott Mitchell's law office and his beautiful mansion.

"On the opposite side of the street were two taverns and the village pump. Where Westchester Avenue now runs was a pond and a causeway, the Rye road running close to the houses on the east side of the pond. Between the Mitchell house and Railroad Avenue were several houses, shops and law offices.

"Elisha Horton's grocery store and the post office, for a number of years occupied the present house of Frank Schirmer, which then butted

far out into the sidewalk. Elisha Horton's house was that now occupied by Mrs. Atwater. On the corner was Charles A. Purdy's law office and house where Mrs. Clark now lives (at present Westchester Lighting Company). Dr. Swinburne occupied the Kingsley house. The old Barker house stood on the site of the house of John W. Young. (This house now stands on Spring Street, near the gas house.)

"The Presbyterian Church was a wooden structure and was burned in 1854. The Daniel Dusenbury house was built in 1800, by Dr. Allan McDonald, and stood on the corner of Spring Street. Next was the house of W. S. Hall, used as a private boarding school for boys. Then came the house of Alex M. Tompkins, the Clapp house which was torn down about ten years ago, not then having been built.

"The Tompkins house was built by a Mr. Halstead, for a young ladies' school, and was so used for a short period. Then came the Albro and the Fowler houses. On the east side of the street, first, at the foot of the hill, was Richard Byrne, the undertaker; just north of him appropriately resided Dr. Palmer, and with a still more becoming sense of propriety, next to the doctor came the eminent lawyer, J. Warren Tompkins, at the house now owned by Mr. W. R. Brown.

"Then the old Falconer, or Brundage house, occupied by John Mead; then George Mead's bakery; then John White's tinshop; next, north, was the second Methodist Episcopal Church, now made into a double dwelling house; next to this, in the same house, now standing, was the White Plains Academy, of which Dr. Swinburne was the head master.

"Then came Flandreau's dry goods store. On the corner of Lake Street, were the ruins of a house which had been burned. On the opposite corner was John Horton's house, he who ran the grist mill at St. Mary's Lake. Then Munson I. Lockwood; then William Sniffin's house, afterwards moved to Railroad Avenue, nearly opposite Central Bank, and for years occupied by 'Jack' Hyatt.

"The Travis house stood under the big pine tree on the property of Good Counsel Farm, and about 1870 was moved across the street and for many years occupied by Joshiah Mitchell. Leonard Miller's house came next, and then the Methodist Episcopal parsonage, now occupied by W. A. Woodworth and just north of the house of Mrs. Ward.

"About 1840 the Harlem Railroad was built and Railroad Avenue was opened. In 1857 the present Court House was built and a new era began.

"The old street had changed its character completely. From being at one time the centre of all village life and of the political and legal activity of the County, it has become a street of quiet residence. Its ancient glory has departed; all that is left is the broad stretch of park lands and the latent memories of stirring times and great events. This Association,

CHAPTER XV

George Washington's Letter and Excerpts from Christopher Meng's Orderly Book

THOSE who seek a deeper significance in the word "Freedom" will find spiritual inspiration in a message penned by George Washington to his dear friend Governor Nelson, that earnest patriot who was willing to see his Yorktown home made a target for besieging enemy artillery, and who offered it in an hour of peril. Washington wrote:

"Camp, at White Plains, 20th August 1778.

"It is not a little pleasing nor less wonderful to contemplate, that after two years maneuvering and undergoing the strangest vicissitudes that perhaps ever attended any one contest since the creation, both armies are *brought back to the very point they set out from*, and that the offending party, at the beginning, is now reduced to the use of the spade and pickaxe for defense. The hand of Providence has been so conspicuous in all this, that he must be worse than an infidel who lacks faith, and more than wicked that has not gratitude enough to acknowledge his obligations. But it will be time enough for me to turn preacher when my present appointment ceases; and therefore I shall add no more on the doctrine of Providence.

GEORGE WASHINGTON"

Under date of Saturday, September 12th, 1778, we find a record of this communication from Washington to General Sullivan:

> "I intend to place the whole (army) in such a position in a day or two, that they may either march to the Eastward, or be within supporting distance of the posts upon the North River, as appearances may require."

There are comparatively few existent writings by George Washington relative to his operations here, but, fortunately,

others whose authority cannot be questioned, left records of such detailed character, that it is possible to follow the great General's movements with fair accuracy during the entire campaign.

Washington's Orderly Book, covering the period when he was in White Plains, is in the Library of Congress and is described in the Calendar of Washington's Manuscript, page 47.

The order of march to Fredericksburg, near Quaker Hill, Dutchess County, New York, was issued September 15th, 1778. "The whole Army will march tomorrow morning at seven o'clock."

Washington remained in White Plains until the 16th of September, 1778, when he moved the camp to Fredericksburg, then a precinct of Dutchess County, now a portion of Putnam County, New York. His headquarters were at Pawling, a village almost due east from Newburgh and near the Connecticut line. The General was at West Point on the 19th of September, but whether the visit was made before or after reaching Fredericksburg, cannot be determined.

This section of Westchester County was known as "Neutral Ground", but actually the battle-ground of the disaffected, prey of both friend and foe, with scenes of cruelty and bloodshed marking tragically the actions of the partisans.

Valiant sons exhibited examples of heroic personal bravery; others, attaching themselves to the British side, were known as "Cowboys", and engaged in plundering all persons between the lines of their cattle, lands and other property.

Some of the trouble-makers were nicknamed "Skinners", who, professing allegiance to America, enjoyed comparative

safety within the Patriot lines, but, as in the case of the "Cowboys", they were both cruel and treacherous.

No other region was so harassed and trampled down as this debatable ground, hostile forces marching and countermarching over it. It must be admitted, however, that the distress and suffering of our people was not all inflicted by the two dangerous elements mentioned. History relates that the soldiers of the regular army were also guilty of plundering local inhabitants and the neighborhood of the camp. When Colonel Aaron Burr assumed command of the forces here in the autumn of 1778, he established strict discipline within and without the camp. Shortly after his arrival, some soldiers made their tents more comfortable by installing beds and bedding taken from the home of Isaac Gedney, a Tory. When the circumstances were brought to the attention of Colonel Burr, he ordered them to return these articles to their rightful owner.

Excerpts from the Orderly Book of Christopher Mengs

We are privileged to give in full these interesting excerpts from the Orderly Book of Christopher Mengs. The originals are the property of Mrs. Rosetta Brewster Lent, of 23 Cottage Place, White Plains, N. Y., formerly of Brewster, N. Y.

Her great grandfather, Samuel Brewster was Captain of the same Company during the Revolutionary War, with Christopher Mengs. This book was found in the attic of the old Brewster homestead on Brewster Hill, Brewster, N. Y., while going over the effects of the deceased. Other relics included the sword of Captain Brewster during the war.

The contents of the Orderly Book are as follows: April 22nd to August 6th, 1778 with the first entry, H. Q. Valley Forge, April 22nd, 1778. First entry—H. Q. Wrights Mills, July 22nd, 1778; Last entry—H. Q. Wrights Mills, July 20th,

1778. First entry—White Plains, July 27th, 1778; Last entry—H. Q. White Plains, August 6th, 1778.

This is a verbatim copy:

"Maj. Genl. McDougle
Brig. Genl. Clinton
Col. Hill, Lt. Col. Miller, Major Summer, Brig. Maj. Hervrien.

"The gentlemen who have offered themselves as candidates of commissions on the company of Sapers and Miners, are requested to wait upon Genl. Du Portail, chief engineer, who will examine their respective pretensions and qualifications and make a report to Head Q's accordingly. A hogshead of rice will be delivered to each Brigade for the use of the sick.

"At a Genl Court Martial, July 17th, 1778, Col. Putnam, President, James Davidson, Q. M. to Col. James Livingston, Regt tryed for defrauding the soldiers of their provisions, embezelling public property and disposing of several articles belonging to the U States, found guilty and sentenced to be cashiered. The Com. in Chief approves the sentence and orders to take place immediately.

"At the same court, Henry Scott, a soldier in Col. Sherburns Regt. was tried for desertion, found guilty, sentenced to receive 50 lashes on his bare back and to be confined in some gaol, till he can be put on board. . . . Navy, there to remain during the war. The Commander in Chief, orders him to receive his lashes on the Grand Parade tomorrow morning at Guard mounting and then to return to his Regt., likewise Alexander Graham, alias Smith, a soldier in Col. Meigg's Regt., tried for desertion, unanimously found guilty and sentenced to be shot to death. John Craigg of the 1st Maryland Regt. at a Brigade Court Martial, July 10th, 1778, tried for deserting to the enemy, found guilty and unanimously sentenced to suffer death. His Excellency the Commander in Chief approves the last two sentences.

"H. Q. White Plains, Aug. 1st, 1778
Maj. Genl. Baron De Kalb
Brig. Genl. Nixon

F. O. Col. Parker, Lt. Col. Frazier, Maj. Hyat, for 3 days command Brig. Genl. Muhlenberg. All officers commanding Regts., having men who from their state of health, will not be fit for actual service in a short time, are desired to make a return of them, to the orderly office, that those proper for the purpose may be draughted to join the Invalid Corps, under Col. Nichola at Philadelphia. The several Regimental Paymasters are requested to make out a list of the prisoners, deserters and dead men

belonging to their respective Regts. immediately, together with the sums that are due each and file the same with auditors, who will give them directions in what manner their accts. are to be made out in order that the same may be adjusted and settled without delay. Wanted, for the auditors office in the Grand Army, two persons, that can write a good hand and are well acquainted with accts., none need apply but such as can be well recommended for their honesty, industry and sobriety, a handsome salary will be given.

"H. Q. White Plains, July 31st, 1778
Maj. Genl. Gates
Brg. Genl. Nixon

"F. C. Col. Jackson, Lt. Col. Warner, Maj. Wenslow, Brig. Maj'r. Bannister.

For detachment, Col. Meiggs, Col. Gibson, Lt. Col. Mead, Lt. Col. Read, Major Oliver and Major Talbert. The detachment to parade at 5 o'clock this afternoon, at a Gen'l Court Martial of the 2nd line.
July 22nd 78 Col. Gibson, President.

"John Jenkins, Zachariah Ward, Brig'l Burk, Mich Carman, Wm. M. Cochlin of the 6th Mary'l Regt. and Nicholas Fitzgerald of the 7th Mary'l Regt. were tryed for desertion and attempting to get to the enemy. All found guilty and unanimously sentenced to suffer death; also John Daly of the 7th Mary'l Regt. tryed for desertion and found guilty and sentenced to receive 100 lashes well laid on. At the same court, July 23rd, Solomon Lyons of the 2nd Virg. Regt. was tryed for desertion, found guilty and unanimously sentenced to suffer death. Likewise David M. Clemmens of the Delaware Regt. tryed for the same crime and acquitted. The Commander in Chief approves the foregoing sentences.

"The sentence against John Daly to be put into execution tomorrow morning at 6 o'clock, at the head of the Regt. to which he belongs. David Clemmens is to be released immediately from confinement.

"For 3 days detachment, to parade tomorrow at 5 o'clock in the afternoon, Lt. Col. Sims, Lt. Col. Hay, Maj'r. Merriwether, and Maj'r Clark, found a pair of silver buckles. The owner may find them by applying to Capt. Bower of the 9th Pennsy'la Regt., also a silver watch may be heard of by applying to Lt. McCoy of the 7th Pennsy'la Regt.

Item of entry July 23rd.

"Forty dollars reward will be given to any person who will deliver to Col. Davies, a small parchment cover con'tg two 40 doll. bills, ten or fifteen 30 doll, three of 1 dollar each with some small Bills and a Lottery ticket, together with some private papers. It was lost on the Road from the Marquesse's yesterday. Qrs. to Col. Greens on the left of the Brig.

Whoever can give information, so that the money may be got again, shall receive the above reward by Colonel Davies of the 14th Virga. Regt."

And this is set down:

"Tomorrow, the Anniversary of the Declaration of Independence will be celebrated by firing 12 pieces of cannon, in the afternoon on the grounds pointed out by the Q. M. Genl. The soldiers will adorn their hats with green boughs and to make the best appearance possible, the position will be given tomorrow. Double allowance of rum will be served out."

H. Q. White Plains Aug. 1st 78.

"The whole army to be under arms tomorrow morning at 5 o'clock precisely with their tents struck and rolled up and their packs flung, further orders will be given by the Adj. General."

The severity of punishment inflicted on the wilfull transgressor was necessary, for the morale of the Army, when every sinew of discipline and efficiency was strained to the utmost.

The army left White Plains September 16th, 1778.

Washington's knowledge of this territory prior to 1778, was made possible by personal inspection while the army lay in White Plains. Rufus Putnam reconnoitered the country, making sketches and plans for future use. His observations were reported directly to Washington and it was at this time that Washington recommended Erskine as a good geographer.

Sir William Howe resigned as leader of the British forces early in 1778 and returned to England, and the command was given to Sir Henry Clinton.

The "Grand Army"

General Horatio Gates had been ordered to Westchester County with his troops on May 24, 1778. The date of Gates' arrival is somewhat uncertain but it is believed to have been on June 2 or 3. After the battle of Monmouth, Washington joined Gates in Westchester County and here were then cen-

Whoever can give information, so that the money may [illegible] shall receive the above reward by Colonel Davies of the 14th Virginia Regt."

And this is set down:

"Tomorrow, [illegible] Anniversary of the Declaration of Independence will be celebrated by firing 12 piece of cannon, in the afternoon on the grounds pointed out by the Q. M. Gl. [illegible] The soldiers will adorn their hats with green boughs and to make the best appearance possible, the position will be given tomorrow. Double allowance of rum will be served out."

Q. White Plains Aug [illegible]

"The whole army to be under arms [illegible] morning at 8 o'clock precisely with their tents [illegible] and their packs [illegible] further orders will be given by [illegible] Gl. General."

The severity of punishment inflicted on the unfortunate transgressor was necessary [illegible] the maintenance of the [illegible] strict of discipline and [illegible] was [illegible] to the [illegible]

The army left White Plains [illegible] September 16th, 1778.

Washington's knowledge of this territory prior to 1776, was made possible by personal inspection while the army lay in White Plains. Rufus Putnam reconnoitered the country, making sketches and plans for future use. His observations were reported directly to Washington and it was at this time that Washington recognized [illegible] as a good [illegible] engineer.

Sir William Howe resigned as leader of the British forces early in 17[illegible] and returned to England and the command was given to Sir Henry Clinton.

The "Crowd Army"

General Horatio Gates had been ordered to Westchester County with his troops on May 14 1778. The date of Gates' arrival is somewhat uncertain but it is [illegible] on June 2 or 3. After the battle of [illegible]

tered all of the American forces of any considerable amount outside of those employed at Newport, Rhode Island. There are many references to these concentrated forces as the "Grand Army". According to Colonel David Humphreys in a letter dated Mount Vernon, Virginia, June 4, 1778:

> " . . . This was just after the battle of Monmouth, when the three armies which had last year acted separately joined at the White Plains. Our effective force, in one camp, was at no other time so respectable as at this juncture. The Army consisted of 60 regular regiments of foot, formed into 15 brigades, 4 battalions of artillery, 4 regiments of horse and several corps of State troops."

Contemporary references to the make-up of the Army:

". . . . July 7th King's Ferry, where the army crossed. Scott's and Woodford's brigades crossed July 17th. Next day Gen'l Scott's brigades proceeded on towards Croton's Bridge. Gen'l Woodford's marched by Peekskill to above the village, where they lay till Monday, July 20th, then followed after the army which had by this time got within 7 miles of White Plains . . . Friday, 24th, the army moved down to White Plains and joined Gen'l Gates' army."

—Diary of Joseph Clark.

Rivington's *Gazette*, New York, July 8, 1778—"We are informed that the Rebel Generals Gates and Parsons with McDougall and two other Brigadier Generals arrived at White Plains on 2d inst. They take up the ground on which in '76 Gen. Howe engaged Mr. Washington. Their force consists of the following Continental Regiments viz: Webb's, Putnam's, Enos's, Meig's, Sheldon's, Nixon's, Sherburne's, Graham's, Willis', with some cavalry, etc."

Extract of a letter from an officer, date White Plains, July 28, 1778: "The enemy dispirited—3 days ago 7 deserters came in with their arms, etc., and since that time 4 light horse

and several infantry. While I am writing 2 light horse compleat and 12 infantry came in from the enemy. The situation where we are encamped is beautiful and contributes much to the men's health. . . . Gen. Gates commands the right wing of the army. . . . Baron DeKalb at present the left. We have 17 Brigadiers with the brigades on the ground without including the cavalry or artillery. Lord Stirling and a number more general officers are about 7 miles in our rear on trial of Gen. Lee. Hartford, August 4. 150 British deserters have come in to Washington's camp since it has been at White Plains."

1778, Holt's *New York Journal.* Po'keepsie, July 27. "Gen'l Washington and the army under his command are ready for a march and expected to proceed down from the White Plains last Friday morning (July 24) and it was reported would attempt the enemy's lines at New York on Saturday. It is said that our lines extend from the North to the East River, that our army have taken up all the cattle, stock and provisions that were without the enemy's lines, etc., etc."

Po'keepsie, August 3. "By our last accounts the armies under the command of his Excellency General Washington and General Gates remained still encamped in the neighbourhood of the White Plains."

Po'keepsie, August 10. "The army under the command of his Excellency General Washington well supplied with everything, in excellent order and high spirits, still continues encamped at White Plains."

According to definite locations in contemporary letters, the forces were encamped from King Street on the east to the Albany Post Road on the west. It is probably conservative to state that the lines extended from Long Island Sound on the east to the Hudson River on the west. One of the purposes of this concentration is definitely stated in a letter from Robert

and several Indians. While I am writing 3 regts have encamplat and 12 infantry came in from the enemy. The situation where we are encamped is beautiful and contributes much to the men's health. . . Gen. Gates commands the right wing of the army. . . Baron Ickalb at present the le . We have 17 Brigadiers with the brigades on the ground without including the cavalry or artillery. Lord Stirling and a number more general officers are about 7 miles in our rear on trial of Gen. Lee. Hartford, August 1 . . . 50 British deserters have come in to Washington's camp since it has been at White Plains."

1778, Hale's New York Journal. Po'keepsie, July 22. "Gen'l Washington and the army under his command are ready for a march and expected to proceed down from the White Plains last Friday morning (July 24) and it . . . reported would attempt the enemy's lines at Yen Yock on Saturday. It is said that our lines extend from the North to the East River, that our army have taken up all the cattle, stock and provisions that were within the enemy's lines, etc., etc."

Po'keep-ie, August . . . "By our last accounts the armies under the command of his Excellency General Washington and General Gates remained still encamped in the neighborhood of the White Plains."

Po'keep-ie, August 10. "The army under the command of his Excellency General Washington well supplied with everything, in excellent order and high spirits, still continues encamped at White Plains."

According to definite locations in contemporary letters, the forces were encamped from King Street on the east to the Albany Post Road on the west. It is probably conservative to [illegible] lines extended from Long Island Sound on the [illegible] the Hudson River on the west. One of the [illegible] of his concentration [illegible] definitely [illegible] a letter from [illegible]

Troup to John Jay, later Chief Justice, dated Peekskill, June 29, 1779:

" . . . We shall move at two o'clock in the morning for the White Plains. Our object is to make a show of taking New York to prevent their throwing a force in New Jersey to operate in favor of Sir Henry Clinton. We have a pretty respectable army. . . ."

A Spectacular War-Time Trial

The transfer of the American Headquarters from New Jersey to White Plains, brought with it the closing scenes of one of the most important trials by court-martial of the War. General Charles Lee, who had been captured by the British, exchanged, and returned to the American service, again intrigued against Washington, as he had done in Westchester County, in the past.

At Monmouth, where he was second in command, he disobeyed the superior officer's explicit orders and by a shameful and unnecessary retreat, endangered the success of the latter's plans, and jeopardized the entire American Army. His actions were so extraordinary that Washington administered a sharp rebuke on the field. Lee's conduct on this occasion remained incomprehensible until 1858, when the original of "Mr. Lee's plan—29th, March, 1777", for operations against the American army was discovered. He had prepared it for General Howe during his sojourn as a prisoner with the British.

This justified the worst possible interpretations of his actions. After the battle, Lee aggravated Washington by writing impertinent letters in one of which he stated that he preferred a prompt court martial to a long-drawn-out inquiry into his conduct. This request was at once granted and Washington issued the following order:

"Headquarters, Spotswood, N. J., July 1, 1778.—A general court martial whereof Lord Stirling is appointed President, will sit in Brunswick (the hour and place to be appointed by the President) for the trial of Major General Lee. Brigadier Generals Smallwood, Poor, Woodford and Huntingdon, and Colonels Grayson, Johnson, Wigglesworth, Febiger, Swift, Angel, Clark and Williams are to attend as members."

The first session was held at Brunswick, N. J., at which these charges were presented:

"First:—For disobedience of orders in not attacking the enemy on the 28th of June, agreeable to repeated instructions. Secondly:—For misbehavior before the enemy on the same day, by making an unnecessary, disorderly and shameful retreat. Thirdly:—For disrespect to the commander-in-chief, in two letters dated the 1st of July and the 28th of June."

But one other meeting of the Court was held in New Jersey—at Paramus on July 11th. The trial was then adjourned to "The house of Mr. Kennedy, in Peekskill," where two sessions were held on July 18th and 19th.

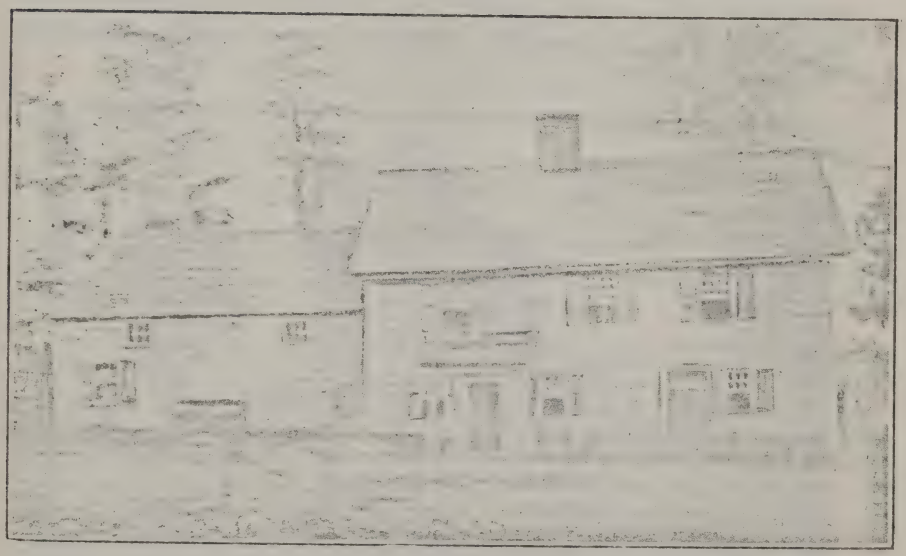
From here the court moved to North Castle where it sat on the 21st to the 29th of July, August 3rd and 9th and 12th. On the final day it made this finding:

"August 12th.—The court met according to adjournment. The court having considered the first charge against Major General Lee, the evidence and his defense, are of the opinion that he is guilty of disobedience of orders, in not attacking the enemy on the 28th of June, agreeable to repeated instructions, being a breach on the latter part of Article 5th, section 2nd, of the Articles of War."

"The Court, having considered the second charge against Major General Lee, the evidence and his defense, are of the opinion he is guilty of misbeheavior before the enemy on the 28th of June, by making an unnecessary and in some few instances, a disorderly retreat, being a breach of the 13th Article of the 13th section of the Articles of War. The Court, having considered the third charge against Major General Lee, are of the opinion that he is guilty of disrespect to the Commander-in-Chief, in two letters dated the 1st of July and the 28th of June, being a breach of the 2d Article, section 2nd of Articles of War.

"The Court do sentence Major General Lee to be suspended from any command in the Armies of the United States of North America for the term of twelve months.

STIRLING, U. A., and President."



THE BRITISH HOSPITAL
Southeast corner of New York Avenue and Post Road

CHAPTER XVI

Sites That Made History

OUT OF the phantom memories of the long ago it is permitted us to bring back to life again certain houses of historic importance, within the walls of which stirring events were enacted in White Plains. The old John Falconer House is one of these. It stood on the east side of

The Falconer house, as it appeared in 1876. Captain John Falconer was the most prominent Continental officer of White Plains.

He held the office of Supervisor of White Plains for twenty years. His remains were interred in the old Rural Cemetery on Broadway.

Thus is the pitiful and tragic story told in the halting words of men long gone down to immortal dust.

Broadway, directly back of the Soldiers Monument (now the extension of Main Street) and was the headquarters of British officers in 1776. Some idea of the age of the structure may be gained from the fact that when it was torn down in 1885, workmen discovered the date, "1697" on one of the rafters.

General Morris made the Falconer House his headquarters in the year 1778, and then came the Duc de Lauzun who selected it as his personal dwelling and official station during his stay in White Plains in 1781. The French army, under Rochambeau, was located in the nearby hills of the town of Greenburgh.

Rochambeau and Lauzun's Legion rode forward to meet Washington on his third trip here. As they neared the town, it became a triumphal march and an impressive military pageant for those times. The return journey was under escort, also, with Lauzun's Legion adding to the pomp of the occasion. This brave and gallant officer later met his death on the guillotine during the French Revolution.

The wanton destruction by fire of the Court House, the two famous old taverns, the church, and a number of stores and homes by order of Major John W. Austin, of a Massachusetts Regiment, on November 5th, 1776, after being left undisturbed and unharmed by the enemy, was to be deplored. Inexplicable is the fact that although the Falconer home was situated in almost the center of the village, it escaped the fate of the other buildings. Major Austin's act of palpable vandalism was a direct violation of General Washington's orders, issued three days before. Austin was arrested, charged with "wanton, cruel, barbarous" treatment of helpless women and children, unworthy the character of an officer, and inhuman to a degree. He was found guilty as charged and was immediately dismissed from the service.

Washington, on November 2nd, had expressly forbidden any person or soldier belonging to the army, to set fire to any house or barn, on any pretext, without a special order from some General.

The sentence of Major Austin: "That he be discharged from service", was altogether inadequate as punishment for a crime that deserved death penalty. If he had been tried under civil law procedure then prevailing, his life would certainly have been forfeited.

The Burning of the Village

The burning of the village of White Plains is an episode in the War of the Revolution that has very generally been condemned, justified neither by law nor by necessity. There were, however, among the officers of the American Army at the time, those who approved a policy of destruction in order to impress on all enemies of the country that no sacrifice was too great . . . no measures too severe, to attain success for the cause.

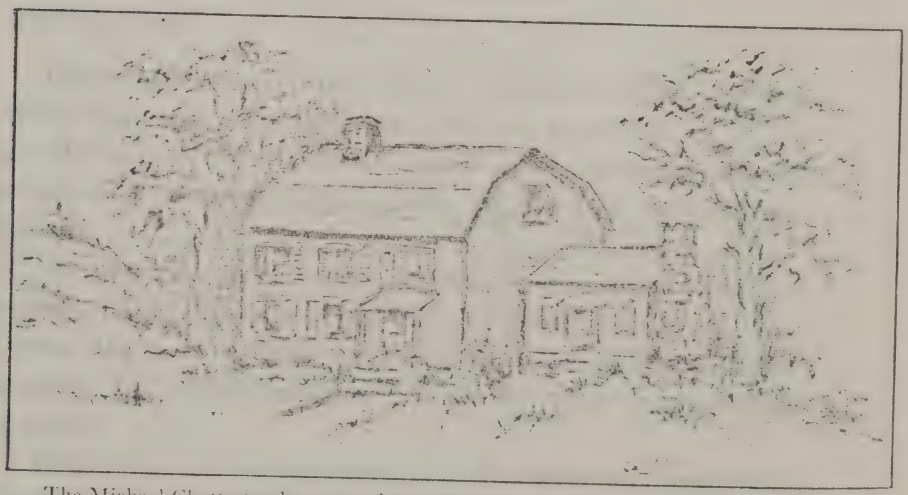
In a letter to the Continental Congress, written by direction of the Committee of Safety of the New York Provincial Convention, on November 20th, 1776, the following significant paragraphs appear:

" . . . unhappy am I to add, that amidst all our suffering, the Army employed for the protection of America have not refrained from embittering even the calamities of War. At a time when the utmost resources of the State were laid open to their wants, and the members of the Convention personally submitted to the labor and fatigue which were necessary to a sudden emergency, and after frequent losses of provisions and barracks, to supply the two numerous armies, augmented by the Militia, with every artickle which they required, the court house and the remains of the village of White Plains, which had been spared on the retreat of our forces was, after the enemy in their return had retired, wantonly destroyed, without the orders, and to the infinite regret of our worthy General."

Major Austin was at once brought to trial before a Court Martial which sentenced him to be "reprimanded", but General

Lee ordered a new trial on November 12th, Colonel Hitchcock presiding. The principal witness at this trial was Mrs. Adams, whose home, which stood only a short distance north of the Falconer House (near Lake Street) was burned to the ground. Mrs. Adams had asked Austin why he was going to destroy her home. His reply was: "Because you are all damned Tories, and there was a damned Tory taken out of your house tonight". The appeal of the mother and her crying children had no effect on this inhuman creature, honored with the title of "Major" in the American Army.

The crime merited a penalty far more severe than a mere reprimand or a simple discharge from the army, as was the case in the second trial, for it was palpable arson; a glaring violation of all laws as they then existed.



The Michael Chatterton house northwest corner of Battle Avenue and Central Avenue after whom Chatterton Hill was named.

The Michael Chatterton House

Chatterton Hill was named after Michael Chatterton, a tenant of Frederick Philipse. The house stood on the plot of

ground now known as the northwest corner of Central and Battle Avenues. This property was sold May 18th, 1786 by the Commissioners of Forfeiture.

With the approach of the invading army and the impending battle, most of the inhabitants removed in haste. Some, however, ventured to remain, and at the commencement of the cannonade, Michael Chatterton, who lived at the foot of the hill, conducted his whole family to the cellar of the building, where they remained in safety until the action was terminated.

Within 500 feet of this old house stood the then-called "Chatterton Bridge", across the Bronx River, which was used by the American troops during their strategic retreat to Dusenbury Hill. (The present Main Street bridge occupies the identical spot.)

"Artillery Park"

The location of "Artillery Park", as it was called, and the Parade Grounds, repeatedly referred to, especially in 1778, has always offered a difficult question to historians, whose painstaking research work fails to disclose satisfactory answers.

My personal conjectures are that, in all probability, the grounds on top of Dusenbury Hill, crossing Broadway, constituted the only suitable area available for artillery movements or for parade purposes, or the adequate maneuvering of troops.

Broadway, in various deeds, is set down as "undivided land", also as the "Commons" and "Public Race Lane".

The "Bleu Oak Tree", referred to in the mortgage between John Travis of White Plains and Gilbert Drake of Phillipsburgh (Page 14, Lib. B. July 4th, 1776) stood at the southwest corner of Broadway and Cemetery Lane. This property

[illegible] and now known as the northwest corner of Central and Battle Avenues. This property [illegible] old May 18th, 1786, by the Commissioners of Forfeiture.

With the approach of the invading [illegible] my ancestors during battle, most of the inhabitants removed to Boston. Some, however, ventured to [illegible] commanding front of the cannonade Michael [illegible] on the top of the hill, conducted by [illegible] where they remained [illegible] prisoners [illegible]

Within 500 [illegible] "Chatterton B[illegible] by the American [illegible] Bury Hill. The [illegible] identical spot [illegible]

"Artillery Park"

The location [illegible] was called, and the Parade Ground [illegible] has always been [illegible] painstaking research [illegible] answers.

My personal conviction [illegible] in all probability, the grounds on top of Dorsenbury Hill [illegible] crossing Broadway constituted the only suitable [illegible] available for artillery movements or for parade purposes [illegible] adequate maneuvering of troops.

Broadway, in various deeds, is set down as "undivided land", also as the "Commons" and "Public Road Lane".

The "Blen Oak Tree", referred to in the mortgage [illegible] John Travis of White Plains and Gilbert Drake of Phillipsburgh (Page 14, [illegible] B, July 4th, 1767) stood at the southwest corner of Broadway and Cemetery Lane. This property [illegible]

contained some sixty acres of land. The following letter of April 13th, 1893, locates the same property, sixty-nine years later, the presumption being that the identical plot was used for the same purpose in 1778:

CELEBRATION OF THE BATTLE OF WHITE PLAINS
A. D. 1847

"Your correspondent was one of the participants in that Battle, who then resided in the town of Mount Pleasant and was a Private in Company (?), New York State Light Horse Artillery, under the command of Capt. John Webber, who was a West Point graduate.

"I cannot give the number of the Regiment (having lost my certificate of enlistment and discharge) after doing Seven Years service in said Company and Regiment.

"On the 25th day of October 1847 the Regiment was ordered into service at White Plains.

"The Regiment consisted of Four Companies of 100 men each, one from the town of Yorktown, one from Mount Pleasant, one from Eastchester and one from Nyack, Rockland County.

"The Regiment assembled at White Plains on the morning of the 28th of October and encamped on Dusenbury's Hill on the farm of Daniel Dusenbury.

"Our tents were pitched in military order, Guard mounted and Pickets thrown out. We had drills morning and evening. On the morning of the 28th, we were ordered to march.

"We left Camp and proceeded down the Hill to Spring Street to Railroad Avenue and down said Avenue, crossing the Bronx River West of the Railroad Depot, and up Chatterton Hill Road to top of Chatterton Hill on the farm now owned by Mrs. Lester, to the brow of the Hill facing along the valley of Bronx River, where we formed our line of battle.

"The British troops moved up the valley of the Bronx, crossing the same below the old Mill called Braes Mill, and attacked the American Army, coming slowly but steadily up the side of the same, through a woods or thicket.

"Our field pieces were brought to bear on the enemy as they advanced up the hill, until they were within musket range when the Infantry took a hand in the battle.

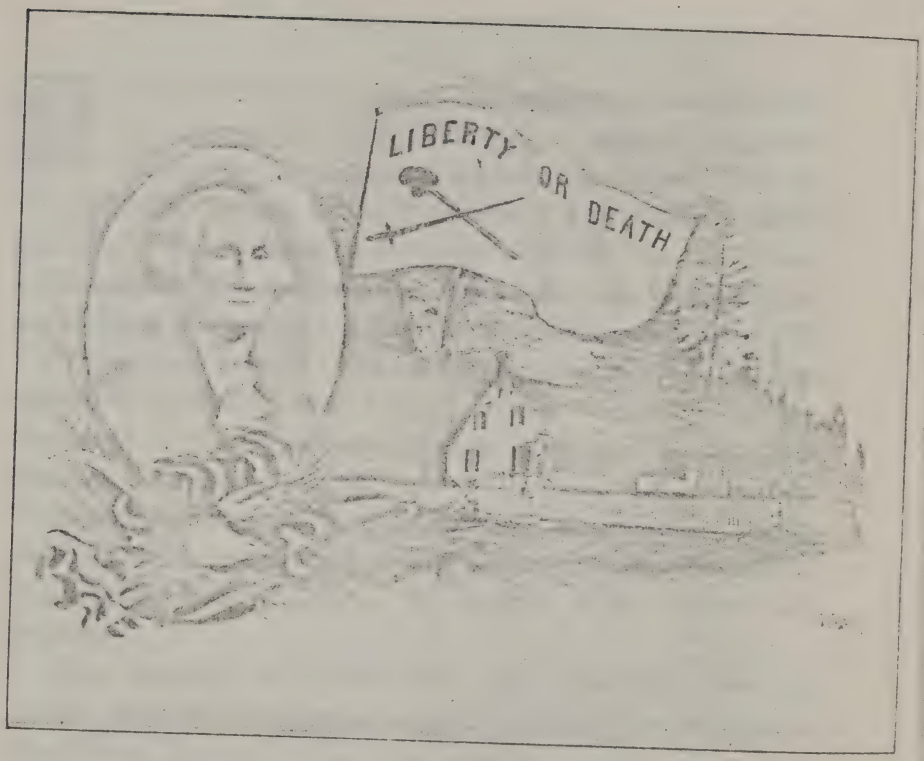
"The American forces were driven from their position, retreating slowly and in good order, while the Artillery retreated down Chatterton Hill, crossing the Bronx again at the same place as before, up Railroad Avenue to Spring Street, over Spring Street and up the hill again to our place of encampment, where we again formed our line of battle.

"I am unable to say just what Companies of Infantry took part in the action on the side of the British, but think they were principally from the City of New York.

"On the American side I distinctly remember 'The old White Plains Guard', under the command of Capt. Schuyler C. Tompkins, and an Indian Company from Stamford, Conn. I presume the whole Militia force of Westchester County took part in the sham battle.

"However we were victorious, fighting and retreating steadily and in good order up and along Broadway and into the Town of North Castle, when darkness put an end to the conflict.

White Plains, April 13th, 1893. JAS. H. ROMER."



The Ann Miller House, Washington's Headquarters in 1776 and Flag known as the White Plains Battle Flag.

CHAPTER XVII

Washington's Headquarters

OF ALL the historic places honored and associated with the memory of George Washington, none is of greater interest to the people of Westchester County, than the Elijah Miller House, better known as "Washington's Headquarters". It is located in the town of North Castle, a short walk north of the most northerly boundary of White Plains, on Virginia Avenue at the base and west side of Miller Hill.

Three and a half acres on the summit of this hill was presented to Westchester County by the widow of the late President of the Westchester County Historical Society, Mr. Charles J. Dunlap and the late William A. Moore, jointly. This area contains all that the remains of the Revolutionary defenses that were erected at this point, now the property of Westchester County and in the custody of the Park Commission.

The location of Washington's Headquarters, from his arrival here on the afternoon of the 23rd, to the morning of the 28th of October, 1776, is not definitely known. It is, however, known that he did establish his headquarters in the Miller house on the 28th. Prior to this date, General Charles Lee occupied this house as his temporary residence, described in McDonald's Papers in this manner:

> " . . . stood hard by the road and was owned and occupied by the widow, Annetjie Miller."

During the Second Southern New York and Connecticut Antique Exposition, at the County Center, White Plains, a

booklet was on sale, which prompted me to give my personal version of a controversy that has long existed. In this booklet appeared the following:

> "Historic Westchester," 1683-1933. Glimpses of County History, by Elisabeth Cushman, staff writer of the Westchester County Publishers, and 'Historic Sites' by Herbert Nichols. Purdy-Ferris House, Old Dobbs Ferry Road, now Spring Street, White Plains, now a private residence, but used by George Washington as his headquarters in October 1776, and again for nearly two months in the summer of 1778. It is supposed that Lafayette had quarters here in 1778 prior to General Washington's arrival." (Page 117.)

On this same page the statement occurs:

> "Miller House. Located on Virginia Road, between the railroad and Miller Hill. Occupied by Elijah Miller before the Revolution and by his wife, Anne, after his death from battle wounds. General Lee and Gates had headquarters here and General Washington visited here."

Opposite this page there appeared a picture of the Miller House, with the description:

> "The home of Elijah Miller in pre-Revolutionary days, this house served as headquarters for General Lee and Gates during the Revolution and was often visited by General Washington: it is now a national shrine."

The authenticity of the Purdy House being occupied by Washington in 1776 as his Headquarters, is not borne out by documentary evidence so far produced, and does not warrant the claims made.

My claims are based on various reasonable points; on a lifetime study of the topography of the battle areas; on exhaustive research into only authenticated documents, and on the testimony of direct descendants of the Miller family as well as the Field and Fowler families, brought out during personal interviews. It would appear impossible to question or to discredit what has resulted from these interviews and investigations.

Washington was in White Plains on three occasions; in 1776, 1778 and in 1781. In 1776 he was on the defensive. This surrounding territory was entirely new to him on his arrival October 21st, 1776. He had no maps to guide him. There were no such generous monetary aids as had been made available to the enemy, and he had no access to the experienced and wise counsel of a Rochambeau, a LaFayette or a Von Steuben, as was later made possible. Treachery stalked always at his side and was another type of insidious enemy — treachery in the ranks. The records show that this treachery, the ever-changing conditions of the conflict, and the great burden of responsibility placed upon his shoulders, must have aggravated Washington, and brought him to a state bordering on despair.

The number of troops under his command at this time, was approximately 25,000. As previously shown, by data on the subject, at least one-half of these were sick or unfit for duty. The remaining were raw recruits, made up from daily enlistments of farm boys, undisciplined, for the most part ununiformed and a goodly number who had probably never heard the boom of a cannon nor sighted a wartime flintlock, now were asked to lay aside their farm duties and their plows in behalf of a desperate cause, against great odds.

Many stood firm and remained loyal at the side of their Commander-in-Chief, and some of these very heroes now rest in the soil on which new generations have erected beautiful homes, churches, and schools, their mute dust resting in neglected graves of Broadway's ancient burial grounds. Weatherworn and broken, the almost illegible brown, sandstone slabs are reminders of the last, immortal stroke for American independence.

It is to be hoped that on some future day, not too far distant, their shabby graves and the old church yards hallowed by them, will be made a lasting memorial; restored, beautified and accorded the reverence and respect they deserve. And that tablets will be raised setting forth the deeds that were done, that present and future generations may know of their valor and loyal sacrifice.

No single event during the entire Revolutionary War has made a more unforgettably poignant impression than the sufferings, privations, discouragements and bitter hardships encountered by George Washington and his men while in White Plains during the campaign of 1776.

Conditions in 1778

In 1778 conditions were sharply reversed from those chronicled above. The Commander-in-Chief was no longer on the defensive. He had under his command, located here and on the nearby hills of the Town of Greenburgh, North Castle and the Town of Harrison, a greater body of men than at any one time or place. This army consisted of some 35,000 men, in anticipation of preventing Clinton, who had taken Howe's place, from coming up the State.

In 1781 he was the honored guest of the French Legions, under command of Rochambeau and General Lauzun, whose headquarters were located in the Captain John Falconer House, which stood on the east side of Broadway, directly back of the present location of the Soldier's Monument. Historians responsible for the controversy forming the text of this chapter base their opinions and conclusions on the facts now set down in chronological order.

In 1778 Washington had on his staff an engineer named Robert Erskine, who had been authorized to make a map of

this and neighboring territory. On this map is located the Jacob Purdy House, on the Dobbs Ferry Road (now Spring Street). Directly over the house on this map letters "H.Q.S.", the military interpretation of which is that of Headquarters of the Commander-in-Chief and his Staff.

This map is offered by historians as proof of their contention that Washington occupied, and made the Purdy House his Headquarters, and not the Miller House, in 1776.

The Question: What weight would this map have in our courts of law if offered in evidence, as proof, that Washington occupied the Purdy House instead of the Miller House, in 1776? When the map was not in existence in *1776*, and was not authorized to be made until *1777*, and did not become effective until *1778 — which date it bears*, and consequently can have no direct bearing on 1776

The cross road, which the map designates as showing the Purdy House located there, was named after a man named Dobbs living on the other side of the Hudson River, (who ferried passengers across the river to the village of Dobbs Ferry), across the County to Hartz Corners, to what is now Central Avenue, thence over Chatterton Hill (now Battle Avenue) to the former railroad tracks on Main Street, and finally, diagonally, to Spring Street near the gas works, through Spring Street, to what is at present Rockledge Avenue, to Broadway.

Now permit us to examine the question under dispute from another interesting and significant angle: *Would it be reasonable to suppose that Washington, with the wisdom he displayed during his entire campaign, would deliberately select a house for his Headquarters that stood immediately in FRONT of his first line of defense, Purdy Hill, (now Dusenbury Hill?) Would he be likely to select a dwelling that was obviously*

dangerous for himself and his staff, and therefore perilous to his Army and the cause — in the very terrain of the enemy?

A Strategic Location

The location and seclusion of the Miller home was ideal. It was out of sight of the enemy and protected by the great swamp to the south, that existed at the time (since reclaimed) and was in the rear of his first and final line of defense and at the base of Miller Hill, from which the last shot of the White Plains campaign was fired. This secluded spot was conveniently accessible and met the immediate requirements of the Commander-in-Chief.

In her will, Ann Miller makes a definite mention of a table and chair used by Washington, and there is something impressively irrefutable in the old document.

A letter written to "The Daily Argus" by Mrs. Henrietta Oakley, 37 Robertson Avenue, White Plains, dated October 10th, 1916, states that:

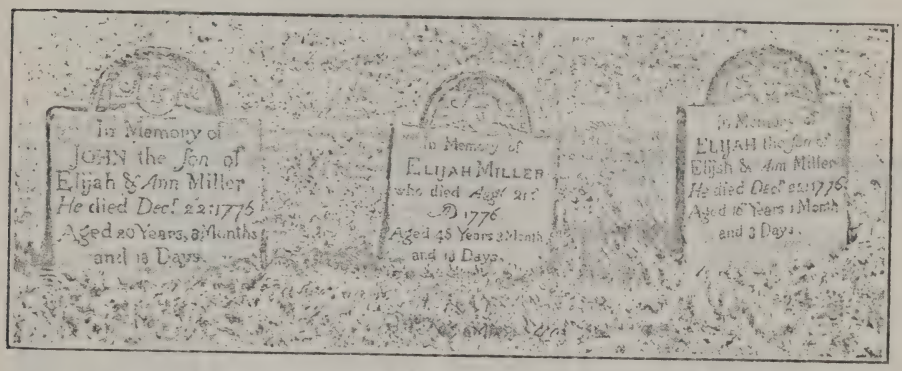
"The Miller family came from Germany, the first Miller arriving in this country in 1680. The house, later known as Washington's Headquarters, was built in 1680, first consisting of two rooms, and was not enlarged until after the Revolution. The two main rooms are today, the same as in 1776.

"Anne Miller died in June 13th, 1819, aged 92 years. She willed the chair and table to her son, James Miller, my grandfather, James Miller left the chair and table to John Miller, my uncle. He willed them to his niece, Henrietta Miller in 1862. I still have these, as well as the record book of visitors, which book contains 3,560 names. This will by which these articles came to me is on record in the Surrogate's office of this County. I am now eighty-three years of age and was born in the house named and lived there for thirty years.

(Signed) Mrs. Henrietta Oakley."

Adjutant Elijah Miller was born on May 8th, 1728. He married Ann Fisher, the daughter of a neighbor, and settled in the homestead at the foot of the hill, where the earthworks of

1776 can still be seen. On October 27th, 1775, he was appointed Adjutant of a Westchester County Regiment under Colonel Samuel Drake. He was wounded at Hurlgate, and died August 21st, 1776. Two sons also served in the Revolution, John and Elijah, Jr., who both died on December 22nd, 1776, of disease contracted in camp and were buried in the Presbyterian Churchyard.



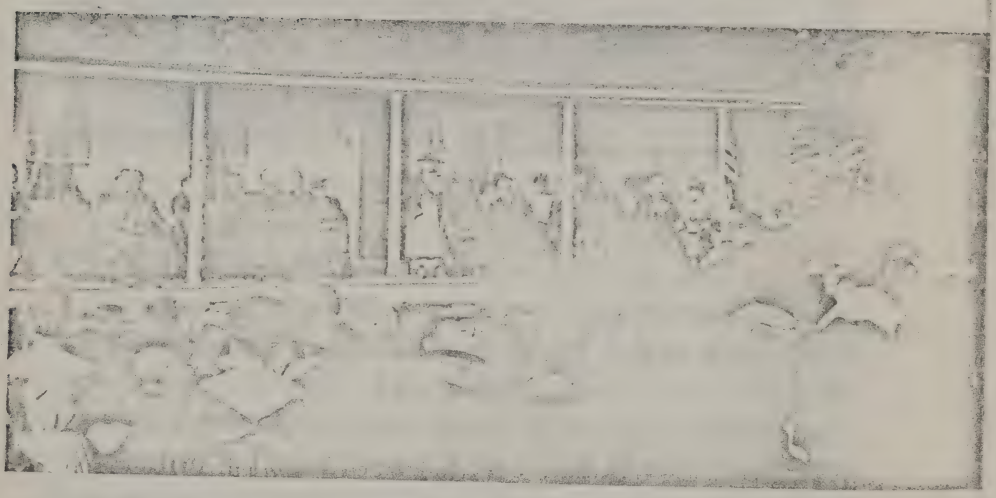
MILLER TOMBSTONES IN THE OLD COLONIAL PRESBYTERIAN CHURCHYARD

The widow, Ann Miller, lived in the old homestead until she died, at the advanced age of ninety-two, a zealous, religious character, beloved by all. In addition to entertaining General Washington in her home, she nursed the sick and wounded soldiers, and her house was thrown open to the organizers of the Methodist faith in White Plains, before the first Methodist church was built on the southeast corner of the Rural Cemetery, on Broadway.

Through the tireless efforts of the local chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution, and also the zealous work of the former Regent, Mrs. Jeremiah T. Lockwood, the famous old house was purchased by the Board of Supervisors,

for the County of Westchester, this official act being carried into effect in 1917. The house was restored under a competent and well known architect and the work of restoration was continued with the help of able and willing friends. On the 141st anniversary of the Battle of White Plains the opening exercises were held. A bronze tablet was placed beside the entrance bearing the inscription:

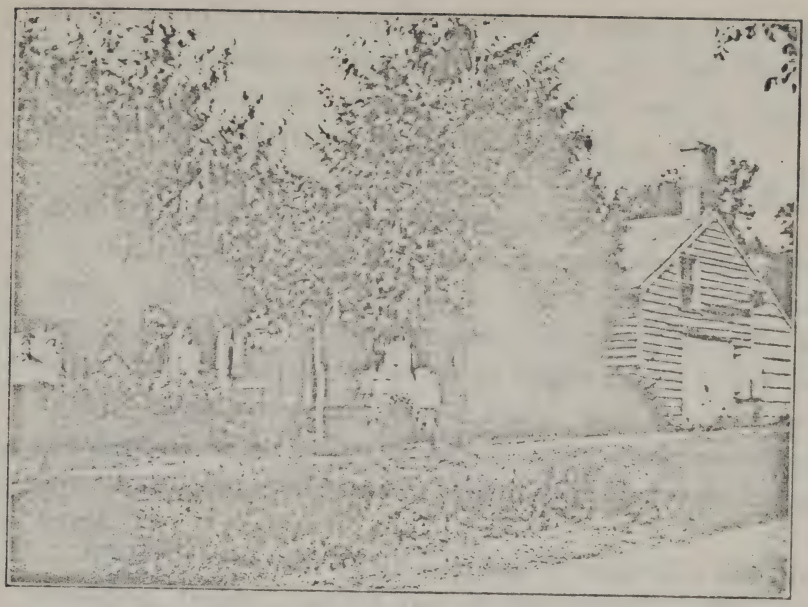
"WASHINGTON'S HEADQUARTERS.
"The Property of the County of Westchester.
Dedicated October 27th, 1917."



Mrs. Jeremiah T. Lockwood, Regent, speaking at the opening exercises on the 141st Anniversary of the Battle of White Plains.

Later on, another tablet of bronze, similar to the first was placed on the other side of the entrance, stating that:

"General George Washington occupied this house as headquarters from October 23rd, to November 10th, 1776. This tablet is dedicated to his memory — May 11th, 1918, by White Plains Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution."



THE JACOB PURDY HOUSE

The Jacob Purdy House

The Jacob Purdy House was the most pretentious dwelling in "The White Plains", located on the Dobbs Ferry Road (now Spring Street). This farm consisted of 132 acres, bounded on the West by the Bronx River, on the South, midway between Railroad Avenue, (now Main Street) and Martine Avenue, taking in both sides of Main Street to about Wall Street, thence in a straight line running Northeast to Broadway, just North of the Presbyterian burial ground; thence along the West side of Broadway to and adjoining the residence of the late Justice Jackson O. Dykman, and West to the Bronx River.

Lafayette left White Plains on July 22nd. Washington arrived in White Plains on July 20th, 1778. The Purdy House,

being centrally located, with conditions reversed at this time, it is fair to assume and certainly based on logic, that this dwelling appealed to the Commander-in-Chief and his Staff, as strategic Headquarters during the summer of 1778.

The Erskine map was authorized by Washington in 1777, definitely locates the Purdy House as such, in 1778.

It is naturally difficult for the present generation, since so many changes having taken place over the years, to visualize conditions as they existed a century and a half ago. No more historically important site exists in White Plains or the entire County, than this venerable old house, once honored by the presence of "The Father of His Country", and the notables who shared his wise plans to bring about American independence.

This heritage, left in our keeping, is today in a deplorable condition, forlorn, unkept and all but forgotten. When it is remembered that Washington, Hamilton, Gates, Parsons, Lord Stirling, Glover, Varnum and many others whose names are a part of Revolutionary War history, no doubt crossed its threshold on numerous important occasions, and that Lafayette, De Kalb, Von Steuben, Kosciuszko and equally illustrious foreign officers, also foregathered here, its place in any authentic History of White Plains must be definitely appreciated.

In Scharf's "History of Westchester County" Josiah S. Mitchell states that the Jacob Purdy House stood between Mott and Water Streets and was built by Samuel Horton, a son of Joseph Horton and grandson of Barnabas Horton, the first of that name in the country, who settled in Southold, Long Island, about 1640.

On the same page (Vol. 1 p. 722) Mr. Mitchell calls attention to Humphrey Underhill's house which stood on the

west side of the Mamaroneck River, some distance north of North Street, as being one of the first houses built in White Plains, probably before 1694, as in October of that year, Mrs. Ann Richbell procured a warrant from the Governor to survey the easternmost bounds of her lands. The surveyor, Augustine Graham, proceeded along the west bank of Mamaroneck River until he came to the "improved land claimed by Humphrey Underhill, where the said Underhill, with three others, with guns, stones and staves, did obstruct the execution of his Excellency's warrant."

Mr. Underhill was a man of high standing in the community and Dr. Baird supposes he was a son of the famous Captain John Underhill. Underhill Avenue was no doubt named for him.

Baron Von Steuben

Baron Frederick William Von Steuben arrived at Portsmouth, N. H., on December 1st, 1777. He had no mercenary motives in coming to America, shown conclusively by the contents of a letter written by him to Congress, as follows:

"The honor of serving a nation engaged in defending its rights and liberties was the only motive that brought me to this continent. I ask neither riches nor titles. I came here from the remotest end of Germany at my own expense and have given up honorable and lucrative rank. I have made no condition with your deputies in France, nor shall I make any with you.

"My own ambition is to serve you as a volunteer; to deserve the confidence of your General-in-Chief, and to follow him in all his asperations, as I have done during the seven campaigns with the King of Prussia . . . I should willingly purchase at the expense of my blood, the honor of having my name enrolled among those of the defenders of your Liberty."

By George Washington's orders, Von Steuben was made Major General and Inspector General of the Army. Professional soldiers from Europe sought commissions in the American Army . . . many returned home disappointed.

Washington, however, selected from the host of foreign applicants, a few officers who were destined to serve him well and to uphold the American cause. Some of those who won distinction became immortal, but the foreigner whose service counted most was a Prussian officer trained by Frederick the Great — Von Steuben.

For he brought discipline and efficiency to the American Army. In March, 1778, Von Steuben began drilling recruits at Valley Forge. The wisdom of his choice as Inspector General and as instructor in Military Procedure was fortified by the fact that he himself had come up from the ranks . . . was an experienced soldier, and was perfectly versed in having ideas and orders executed.

Von Steuben brought to the American Army the tactics of the 18th Century and with a Europe versed in War. He had natural genius and applied it to the training of our soldiers. The easy-going march discipline of the early years of the War disappeared and the losses from straggling were greatly reduced. Before our soldiers learned to perform such movements with precision and accuracy as advanced and taught by Von Steuben, retreats before the enemy frequently led to confusion and disaster.

Washington's appreciation of Steuben is finally and irrevocably attested in the following letter, dated Annapolis, December 23rd, 1783:

"My Dear Baron:

"Although I have taken frequent opportunities, both in public and private, of acknowledging your zeal, attention and abilities in performing the duties of your office, yet I wish to make use of this last moment of my public life to signify in the strongest terms, my entire approbation of your conduct and to express my sense of the obligations the public is under to you for your faithful and meritorious service.

"I beg you will be convinced, my dear Sir, that I should rejoice if it could ever be in my power to serve you more essentially than by expres-

sions of regard and affection. But in the mean time, I am persuaded you will not be displeased with this farewell token of my sincere friendship and esteem for you. This is the last letter I shall ever write while I continue in the service of my country. The hour of my resignation is fixed at twelve this day, after which I shall become a private citizen on the banks of the Potomac, where I shall be glad to embrace you and testify the great esteem and consideration, with which I am, my Dear Baron, your most obedient and affectionate servant.

GEORGE WASHINGTON."

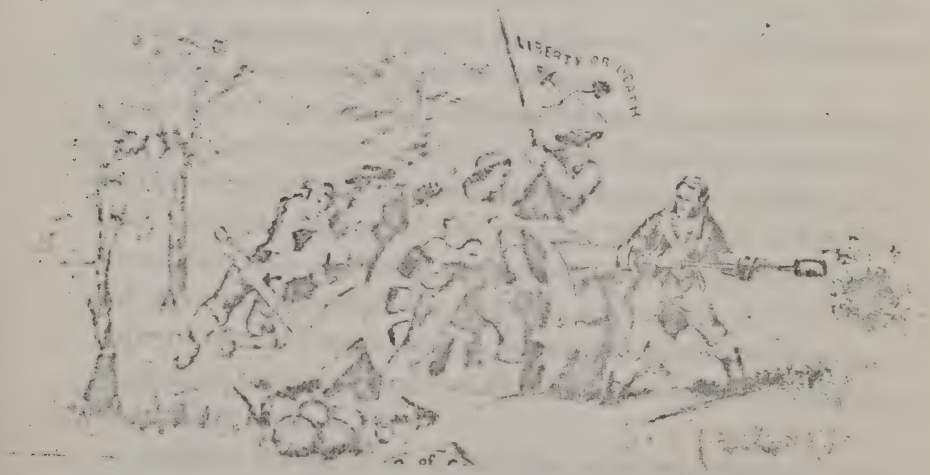
The King of Sardinia and the Emperor of Austria had endeavored to attract Von Steuben by splendid offers, but he had his own political opinions and was silently determined never to draw his sword again except in the cause of Liberty. General Von Steuben was in White Plains during the campaign of 1778.

CHAPTER XVIII

Alexander Hamilton

AN IMMORTAL and embattled Yesterday is interlocked with Today, on occasion, as Anniversaries are celebrated in our midst, and the revered past brought again to mind. This chapter is an example of the undying tie, as, once more, the thunder of guns is heard, in echo, and phantom figures appear on Chatterton Hill.

The spirit and interest shown during the commemorating exercises of the 150th Anniversary of the Battle of White Plains, at the White Plains High School on the afternoon and evening of October 28th, 1926, justifies the belief that this community honors its illustrious dead; is conscious of the great importance of our part in the eventful conflict. The



Captain Alexander Hamilton in Action October 28, 1776

auditorium was crowded, the ceremonies impressive, and a playlet featuring Washington enthusiastically received.

The author of this book took exception to remarks made that same day by one historically inclined, who made statements which discredited and severely censured an American officer under the Commander-in-Chief. The criticisms and condemnation were directed at Alexander Hamilton. It was impossible for me to reconcile what was said in my presence, to convictions of my own in the matter, founded on reliable data.

What follows, then, is here set down in justice to a faithful soldier, and to the memory of heroic deeds performed on Chatterton Hill at a crucial hour in our battle for independence. Opinions must vary in matters over which so many conflicting records enter the arena of History, and it is to be hoped that in advancing my arguments, I will not be considered presumptuous, although they are at variance with the opinions of historians of repute. Another motive prompts me: namely, the adoption by the Government of a design for the White Plains Battle stamp, designed by Edmund F. Ward, featuring Hamilton's battery in spirited action.

A visitor, an earnest historian who has devoted his personal time and funds to the gathering of Westchester lore, questioned the Government's wisdom in adopting the above incident as the chief pictorial feature of the stamp. It was his belief that Alexander Hamilton was not present on this field of action, and gave as his reason, the fact that never once, during many years of research work, had he found any substantiating data, confirming the suggestion that Hamilton occupied this position on October 28th, 1776.

Another historian of equal note expressed similar views, stating with emphasis: "No evidence", and adding that, to the

contrary, he had recently come into possession of literature that "located the officer elsewhere on the day the battle took place."

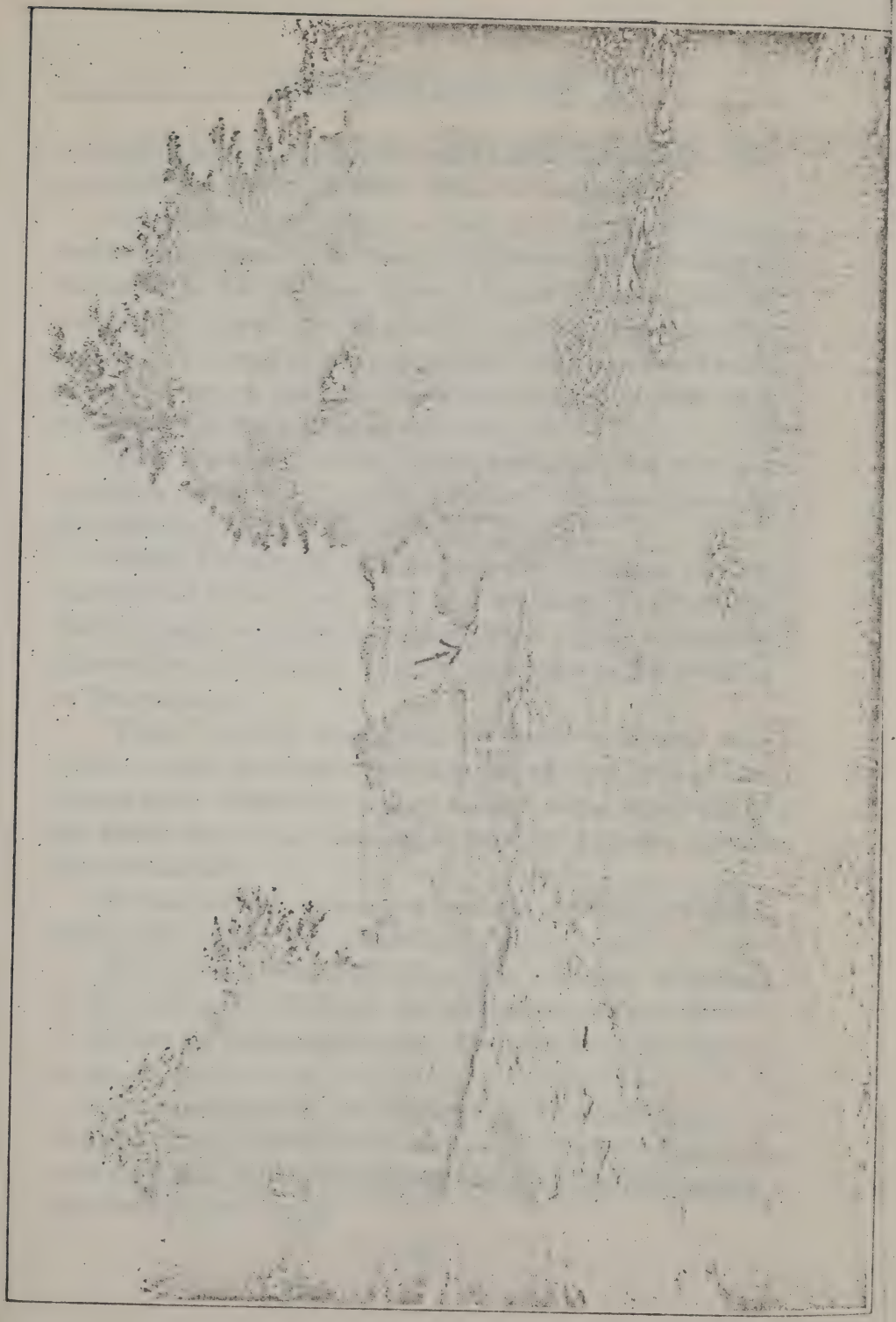
The late Justice Isaac N. Mills, speaking at the annual meeting of the Westchester County Historical Society, on the afternoon of October 28th, 1926, well known as an historian himself, quoted Dawson, who, generally speaking, is considered the best-posted historian of the Westchester campaign, and made significant reference to Dawson's comment that "Hamilton was not at White Plains at all during the battle of October 28th, 1776."

Armed with the facts at my command, I took exception to the theories advanced and their apparent finality, and, on December 11th, 1926, released for publication in "The Daily Reporter", my specific reasons for taking an opposite view, together with data in my possession. In this article I ventured the query: if Hamilton was not on Chatterton hill at the time of the battle, where, then, was he?

Going Over the Battle Grounds

In the spring of 1880, during one of my interesting rambles on the slopes and at the top of Chatterton Hill, in search of Indian or Colonial relics, I met Dr. Ezra Edson, father of Mrs. John Lester, who resided in the only house at the crest of the hill, south of Battle Avenue, at that period.

He was then 72 years old. We met on the hill, a few rods west of a living spring on its easterly slope. This spring once supplied the water for the locomotives of the railroad station. My son was born in 1880, just prior to this chance meeting with the Doctor, and my home was at the base of Chatterton hill, a few hundred feet north of where ground was broken by Major W. A. Danielson, of Washington, D. C., detailed to represent the Government and the Secretary of War, at the



exercises attending the erection of an official marker to commemorate the Battle of White Plains in perpetuity.

Dr. Edson suggested that we walk down to where "Hamilton had his cannon". We took a well-beaten path, leading to the south of the hill, just where it began to slope. Here we stopped on a level spot of ground approximately thirty feet square. The area had every appearance of having been leveled off with a shovel, for there was a sudden drop of from three to four feet on the south and east sides.

"Here", said the Doctor, "Right here, upon this very spot where we now stand, Captain Hamilton, with one cannon at his command, opposed the oncoming British."

Vividly I recall the thrill experienced by me as my feet touched this historic spot, and I also remember the picture the Doctor made — his erect and dignified figure, silhouetted against the clear blue sky, with one hand outstretched, pointing to the southeast.

"There" he said, designating the sunlit fields that were clearly visible from this eminence, beyond the tops of the distant trees, (known as Tibbits woods) along the banks of the Bronx River, "is where Howe with his batteries, opened fire on this hill."

At this point I interrupted with the question: "Doctor, where did you get your information?"

His reply was "From Mr. Hunt" and with that, he pointed to the northwest. "He lived just on the other side of the hill at the time the battle was fought." He pointed out the position to me.

So compelling were the incidents of the occasion that, a few days later, I drove with my dark room and equipment over the fields, to the nearest point and made the photographs here included of the site.

The Hunt farm, on old Dobbs Ferry Road, now part of Felix M. Warburg Estate, Central Avenue.

On the land near the house, as was the custom in those days, the Hunt family maintained a smoke-house. The floor of this structure was literally "paved" with spent cannon balls of six to 32 pound calibre, found on the property, a result, no doubt, of poor or misjudged marksmanship of Howe's artillery, as the missiles missed their mark and roared over the heads of the defenders of Chatterton Hill, to become embedded in the earth of Mr. Hunt's farm. Some of these, therefore, came to light one hundred and fifty years later, for a few years ago, an Italian laborer's plow accidentally uncovered two time-pitted twelve-pound cannon balls! My information concerning the projectiles found, and their use in paving the smoke-house floor came from Miss Elliot, the great grand-daughter of Isaack Hunt.

In 1927 I found in New York City Historical Society's rooms, a photostatic copy of the original map, now in historical archives in London, England. This map was made by General Howe's secretary, while he was in White Plains at the time of the battle.

On this map is clearly located the position of the English batteries, together with the names of their commanders, and the intricate details of the area of conflict. The map's plan confirms exactly, the statements made by Doctor Edson to me, fifty-seven years ago, in 1880.

How are the pages of History recorded? Whence comes authentic information, when, under the pressure of war, no actual written data is handed down? From unwritten oral delivery of those who lived such history, who were a part of it, passed from generation to generation and accepted by historians as a dependable source of information.

It is my humble belief that I have offered facts worthy of careful consideration, and forged three links in the inexorable chain of time that spans the intervening period, from the date of the battle to the present. "Where was Alexander Hamilton on the date specified, if he was not here?" This question has never been answered. Isaack Hunt resided west of Chatterton Hill (now the Felix M. Warburg Estate) before, and during the battle there. His son, Thomas Hunt, was Dr. Edson's informant and authority. And my intimate talk with Dr. Ezra Edson completes the conclusive cycle.

Because it refers so intimately to Alexander Hamilton and so conclusively refers to the fact that he had White Plains as an objective, I reproduce in substance this article which appeared in "The New York Tribune" October 25th, 1896:

"The old Odell house, on the Albany Post Road in the town of Greenburg, near the village of Irvington, is one of the few remaining

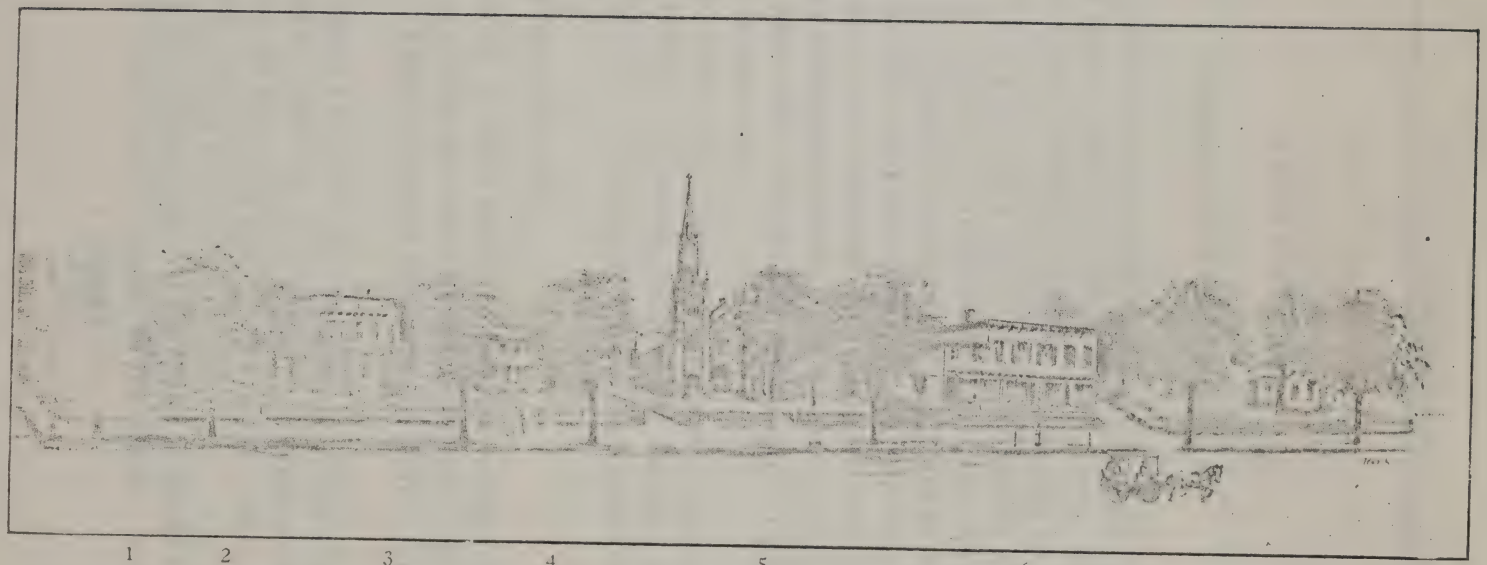
structures in that neighborhood which date back to the early settlement of Westchester County.

"Jonathan Odell was one of the celebrated Westchester guides whose patriotic services were rewarded with high praise from the lips of Washington. At the close of the Revolution he held the rank of Colonel.

"The house continued in the Odell family long after the Revolution. It was used as an Inn and stopping place for the stages of New York and Albany stage lines as early as 1790. New York people and others, desiring to go to White Plains upon Court or other business, would stop at Colonel Odell's over night and he would drive them to the County seat on the following morning.

"Alexander Hamilton on one occasion was a guest at the house over night. The next morning Colonel Odell drove him to White Plains. On their way, as they approached Chatterton Hill, Hamilton requested to be driven over that important position in the Battle of White Plains, saying it was the first time he had visited the spot since the battle in 1776.

"After arriving upon the crest of the hill, Hamilton pointed out the various positions of the contending forces on the day of the battle and described how his battery was handled when the British were charging up the steep slope of the hill from the Bronx River."



1 2 3 4 5 6 7

VIEW OF RAILROAD AVENUE IN 1876 BETWEEN CHURCH STREET AND BROADWAY

(1) Dr. H. Ernst Schmid. (2) Dr. Eugene Curtis. (3) Malcolm Moore. (4) Gilbert Lyon. (5) M. E. Church. (6) Lafayette Hall. (7) Mrs. Clark. (3) and (4) Site of Municipal Building.

CHAPTER XIX

Memories of the Old Village

BECAUSE this volume undertakes to follow the romantic and historic story of White Plains, from the early Indian days, through chapters concerning the struggling Colonists of pioneering vigor, the Revolutionary struggle, the Civil War, Spanish War, World War and into the present progressive era, it becomes necessary, at this point to set down interesting memories extending across a pattern of many generations. Almost without exception, they mesh, one with another. Anniversaries held during recent years inevitably include village epochs when White Plains was emerging from the crude embryo to a beautiful city.

Questions come up; problems demand solving; ancient landmarks deserve concluding verification, and the present chapter, therefore is a "clearing house" for such widely diversified data.

The White Plains Battle Flag

The question is often asked: "Did the village and its fighting forces during the Battle of White Plains, have a flag of its own?" Patient research has been necessary to clarify this point.

The National Flag was not adopted by Congress until July 14th, 1777, and was not officially promulgated until September 3rd, of the same year. Prior to that, there was a variety, both in design and color.

For example: the flag carried at the Battle of White Plains, and known as the Battle Flag of White Plains, bore the

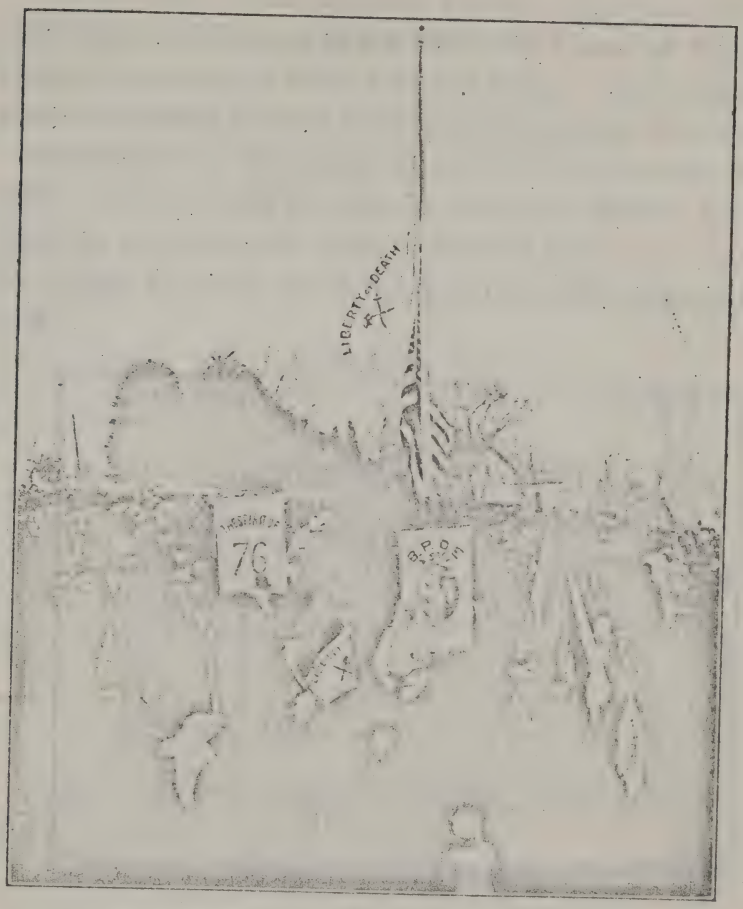
"Liberty Cap", together with the sword and staff, and the words of Patrick Henry: "Liberty or Death"; but a flag bearing thirteen alternate red and white stripes seemed to be generally preferred and Congress, in adopting it, gave expression to the popular will.

The description and design of the White Plains battle flag was found in an old English publication, printed in London. These facts were obtained from the New York City Public Library. No record of the flag's origin nor the name of the designer could be found. May we ever cherish and keep in grateful memory those who so valiantly defended this flag, the inspiration of which assisted, no doubt, in making the National emblem possible.

For a number of years the White Plains public did not take kindly to the flag. They thought it too "Communistic" and "Revolutionary" and could not be induced to display it where all eyes could see. But it must be remembered that the flag was emblematic of the times that gave it birth. The words from that stirring speech of Patrick Henry; the unsheathed sword in defense of Liberty, were symbolic of Revolutionary days.

The first official recognition of the flag was at the celebration on Chatterton Hill, when it floated proudly from the top of the flagstaff erected by the Daughters of the American Revolution, on the 135th Anniversary of the Battle of White Plains. At a given moment during the ceremony, history repeated itself.

The Battle Flag again gave way to the Stars and Stripes, after its proud bunting cheered those patriots who defended Chatterton Hill. Further recognition was extended to it when, on January 1st, 1916, the Common Council adopted the design as the official seal of the City of White Plains.

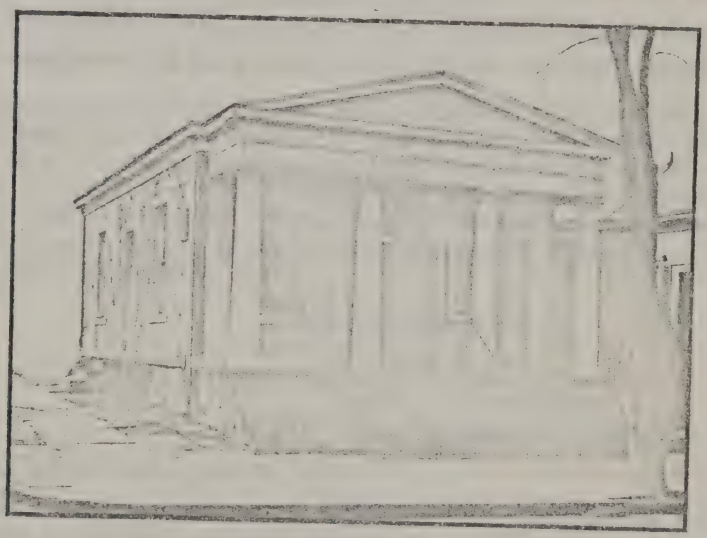


First official recognition of the White Plains Battle Flag on the 135th Anniversary of the Battle, October 28, 1911.

A Relic of the Old Village

At the turn of the century, the law office of Close and Robertson, which stood at the southwest corner of Main and Grand Streets, was a relic of the old village, where it formerly stood, just north of, and adjoining, the present Armory.

Sentiment was the prime motive for the removal of this stone building, with its massive one-piece granite columns, from the old to the new village. Prior to 1856 it was occupied by Samuel E. Lyon, one of the most prominent lawyers of his time.



Close & Robertson law office.

Close and Robertson was the best known law firm in the County for many years. There were no women employed in the office. Stenographers, needless to say, were not needed because there was no short-hand, no typewriter machines. The telephone had not reached a point of practical value.

When a legal question came up requiring more than one copy, one of the young law students would read the document aloud, while as many as required transcripts, each set down his own copy in long-hand.

Mr. Henry R. Barrett, connected with the office at this time, recalls as many as ten men thus employed a good part of the day, making the ten duplicates of the same brief.

A "Mystery Monument"

In 1860, one H. M. Taft asked an interesting question relative to a "mystery monument" of White Plains, his query and the orderly-book quotation reproduced in one of the history magazines of the period, to the editors of which he write:

"Monument of White Plains: Some years since, I had occasion, in a professional capacity, to examine the orderly-book, if that is the proper term of a non-commissioned officer of the Revolution. Upon one of its pages, in another and elegant handwriting, was the record I then transcribed and now inclose. Publish in your magazine if you think it deserves such a place. What was this monument? What did it commemorate? What became of it?

Yours Respectfully,

H. M. Taft,
Lenox, Mass.
March 12, 1860."

"Camp White Plains, July 21, 1778.

"This day was erected a fine monument of a great stone of curious carvings, by the field and other officers and gentlemen of the Regiment commanded by Colonel Wood, after which, in the evening, these gentlemen were attended with a band of music and thirteen toasts were drunk in the following manner, and carried on the greatest decency and good order.

"1st. The Colonel.—Hoping that we shall be made sensible that this is the year that we shall gain a final victory over our enemies, and that independence shall be established upon good and lasting basis.

"2nd. Lieut. Colonel.—Success to the American Arms—hoping that the present campaign may terminate the American warfare.

"3rd. Major General Washington and all his brave officers and men—hoping that they will have the blessings of Heaven and the conquest of their enemies.

"4th. Captain Noble.—Success to General Gates and officers under his command—hoping they will prove themselves courageous and valiant.

"5th. Captain Batchelo.—Success to General Morris and his field officers and others under his command.

"6th. Captain Carpenter.—His Most Christian Majesty.

"7th. Captain Green.—Success to General Green and all his endeavors to stop British tyranny.

"8th. Captain Stearns.—The American Allies.

"9th. Captain Drury.—Everlasting union of the thirteen United States.

"10th. The inroads of our inveterate enemies.

"11th. Adjutant.—Success to His Most Christian Majesty's fleet upon the water.

"12th. Our Master. As the letters are engraven upon this stone, so let the letters of Liberty be engraven upon the hearts of all true Americans to all generations.

"13th. Surgeon.—May the engraving of this stone remain in view till all the enemies of America are buried in oblivion."

I have never been able to trace the location of this monument, and its identity will probably remain forever unknown.

White Plains In 1846

Under the title: "White Plains As I Knew It 46 Years Ago", the following intimate document by Samuel Hopper, was published in "The Westchester County Reporter", May 13, 1892, the editors and proprietors being William B. Sutherland and Edmund A. Sutherland. It gives a fascinating picture of what was then not much more than a thriving village.

"As years roll by one finds that the retrospective looms up, and past events of life come more fully into view, and often occupy the mind to the exclusion of questions relating to the future. For instance, you notice two elderly persons in conversation and the most prominent feature of their converse will be devoted to topics relative to past events in which, perhaps, they have taken a part.

"While the writer hereof thinks he feels keenly alive to questions of the day, still at times there is a pleasure to him in living over some of the past events in life, inasmuch as the last fifty years have been the most remarkable of the world's history in science, art and literature.

"In contemplating the future growth of our beautiful village, nestled between the surrounding hills, my mind reverts to White Plains as I first saw it 46 years ago — in 1846.

RED BIRD

WINTER ARRANGEMENT.

On and after Monday, the 30th November, the the RED BIRD will run as follows, viz: --leave the hotel of G. C, LEWIS Esq., in the village of Whiteplains, on Mondays, Wednesdays and Fridays, at 9 o'clock A. M. and the North American Hotel, corner of Bayard street and Bowery, New-York, on Tuesdays, Thursdays and Saturdays, at 11 o'clock, A. *M.*

31 HIRAM DEFOREST, Proprietor

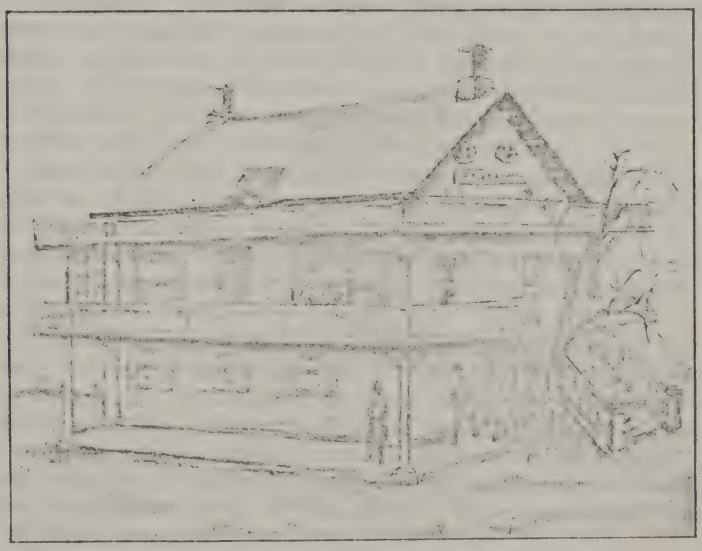
From "The Westchester Spy" published in White Plains, March 24, 1841.

"In my early days I well remember the 'Red Bird' line of stages passing up the Bowery and Third Avenue for White Plains, at that time never suspecting that it would in after years be my home. The Harlem Railroad had that year extended their tracks to this town. I well remember the old style passenger cars then employed, which left Tyron Row (City Hall) and were drawn by horses to near 32nd Street, where a small locomotive burning wood was attached.

"There were, when the road was first opened, two bridges spanning the then open cut from 34th Street to 42nd Street, on which the citizens congregated Sundays and holidays to see the cars pass under.

"The depot building at White Plains station was a small, wooden structure, and on a pole rising from the platform hung a bell which the conductor was required to ring a few minutes before the departure of the train to warn the travelers at the hotel to get on board. The conductor of a train in those days was an important factor in the management. He carried messages, acted as a kind of guardian over the lady passengers traveling unattended by gentlemen, and indeed, seemed quite as important as the master of one of the largest trans-Atlantic steamers of our day.

"The two conductors who vied with each other for popular favors were named Marks and Sands, and it was no uncommon remark to hear young ladies say that they had no fears to go to the city, as they or their parents knew Mr. Marks or Sands, as the case might be, and they would be under their protection in the cars and they would see them safely landed in the city.



FIRST ORAWAUPUM HOTEL
Oakley & Smith, proprietors. Destroyed by fire in 1854.

"At the time of which I am writing the village proper was on Broadway. The Orawaupum Hotel at the depot, (afterwards burned down) was kept by Smith and Oakley. There were two small stores, one near the track and kept by Hart Purdy, and the other in a one story building where Scott's store now stands.

"There were, perhaps, some five or six buildings in the neighborhood. There were no buildings on Railroad Avenue from Lexington Avenue to Broadway so far as I now remember except a small one-story building between the brook and the present post office — the Lyon place, and that of Caleb Huestis.

"The avenue during the winter months or rainy weather was the worst I ever traveled. It was almost impossible for man or beast to wade through the mud and mire. There were no sidewalks in those good old days. Dr. Roe, who at that time was a prominent physician of the town, stated that having dropped his whip on the avenue he got out of the wagon to recover it. At the first step he lost one rubber from his foot; the next step the other went, and fearing the loss of his boots if he ventured further, he hastily retreated, leaving rubbers and whip behind.

"As before stated, the village proper was on Broadway. The Court House, the most prominent building, with the county offices, occupied the lot on which Mr. Fiero now resides. There were several houses of entertainment on Broadway, opposite the Court House, to which the villagers resorted, particularly at court times, to hear the news and discuss the questions of the day. The village harness maker was next north of the Mitchell place. Further north, where Charles Horton resides, was the post office and country store of Palmer and Fisher.

"Israel Purdy was the shoemaker next above, and the drug store still further on. A few doors above, now the residence of ex-Sheriff Schirmer, stood the store of Elisha Horton. On the corner of Railroad Avenue, the village hatter held forth — I think his name was Schuyler Tompkins — who made hats to order with brims of sufficient width to fully satisfy the Quakers of Purchase.

"The village school house was on Westchester Avenue, near Dick's tannery. James Dick, the father of Timothy, was the village tanner. His vats were in the stream near the stone bridge on Westchester Avenue. Caleb Heustis, the father of William H., was the village blacksmith, and his shop was in the building now occupied by N. M. Moger. Richard Byrne was the cabinet-maker and also the undertaker, and divided the latter honors with David Miller. Byrne's shop was under the hill next to R. Ellis's bakery.

"The most prominent lawyers, as I now remember them, were Minott Mitchell, Samuel C. Lyon, J. Warren Tompkins and Charles A. Purdy. Mr. Mitchell held the front rank and was a man of remarkably fine personal appearance. Over six feet in height, well proportioned and with a well-trained voice, he commanded attention and respect from both Court and Jury. I remember hearing him argue a case in the old Court House, and shall never forget the impression then made.

"Robert S. Hart, then a young man, was County Judge; Munson I. Lockwood, County Clerk; William H. Briggs, Sheriff; Frederick J.

Coffin, Surrogate; Richard R. Voris, District Attorney; Joseph H. Anderson, Member of Congress.

"The office of Supervisor was held by a young lawyer from North Castle, whose pleasing address and kindly manners and disposition to aid others, made him many friends. He was subsequently elected Surrogate. This kind-hearted man and veteran in politics is still with us, and is now and has been for a number of years past Supervisor of our town — I refer to the Hon. Lewis C. Platt.

"There is one feature of our village life gone. I refer to the arrival and departure of the mail stages with passengers to and from New York — particularly during the winter months. They were from Stamford, Cos Cob, Port Chester, Rye, Bedford, Danbury, Tarrytown and various other places too numerous to mention. These arrivals gave excitement and life to the town which was deplored when the track was extended and the Hudson River and New Haven Roads opened.

"The Protestant Episcopal Church stood on lower Broadway, below the Post Road; the Presbyterian on the present site; the church then standing having been burned down. The Methodist Village Church being on the lot next north of Mr. John Read's residence on Broadway. There were no other church edifices at that time.

"This cursory survey of the past may be of interest to those who have more recently made their home in our town, and by comparing the past with the present, they may be able to trace the improvements made since 1846.

"I turn from the past and scan the future. White Plains from its situation is one of the natural outlets of New York City. Its rapid growth during the past two years is an index of the future. We have as good railroad facilities as any town out of New York, our water supply is superior in quality, the system of sewerage is in part completed, gas and electric lights in our streets, farm lands are rapidly passing into the hands of persons who are sub-dividing the lands into plots for rural homes.

"We are surrounded by beautiful woodland, hills and vales, interspersed by streams of living water. We are far enough from the salt water to modify the harsh air as it passes over the hills, thus affording an asylum for persons with pulmonary tendencies. Our roads are being improved, thus affording delightful drives in every direction. I therefore leave the retrospective and look forward to an unprecedented growth for our town in the near future."

Mr. Samuel Hopper was one of the earliest commuters; always took an active interest in village affairs. He was head of the leading grocery firm for many years that bore his name, and was president of the village in 1890-91.

For twenty-five years he was superintendent of the coastwise department and an authority on Marine Law at the New York Custom House. He also was acting Deputy Collector of the Port of New York for a time.

The Village and the City Charter

By an Act of the Legislature of the State, passed April 3, 1866 and amended by an Act passed April 22, 1867, that part of White Plains particularly bounded and described in Section I of said Act, was declared to be the "Village of White Plains", and the inhabitants resident within the boundaries were declared to be a body corporate, to be known by the corporate name of "The Village of White Plains".

At a meeting of the Trustees of the Village of White Plains, held on the 8th of May, 1866 at 10 o'clock A. M., at Lafayette Hall, pursuant to Chapter 351, Laws of the State of New York, passed April 3rd, 1866, entitled "An Act to Incorporate the Village of White Plains to Determine by Ballot the Term of Service of Each of Said Trustees. The following trustees were present, as named:

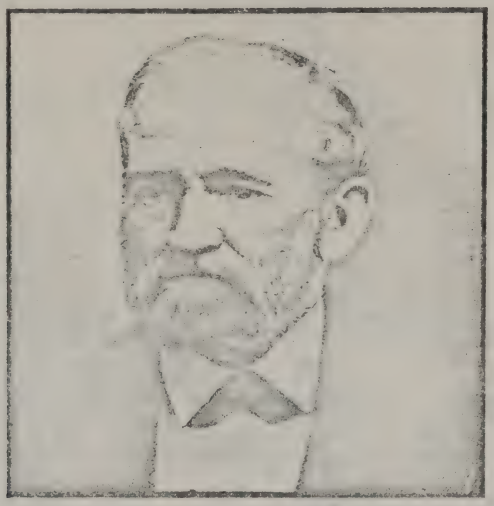
Mr. Hiram P. Powell, John W. Mills, John Swinburne, Gilbert S. Lyon, Edward Heath, Harvey Groot and John P. Jenkins.

Whereupon the said Trustees, in the presence of the Clerk of Elections proceeded to draw for said terms of service as follows:

Gilbert S. Lyon and Edward Heath each drew ballots marked "I".

Hiram P. Rowel and John Jenkins each drew ballots marked "II".

John W. Mills, John Swinburne and Harvey Groot drew No. "III".



JOHN SWINBURNE
First President of the village—1866.

RESOLVED: That John Swinburne be elected President of the Board for the ensuing year. Mr. Harvey Groot moved to amend, that we proceed to ballot for President. The question being put, the amendment was declared lost. The question then being put upon the original resolution, it was declared carried.

Mr. John W. Mills was appointed to conduct Mr. Swinburne to the chair. On motion of Gilbert S. Lyon, it was RESOLVED that John N. Rowell be and hereby is appointed Clerk of the Board for the ensuing year.

At the meeting on May 3rd, 1915, President John J. Brown informed the Common Council that the Governor had signed the bill passed by an Act of the Legislature on May 3rd, 1915, creating White Plains a City, to become effective January 1st, 1916.

FIRST MAYOR AND OFFICERS OF THE CITY — 1916

CITY OFFICIALS

January 1st, 1916

Mayor: Ffarrington N. Thompson
President: Charles H. Dewsnap
City Clerk: William H. Carpenter

COUNCILMEN

Joseph Allen
Frederick N. Garthwait
John T. Rehill
Charles Dewsnap
Frederick C. McLaughlin
William J. Weise

Charles E. Fuchs, Commissioner of Finance
John Rösch, Assessor
Mortimer C. O'Brien, City Judge

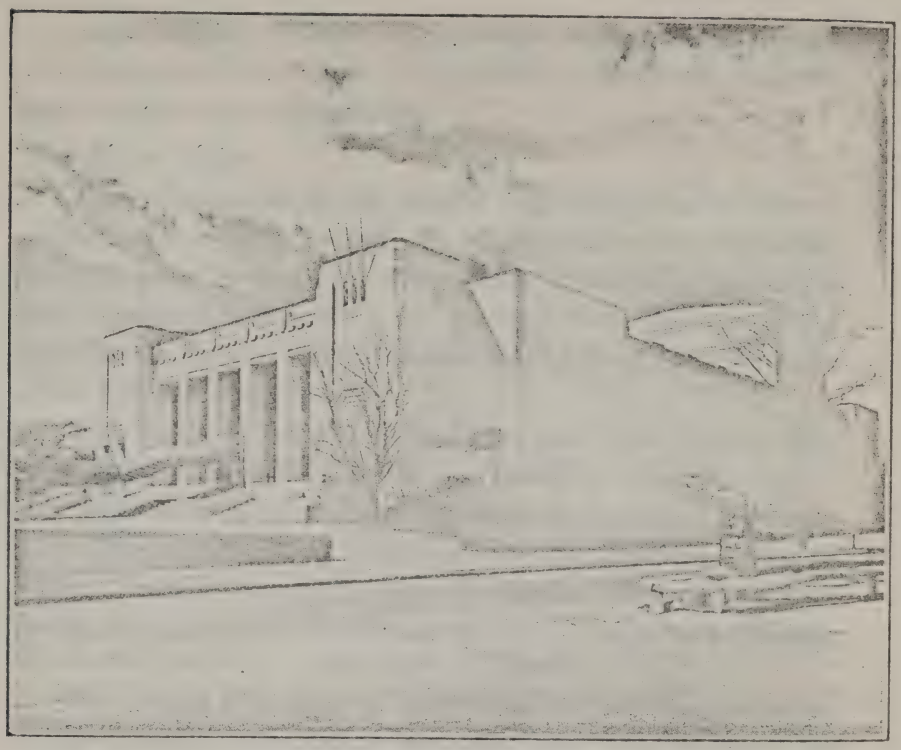
E. H. P. Squire, Corporation Counsel
Miguel L. Hauck, Commissioner of Public Works
John C. Calhoun, Commissioner of Public Safety.
Charles A. Butler, Civil Justice
Daniel W. Tichnor, Second Office of Civil Justice
Stephen Holden, Acting City Judge.

BOARD OF HEALTH

Dr. H. Ernst Schmid
Dr. Henry T. Kelly
Dr. Frank N. Irwin
Silas Arthur Sutherland
Charles H. Deuterman
Charles H. Quereau

THE CITY OF WHITE PLAINS

Incorporated — January 1, 1916.
Population — About 36,000.
Tax Rate, 1916 — $21.99; Bronx Valley Sewer, 89c.
Area — 10 Square miles; 105 miles of paved streets; more than 6000 homes.
Altitude — 200 to 500 feet.
Educational facilities — 13 public schools; one senior high school; 3 junior high schools; 9 elementary schools; Good Counsel College—200 students; 2 parochial schools; 1 private business school; 1 public evening school.
Transportation — 23 miles to Grand Central Station, N. Y., via Harlem Division; 20 bus lines to all parts of city and nearby towns.
Three hotels.
Thirty Churches of all denominations.
Five Hospitals with 750 beds in all.
Five Sanitariums.
Two Parks with total of five acres.
Library with over 50,000 volumes.
Three private golf courses.
Two public golf courses.
One private tennis club.
One public tennis club.
Three riding academies.
One daily newspaper.
Four banks — one Savings; one National; one State, and one Trust.
Trade — Retail area has a radius of 25 miles and population of 100,000. Last report — 633 stores.
108 Policemen.
79 Firemen — Six fire stations; 11 pieces of motor equipment.



WESTCHESTER COUNTY CENTER

Main auditorium with balcony. Seats 4,600. Exhibition Hall under auditorium for exhibitions, banquets, etc. Area 15,950 sq. ft. Little Theatre accommodates 520, used for dramatic performances, dances and lectures.

Seven miles from "Playland" — The County Recreation Resort.

U. S. Geological Survey reports the best water in the United States and certainly in this part of New York State.

Forestry

With the advent of the City in 1916, a small appropriation was set up in the City Budget, to supplement the good work done by the Village Park Association, by the appointment of a Tree Commission.

About 1930 a Forestry Department was established and this department took over all the duties of the Park Association and the Tree Commission.

The Bronx River

This picturesque stream figured very largely in the history of the Revolutionary period. Its virgin state was so beautiful in days gone by that this writer feels it would be futile for him to attempt to describe it in a manner that would do proper credit to its beauty. Of its historic background there is much available and authentic data.

The Bronx River was named after one Jonas Bronck who came to this country in 1639. In 1640, he was regarded as the first white inhabitant of Westchester County. He came across the Harlem River to take up land and build a permanent home. Bronck was not a native Hollander, as some suppose, being, it is said, of Swedish extraction, although he had made his former home in Amsterdam, Holland.

He bought 500 acres of land from the Indians, pursuant to the custom of the Dutch law, this land being between the great Kill (Harlem River) and the Ahquahung, (Indian name for Bronx River).

Frederick Philipse, who, from 1672 to 1687, had acquired all the land included in this area, the Hudson River on the west, the Bronx River on the east, Spuyten Duyvil on the south, and the Croton River on the north, through grants and purchase from the Indians (the Weckquaskecks) who were in possession of the west side of the Bronx River, became first Lord of the historic manor of Philipsburg by Royal Charter letters and patents, in 1693. The owners of the Philipse Manor estate did not espouse the American cause. In 1779, the Legislature of New York, sitting in Kingston, passed a law confiscating the estate.

Abstract or sale by the Commissioner of Forfeiture to Absalom Nelson, on May 18th, 1786, of two hundred and thirty (230) acres, bounded on the north by Michael Chatterton, and on the east by the Bronx River, embodied the battle grounds on Chatterton Hill, on October 28th, 1776, including the ford.

Thomas Hunt, adjoining the Chatterton property to the north, acquired one hundred and sixty-two (162) acres. These three parcels bought from the Commissioners, covered the entire west side of the Bronx River, in White Plains.

All of the shore line on the east of the river was owned by Anthony Miller and Jacob Purdy, north of the Main Street bridge.

South of the bridge, the property was in the possession of Daniel Horton, Azariah Horton and John Horton. On the John Horton site was located the grist and saw mill, after which Mill Lane was named. Here, at the end of the Lane where the mill stood, a wooden bridge crossed the River, over the top of the dam. This dam impounded the water for use by the saw mill, and, later, Biesenger's Tannery, south of the dam. This section of the river was named by the negro inhabitants: "The River Jordan" and it was at this point their baptisms took place.

The Freshets

Previous to the cutting off of the natural flow of the Bronx River, by reason of building the first dam at Kensico Village in 1885, by New York City, the Spring freshets would reach flood dimensions. It was possible to stand on the north side of the Bronx River bridge, and, looking north, see the entire valley, from Bronx Street, known as "Frog Alley", to Central Avenue and beyond, where the County Center building now stands, all inundated.

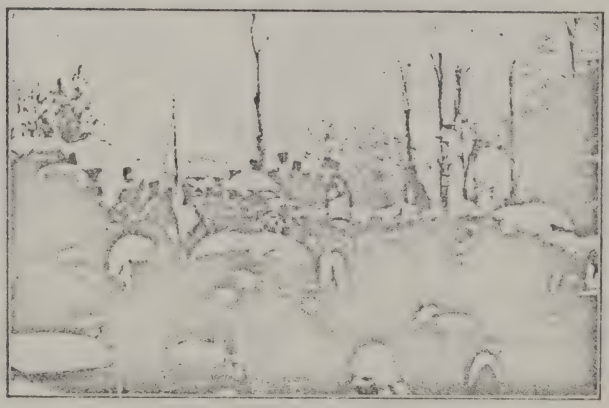
The water rose to within a foot of the keystone of the Main Street bridge. This barrier flooded the first floors of the homes on Bronx Street and outbuildings, fences, wheelbarrows, pig stys, and all manner of debris was carried down and lodged against the stone bridge.

The so-called Davis Brook, running through the center of the city, was another body of water that at times would become so swollen as to cover the land between Main Street and Martine Avenue, (in the rear of the Citizens Bank) so that at milking-time, Mrs. Timothy Shay, who lived at the corner of Martine Avenue and Grove Street, and was the owner of a cow, would have to wade through water two feet deep, to reach the animal. These floods frequently played havoc with the basement floors and the stores on the north side of the street, and at such times, the horses in the livery stable, opposite the State Theatre, were rescued by being taken up a ramp to the sidewalk.

CHAPTER XX

The 100 and 150th Anniversary of the Battle

THE 100th anniversary of the Battle of White Plains was celebrated October 28th, 1876. Great preparations had been made by the Westchester County Historical Society to commemorate the event; a site had been donated and the foundation built for the monument.

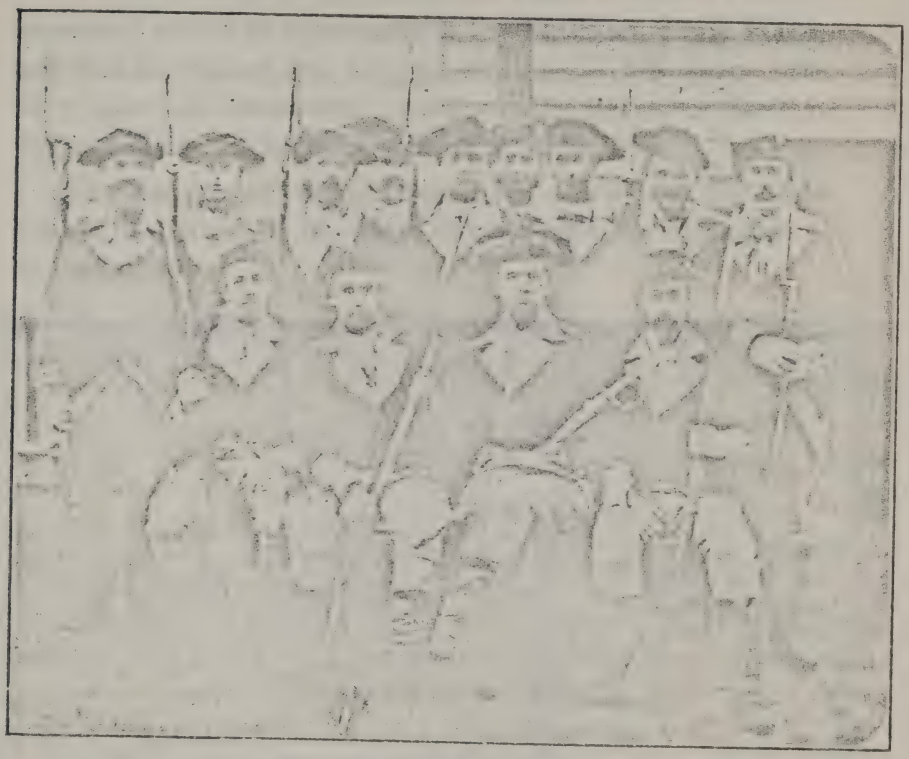


THE 100TH ANNIVERSARY OF THE BATTLE
OCTOBER 28, 1876

The day opened dreary and gloomy; snow had fallen early in the morning, turning into rain and slush before noon.

State troops, in complete accoutrements, arrived by train. The Colonial company, representing the thirteen original states, of which the writer (arrow) was a member, was stationed on the platform of the depot, acting as a reception com-

mittee and guard of honor to the Governor of the State and to the invited officials.

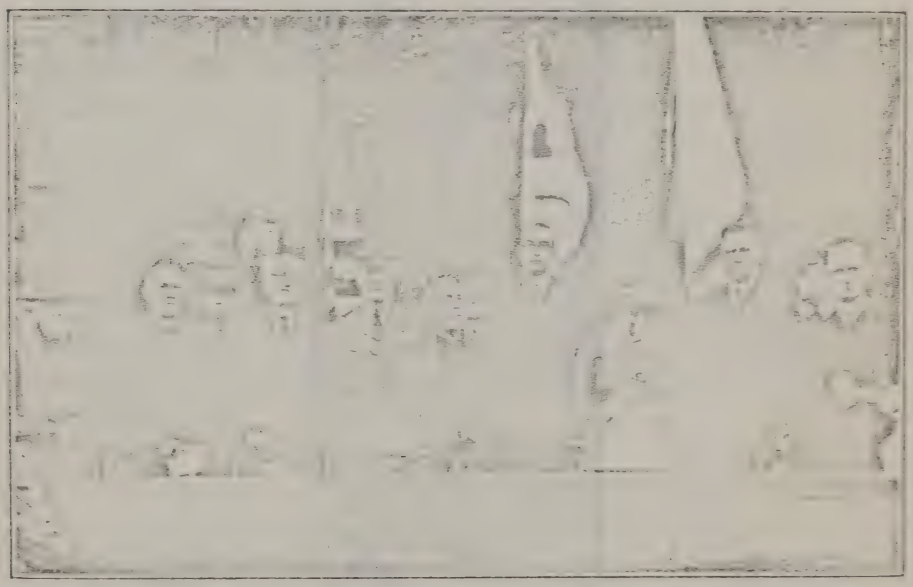


THE CONTINENTAL COMPANY
Guard of Honor to the Governor, October 28, 1876

It was a difficult march up the hill through the rain and slush, to the place where the ceremony of laying the corner stone at the intersection of Washington and Battle Avenue took place with Masonic honors. The honor of placing the stone rested upon the Hon. James W. Husted, then Grand Master of the State Lodge of Masons, who was a resident of Peekskill. He was for a number of years leader of the Assembly at Al-

bany and was familiarly known as the "Bald Eagle of Westchester." The laying of this corner-stone with pomp and ceremony was the beginning of what was hoped would be a worthy memorial raised to commemorate the Battle of White Plains, but this beginning was also the ending. A few years later, boys upset the corner-stone and spent the few coins found in the strong box under it in a nearby candy store.

The site selected for the monument was a poor one. The Committee having it in charge did not push the movement to its completion.



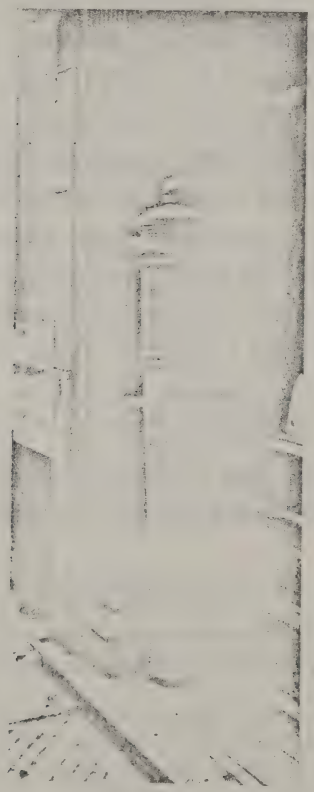
150TH ANNIVERSARY OF THE BATTLE, OCTOBER 28, 1927

Reading from left: Edward Bergen, Rev. Frank H. Simmonds, Colonel Leanard, William Horton, Brigadier General William C. Horton, U.S.A.; Charles H. Tibbits, Rev. Herbert J. White, Charles Everett Moore, Colonel Clifford Game, U.S.A.; Stephen O. S. Graham, Quartermaster General; Congressman J. Mayhew Wainwright.

An important occasion was the unveiling of the Marker on the Bronx River Parkway, October 28th, 1927, in honor of

the Anniversary of the Battle of White Plains. The bronze tablet on the granite Marker bears the following inscription:

> BATTLE OF WHITE PLAINS, OCTOBER 28, 1776
> NEAR THIS SPOT THE BRITISH UNDER HOWE FORDED THE BRONX RIVER AND ATTACKED THE RIGHT WING OF WASHINGTON'S ARMY LOCATED ABOVE CHATTERTON HILL.
> ERECTED BY CONGRESS, MAY 18TH, 1926.



Mr. Charles H. Tibbits, Chairman of the General Committee on Markers, found this most appropriate Marker on Mount Misery.

The Revolutionary cannon resting on the Marker was found in 1890 on the rear of the property of Henry T. Dykman's residence on Broadway opposite Lake Street, while excavating for a stable. (The Dykman estate is now the residence of Henry R. Barrett.)

This is the only ordnance in the form of a cannon of the days of 1776, ever found in White Plains. Mr. Dykman gave it to Mr. Irving W. Young, who, in turn, gave it to Mr. Floyd T. James. Mr. James sold this priceless reminder of the Revolution, bearing the date of 1774, to Mr. Francis Bannerman, a dealer in military goods in New York City.

The writer located the cannon on November 19th, 1925, securely fastened with bands of iron at the main entrance of the Bannerman building, 501 Broadway, New York. The bronze plate had probably been read by millions of people passing along this busy thoroughfare, where it had stood for upwards of twenty-six years. I at once took steps to discover if it were possible to restore the precious and rare cannon to White Plains, where it rightfully belonged. The first price asked was $2,500. Through the efforts and influence of friends, it was finally purchased for $1,000, the funds raised by private contribution.

INVOCATION

Rev. Frank H. Simmonds, M. A.

Rector of Grace Episcopal Church, White Plains, N. Y.

"O Almighty God, in whom we live and move and have our being, who art about our path and about our ways, and who knowest us in all that we are and all that we would be, we thank Thee for Thy gracious and ever merciful providence over this nation and people, for the blessings with which Thou hast surrounded us—blessings of life and liberty, and the pursuit of happiness.

"We thank Thee for such men as Washington, Lincoln, and numbers of others whose lives of faith and fidelity to the standards of righteousness laid foundation stones for nations yet unborn.

"We ask Thy blessing on our actions and purposes today. May this memorial be a reminder to all who behold it, of the priceless richness of the legacies of the past, and an incentive to true patriotism, perfect justice, and loyal liberty with sure self-discipline.

"May Thy ever abiding presence rest upon our city and its people, and bring us all to a more perfect knowledge of Thee: all which we ask in the name of Thy Son."

Mayor Frederick C. McLaughlin expressed his thanks to all who had aided in making possible the securing of the Federal Marker and the purchase of the Revolutionary cannon. In accepting the Congressional Commission, involving the official recognition of the battlefield, he emphasized what memorials of this character convey as a reminder of sacrifice and epoch-making incidents in the history of nations and of men.

ADDRESS OF CONGRESSMAN J. MAYHEW WAINWRIGHT

Presiding Officer at the Exercises

"We are gathered here today for a very worthy purpose. The occasion cannot fail to stir in our breasts emotions of a profoundly patriotic and moving nature.

"The height behind us is Chatterton Hill, the outpost position of the Revolutionary Army in the Battle of White Plains. Up that steep face the Hessians and British regulars climbed to the assault of the brave Continentals and militia who, after so gallant a defense, gave way only against superior numbers and the intense artillery fire of the British to which they could not reply.

"This marker with its appropriate description denotes the locality of one of the fiercest and most momentous engagements of the Revolutionary War. It is placed here by the War Department of our Government, pursuant to an Act of Congress, and through funds appropriated for the purpose. We meet here to dedicate it and two other markers now established by like authority. One, a tablet placed at the base of the old mortar on Broadway, or what was known as the Village Street of White Plains, officially marks the approximate center of the main line of battle and probably Washington's own position in the first stage of the Battle of White Plains. The third, back at North White Plains, indicates the final impregnable position to which Washington retired and in which Howe dared not to attack him.

"This marker here, as you see, is surmounted by an old cannon, one of the actual field pieces of Washington's artillery. It was found in a

field near the central position where it undoubtedly was in action during the battle. It was secured through the generous contributions of patriotic citizens of White Plains.

"This gathering is held under the auspices of the Westchester County Historical Society, one of our most useful, valuable and patriotic bodies. Not only the officers and a committee of that society, but the Mayor and other officials of the City of White Plains have cooperated and vastly assisted the officers of the Army, to whom the task of placing these markers was delegated in the selection of appropriate designs and locating them as intended by Congress. The Bronx Parkway Commission has worthily cooperated and sanctioned the placing of this marker on the Parkway at this point.

"On behalf of our citizenry generally, I wish to extend to the Secretary of War, through the Assistant Quartermaster General here present, our warm appreciation of the painstaking, patient and efficient manner in which they have cooperated with us in realizing the purpose of Congress, and I am sure I may be permitted also to voice the satisfaction and appreciation of our public at the devoted interest in this project displayed by the Historical Society and the public authorities concerned.

"In the battle of White Plains, undoubtedly two of the largest armies of the war faced each other and but for the great valor displayed by our troops here on Chatterton Hill and the resolute effort and wise disposition of the Army made by General Washington, the fate of the great struggle for liberty and independence might well have been sealed. In that the British Army drew away, it was indeed a victory—a strategic victory, to be sure—for the patriot arms.

"Inasmuch as these markers perpetuate for all time accurately and authoritatively the position, in this most historic battle, this occasion itself assumes a historic aspect, indeed, is one which will long last in the memories of each of us, privileged to be here today."

PRESENTATION ADDRESS

Charles Everett Moore

I am glad and proud to hear the Chairman accord to me even part of the credit for the completion of the White Plains Battlefield markers. But to Charles H. Tibbits, who sits here on the platform, is due the greatest share of the honor for the splendid result with which our work and waiting is crowned today. He gave, as he always does, unsparingly of his time, strength and judgment to this object. The apostle says, "Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels and have not charity, I am become as sounding brass or a tinkling cymbal." Charity here must mean loftiness of motive—and that quality is dominant in Mr. Tibbits' every act. What he does, what opinions he expresses—all are actuated by the

genuine wish to promote the welfare and happiness of the people of the City—to make the City a credit to its inhabitants.

Then there is John Rösch. How much of what is fine, happy and picturesque in the memories of our people, do we owe to John Rösch! The parade, the decorations, the enthusiasm here today are due to a great extent not only to his planning, but to the real physical carrying out of these plans by him. And a hundred and fifty years hence when the 300th anniversary of the Battle of White Plains is being celebrated, the name of John Rösch will still be remembered as instrumental in preserving and perpetuating the good and really enduring things in the life and history of White Plains.

We are met to dedicate to the public the three markers indicating the positions of our Revolutionary Army during the operation around White Plains. The battle, as such, was not, it is true, a great battle. But it was important. It was among the first battles in which the Revolutionary forces fought as the Army of the United States of America repelling a foreign foe instead of as rebellious subjects protecting their right not to be taxed without their consent. The Declaration of Independence had been signed on July 4th, and now George Washington commanded an army of a sovereign power, not merely an aggregation of insurgents. He was thoroughly defeated at Long Island. Prompt and aggressive measures by the British might have annihilated his forces. But Washington saved his army. Never mind its inexperience; never mind its fear; never mind its internal jealousies and military inefficiency. It was the United States Army. It was all the colonies had. It was all which stood between them and defeat. If the army was lost, independence was lost. And Washington saved his army—and his country's independence!

The Battle of White Plains was fought during the time when it was decided whether or not you and I were to be British subjects or American citizens. No great painting depicting the retreat of Washington's forces through Westchester, adorns the walls of the rotunda of the Capitol. Saratoga, Yorktown—crowning victories all—these are there. But the real victory whose anniversary we today commemorate was won when Washington snatched his army from the lion's mouth in those days. For disaster then meant disaster forever; and independence then meant independence forever. And the escape of the Continental Army from New York, the action on Chatterton Hill, and the rapid entrenchment after the battle—all these took place near this spot and all these were links in the great chain of the great strategy of the Great Commander. For after White Plains came the crossing of the Hudson into New Jersey, and the victories at Trenton and Princeton. Our battle was fought in October; and but two months later came Trenton, the most splendid and telling military achievement of the Father of his Country. For during the fall and winter of 1776, the colonial tide was at its lowest ebb. The people

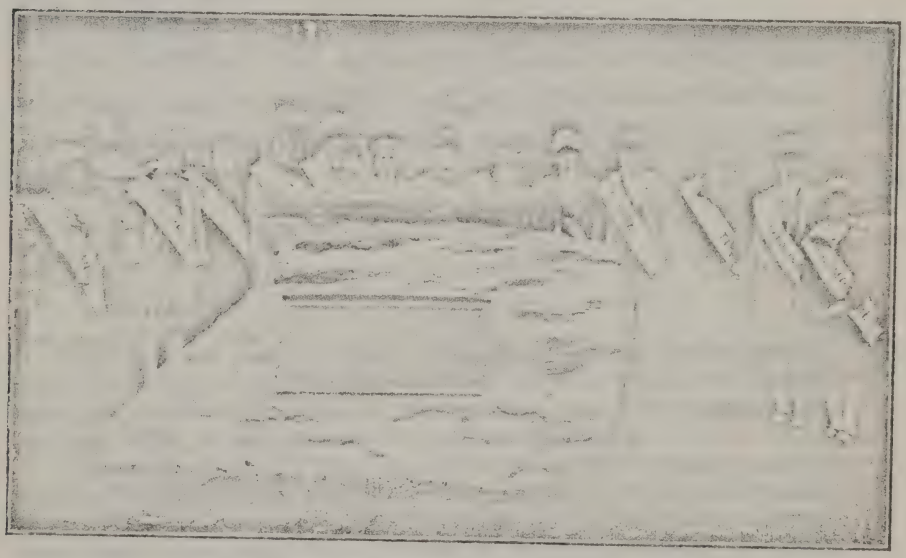
were discouraged and some disaffected. True, the army had not been swallowed up, but it had accomplished nothing positive. The British were overrunning New Jersey, driving the American troops before them. What, then, was the only thing which could bring back any confidence and keep American independence from being a lost cause? A victory. Some sort of a victory. Then George Washington showed his nobility of character. In a blinding storm of sleet he and his army crossed the Delaware, came upon Trenton and scooped up a thousand Hessians. Then came Princeton. The people took courage. They determined to fight and Europe began to consider American independence as a possibility. Washington's fame sprang into amazing prominence. The United States had really started.

These battles, all a part of that first fall and winter's operations, my friends, are the battles which won us our independence. These battles, this retreat, are the really great victories of the war; and the Battle of White Plains was a part of this series of operations. Washington here displays his greatest genius. And we have as a most convincing witness to the truth of this statement, no less illustrious a personage than Lord Cornwallis himself. He was the victim at Yorktown. He had every opportunity certainly to fully appreciate the masterly and adroit strategy of Washington in moving the patriot army South to besiege him in that place. But he also took part in the Jersey campaign; and his vigor, if not restrained by his superiors there, might have wrought much havoc among our troops. Let us see what he says. After the surrender at Yorktown, at a dinner to the American, French, and British Officers given by General Washington, Cornwallis said, when asked by Washington to respond to a toast, "When the illustrious part which Your Excellency has borne in this long and arduous struggle becomes a matter of history, fame will bring your highest laurels from the banks of the Delaware rather than from those of the Chesapeake."

Every Revolutionary Anniversary centers in one man—George Washington. Daniel Webster well said, "While the hundreds whom party excitement and temporary circumstances and casual combinations have raised to transient notoriety sink again bursting and dissolving like bubbles into the great ocean, Washington's fame is like the rock which bounds that ocean and at whose feet its billows are destined to break harmlessly forever." And some presnt day authors who seize upon the perfectly obvious fact that Washington was a human being and partook of the pastimes of his generation as a reason for lowering his name from the high pinnacle which it has so justly attained, would do well to commit these words to memory, and ponder well their meaning. The first words are almost prophetic. The great Englishman, Thackeray, said of him, "What magnanimity, what courtesy, what amazing persistence against fortune. His, indeed, was a fame without a blemish, a life without a stain."

Shall we, then, leave it to Englishmen to properly appraise the Father of our Country? Never. Let us rather join with old John Adams in saying, "May my right hand forget her cunning and my tongue cleave to the roof of my mouth if I hesitate or waver in the support which I give him." And let me say to all young Americans who may be listening—never let any such statements lessen in the slightest degree your respect, your reverence, for the great name of George Washington—still "first in war, first in peace and first in the hearts of his countrymen." And what better boon could we all ask than that his magnanimity, his courtesy, his persistence against fortune, and his lofty conception of the dignity of human character, may shine upon our hearts always, as the sun itself shone upon these valleys on that colorful October morning, a hundred and fifty years ago?

And now to whom shall we present these memorials? I can find no more appropriate words of presentation than those used in the habendum



UNVEILING OF REVOLUTIONARY CANNON
OCTOBER 28, 1927

New York—Dorothy Simmons
Massachusetts—Helen Garrison
Pennsylvania—Ruth Sowers
New Hampshire—Charlotte Nelson
South Carolina—Greta Buedingen
Georgia—Dorothy A. Sutherland
New Jersey—Patricia Coote
Delaware—Jeanette Franconi-Neif
Connecticut—Anna McKee
Maryland—Wilma Halbroth
North Carolina—Ellinor Seaman
Virginia—Katharine Blauvelt
Rhode Island—Lillian Fusillo

clause in the deed to the Trustees of the old Van Cortlandville Church; and I now present this memorial and the other two memorials erected on Broadway and North Castle Heights by the same Act of Congress, to the people of White Plains, "their heirs and successors, in trust for the neighborhood and the inhabitants round about, from generation to generation, forever."

At the conclusion of Mr. Moore's presentation address, the great White Plains Battle Flag, with its slogan: "Liberty or Death", was removed from the cannon and marker. At the moment of unveiling, the valley of the Bronx River and the heights of Chatterton Hill, echoed once again to the roar of artillery fire, a salute of thirteen guns being fired by a squad from the 102nd Ammunition Train from one of the Company's field pieces.

This field piece was stationed at the base of the Hill, from which one hundred and fifty years ago, Alexander Hamilton's battery had barked defiance to the enemy storming the heights from the valley.

DEDICATORY ADDRESS

HERBERT JUDSON WHITE, D. D.

Pastor of the First Baptist Church, White Plains, N. Y.

This occasion stirs my blood. This mute, but not inglorious, old cannon moves my heart. As one who had five ancestors in the Concord fight and others in Washington's Army, I find my spirit meeting with patriotic fervor the purpose which brings us here today.

The Battle of White Plains like that of Bunker Hill, while apparently a victory for the British, was really a vital stunning blow to the King's cause. We recall the story of the American girl in a London museum being shown some battle flags captured by the British during the Revolution. The guide, knowing her to be an American, proudly pointed to one much soiled and torn, and said, "that is a flag captured from your soldiers at Bunker Hill." "Yes," responded the young lady, "You have the flag but we have the hill."

The British army under Lord Howe marched up Post Road, through Scarsdale, October 28, 1776, just one hundred and fifty-one years ago today, and it may have captured Chatterton Hill, losing twice as many men as the Americans. He may have held the hill three or four very wet

days, waiting for reinforcements before attacking Washington again, but the Red Coats marched down the valley inside of a week really a beaten army and we have held the hill and the country ever since.

Why did not Howe follow up his Battle Hill victory? The answer is clear to all students of those memorable days. The British saw the heights of Dusenbury Hill yonder frowning with earthworks and cannon. Washington with consummate skill had made three lines of defense to stay the march of the British up the Hudson Valley. The first line was over Chatterton Hill. The second swept around Dusenbury Hill to Broadway. The third line encircled Castle Heights. The second line was stronger than the first and the third line was strongest of all. The plan was to cripple the British as much as possible at Battle Hill, then to retire to Dusenbury Heights, and all the while to concentrate the American forces on Castle Heights. The British were terribly smitten on Battle Hill, and the Americans slipped safely away to their second line—and this held the British in check.

Then by a masterly retreat to Castle Heights, Washington obtained an impregnable position, commanding all roads to the north. The British, feeling out the American lines on Dusenbury Hill, found them deserted for the stronger third line. Probably unable to move all his cannon to Castle Heights, Washington ordered the field pieces and perhaps others to be buried to prevent their capture by the British. When found, it is said, this cannon lay facing the west, facing the enemy. John Rösch tells us that it was found near Broadway near the Presbyterian Church. It was still on guard against the British. It was probably buried in the same position in which it stood.

It was one of the factors which saved America, for had Lord Howe's army captured Washington's army here, the British would have marched up the Hudson Valley and would have effected a union with the King's troops from Canada. Thus New England would have been cut off and Washington forced to surrender. The sacred cause of liberty would have been lost. But this cannon and others, manned by ragged, half-starved farmer boys, called soldiers, stood in the way of the proud Britishers' advance. The Red Coats faltered, stung by the withering fire of Chatterton Hill, they looked eastward to more difficult defenses—they lost heart, and they turned back toward New York. Washington's army was saved and the cause of liberty and independence was victorious!

The banner carried by the American Army that day was a white flag with the motto—"Liberty or Death" a liberty cap and sword crossed, as the emblem. While the battle was not great or long continued, it was vital. It proved Washington's skill as a commander. It also proved effectively the valor of our soldiers, at whom the trained soldiers of Europe had pointed their fingers of scorn.

Today we place this relic of those crucial days where thousands daily shall look upon it, and where generations shall find in it the symbol of the sacrifices of our fathers made for the liberties and the prosperity which today are ours. Precious was the blood of their sacrifice! Precious the heritage they won and gave to their children. Do we value that heritage in the terms of that sacrifice? Do we value it enough to preserve it unsullied and unmortgaged for our children?

At the close of the great pageant at Plymouth, Mass., on the occasion of the three hundredth anniversary of the landing of the Pilgrims, ten thousand people watched the great lights go out, leaving the arena dark with night. Suddenly a huge search light flung out upon the harbor beyond the Rock, brought out into a blaze of glory the Mayflower, the replica ship, swinging there at anchor. Then another light brought out a tall solitary figure of a man down beside the Rock. We thrilled as we recognized Abraham Lincoln, portrayed by a man of magnificent height and voice, and in the stillness, with the fairy ship yonder in the water, as if he had come back from the shadows to which the cowardly assassin's bullet had sent him—Lincoln spoke to us again of "government of the people—by the people and for the people" and he closed with the solemn exhortation "Ye Americans—this is your heritage. All you Americans. Do you maintain it."

During a great battle of the Civil war a regiment of Union troops were ordered to charge a Confederate fort. Up the slope they marched with a gigantic negro color bearer leading. He strode faster than the line, and when the order came to halt he failed to hear it, and marched on. Suddenly realizing that he was alone, he saw his young captain frantically waving his sword and calling to him to bring the colors back to the men. Planting the staff firmly there, he shouted back, "No, sir, these here colors don't go back. Bring the men up to the colors."

And so today this old cannon speaks again—not with the voice of thunder and death, but with the still small voice of valor and patriotism and sacrifice. "Bring the men of today up to the courage and nobility of the men who here gave their lives on the altars of freedom."

CHAPTER XXI

The Civil War

THE CIVIL WAR draft law was passed by Congress March 3, 1863. It seems to be agreed by authorities that of all the vague and halting legislation turned out by that body, this law was pre-eminent.

All married men from 20 years of age, and all unmarried men from 20 to 45, dating July 1, 1863, were made liable to draft. Anyone might purchase an exemption for $300, the government taking the money to hire a substitute, or, if the drafted man could persuade someone to serve for him for less than the $300, well and good. Mutual insurance societies were organized to protect their members against the need of $300.

The draft was made by quota, assigned to each district. Each enrollment form was rolled tightly in a rubber band and placed in a jury wheel. The drawing was then conducted along the general lines of a lottery, in the presence of the provost marshals. There was a separate drawing in each district, blind men being usually used to draw the names.

The first call under the draft was made July 6, 1863. The second October 17, 1863, and the third July 18, 1864. The following names were enrolled for the second draft in White Plains. Posters were put in the Post Office and in other public places:

List of Enrolled Persons in the 18th, Sub-District White Plains and Scarsdale, Westchester County, Tenth Congressional District, N. Y.

"Public notice is hereby given in accordance with Circular No. 101, Provost Marshal General's office, ordering that printed lists should be exposed in public places, that any person enrolled may appear before the Board and have his name stricken off the list, upon satisfactory showing

CHAPTER XXI

The Civil War

THE CIVIL WAR draft law was passed by Congress March 3, 1863. It seems to be agreed by authorities that of all the vague and halting legislation turned out by that body, this law was pre-eminent.

All married men from 20 years of age, and all unmarried men from 20 to 45, during July 1, 1863, were made liable to draft. Anyone might purchase an exemption for $300, the government taking the money to hire a substitute, or, if the drafted man could persuade someone to serve for him for less than the $300, well and good. Mutual insurance societies were organized to protect their members against the need of $300.

The draft was made by quota, assigned to each district. Each enrollment form was rolled tightly in a rubber band and placed in a jury wheel. The drawing was then conducted along the general lines of a lottery, in the presence of the proper marshals. There was a separate drawing in each district, blind men being usually used to draw the names.

The first call under the draft was made July 6, 1863. The second October 17, 1863, and the third July 18, 1864. The following names were enrolled for the second draft in White Plains. Posters were put in the Post Office and in other public places:

List of Enrolled Persons in the 16th, Sub-District White Plains and Scarsdale, Westchester County, Tenth Congressional District.

Public notice is hereby given in accordance with Circular No. 101, ... Adjutant General's office, ordering that printed lists should be exposed ..... places, that any person enrolled may appear before the Board ..... his name stricken off the list, upon satisfactory

that he is not and will not at the time fixed for the next draft, be liable to military duty on account of alienge, non-residence, unsuitableness of age or manifest permanent physical disability.

"Persons who may be cognizant of any other persons liable to military duty whose names do not appear on the enrollment list, are requested to notify the Board of Enrollment of such fact, that they may be properly enrolled.

"The Board of Enrollment will hear cases until the 20th of December, 1863, after which no cases will be heard."

First Class

Anrold, Lewis
Armstrong, F. A.
Archer, Wm. H.
Archer, Jr., Benj.
Archer, John C.

Second Class

Acton, Michael

First Class

Baldwin, Thadeus
Bell, Nehemiah
Barker, Wm. H.
Baldwin, Horace
Bancroft, Wm. H.
Buckout, Isaac
Brodie, John
Burk, James
Byrne, Thomas
Brodie, John
Burdell, Joshua
Breeksendoff, Rudolf
Bodie, Wm.
Benedict Hiram
Bell, John
Blake, Robert
Banta, John
Banta, Abraham
Brown, George
Boyd, Henry
Brown, Wm.
Bogart, T. G.
Bogart, Jacob V.
Byrns, R. H.
Burke, Edw.

Second Class

Benedict, Aaron S.
Brown, Robert M.
Boyd, Andrew
Baxter, Edw.
Barret, Michael
Blaksly, Hugh
Farnes, Andrew

First Class

Chipman, H. W.
Convert, W. N.
Crawford, G. R.
Crawford, Franklin
Crawford, John
Cannon, John
Ceyfas, John
Clark.
Carpenter, Wm. H.
Carpenter, Chas.
Carpenter, Jonathan
Cornell, Arthur
Cotman, Henry
Campbell, A. S.
Chipman, H. W.
Conner, John
Cameum, Wm. S.

Second Class

Clapp, John J.
Clark, Elisha C.
Cochran, Robert
Cameron, John I.
Crawford, S. H.
Cornell, Wm.

First Class

Dick, Enoch
Dick, Timothy
Devoe, Daniel
Dowd, Timothy
Dickerson, R.
Dumirs, Patrick
Draper, Gideon
Duffie, Thomas
Dobb, Peter
Drake, Charles
Dean, Moses W.
Dabell, J. G.
Devoe, Nelson
Daly, Anthony

Second Class

Deannan, D. C.
Deannan, Wm. H.
Donnelly, Francis
Dryden, John

First Class

Earl, Chas. H.
Ellis, John
Elder, Lewis
Earl, Charles H.

Second Class

Evans, Wm. H.

First Class

Farrell, Patrick
Ferris, Charles
Flandreau, Theo. F.
Finnigan, James
Fisher, R. Chauncey
Fitzgerald, Peter
Fitzgerald, Thomas
Fisher, John
Faile, Samuel
Fitzpatrick, Edw.
Ferris, Elisha P.
Field, Chas. H.

Second Class

Foster, John
Fisher, Edw. S.
Farkle, John

First Class

Griffen, Delos
Gedney, Montgomery
Gedney, Wm. H.
Griffen, James
Gibson, James Jr.
Gibson, John
Galiger, Dennis
Galiger, James
Gilligan, Murphy
Gilman, Wm. C.

Griffem, R. H. W. (?)
Garner, John
Galaim, Michael
Gorham, G. R.
Gwynne, A.

Second Class

Griffiths, Thos.
Groynne, W. H.

First Class

Hegan, Michael
Heustis, W. H.
Healy, John
Hodgson, John M.
Holley, John
Heron, Timothy
Horton, Jr., Elisha
Hatfield, Thos.
Higgins, Martin
Hodgson, V. N.
Hegan, P. R.
Hale, William
Hays, Richard
Heleter, J. L.
Healy, Daniel
Horton, Daniel
Horton, Wm. S.
Horton, A. I.
Howland, J. N.
Hosier, B. J.
Hill, D. F.
Hartman, F.
Holan, Cornelius

Second Class

Healy, M.
Hyatt, A. Jackson
Hyat, David
Hopper, Samuel
Horton, James
Hartnett, Wm.
How, Thomas
Hays, Dennis

First Class

Jenkins, J. P.
Jackson, G.
Johnson, Chas. H.
Johnson, Robt.
Jackson, Thomas
Jackson, Thomas
Kassen, Thomas
Kell, Henry
Kenedy, Terrence
Knapp, J. J.
Knapp, E. P.
Kilpatric, Thos.
Lorrilard, J. B.
Lyon, G. S.
Lockwood, J. C.
Leary, Michael
Lawrence, George
Lawrence, S.
Lyon, John
Lewis, Henry
Loyd, Edw.

Second Class

Lorrilard, Blace
Little, Dan'l H.
Leary, Timothy
Lye, Joseph
Lawrence, J. P.
Parkin, P.

First Class

Mead, A. J.
Marshall, S. S.
Miller, S. A. (?)
Moore, G. R.
Martine, F.
McCarthy, P.
Miller, P. P. S.
Moore, Geo.
Miller, Walter
Mahoney, N.
Millers, H. W.
Murphy, D.
Myers, John
Maxwell, Thomas
McCauly, E.
Mink, John
McDoay, Larry
Murphy, P.
Mead, Geo. H.
McCabe, J. D.

Second Class

Myers, John A.
Mille, Joseph T.
Morrow, Thos.
Miller, Wm. A.
Morgan, C. D.
Mitchell, Jacob
Mitchell, C. H.
Malone, Thomas.
McGrath, F. H.

First Class

Nickerson, Wm.
Nilan, Laurence

Second Class

Neely, Alexander

First Class

Ogden, Wm. T.
O'Rourke, Edw.
Ogden, Isaac
Onderdonk, E. C.

Second Class

Osborne, R. I.
Odell, Edw.
Olsen, Wm.

First Class

Palmer, Emory
Purdy, S. M.
Phair, James
Purdy, Elyster
Purdy, Livingston
Prime, R. C.
Purdy, Gabriel
Purdy, Jr., Thos. H.
Purdy, Richard
Palmer, J. F.
Powless, P. S.
Petinger, Elijah
Peck, L. S.
Prier, Thos.
Paulding, Hiram

Second Class

Purdy, Geo.
Pierson, Wm. M.
Pye, J. J.
Purdy, Robert

First Class

Quimbly, Egbert
Quinn, Michael
Ree, Livingston
Reeves, J. W.
Rowel, John M.
Ray, Elisha

Second Class

Romer,
Real, Patrick
Rumney, Theo. T.
Rice, James

First Class

Sullivan, Peter
Sutton, Benj.
Skelly, Patrick
Sheridan, Edw.

Sullivan, Dennis
Sniffen, H.
Schirmer, Edw.
Schmid, H. E.
Smith, Wm.
Smith, Benj.
Shampnois, Wm.
Silliman, Minot M.
Stevens, B.
Seymour, Wm. H.
Sweet, John A.
Smith, Anthony
Stuart, Chas.
Stuart, Sam'l
Sampson, Theo.
Seymour, H. H.

Second Class

Sleath, Edw.
Sherwood, Gil.
Sniffen, Brundage
Sniffen, Elliot H.
Strang, J. H.

First Class

Thompkins, J. S.
Tibbits, Chas. H.
Traynier, Reuben
Tompkins, Jr., A. C.
Traynier, Jas.
Tompkins, E. I.
Thomas, John
Tagg, Patrick
Taylor, A.
Thomas, Samuel

Second Class

Thompson, I. W.
Ullman, G. N.

First Class

Van Tassel, Bruce
Valentine, D. C.
Valentine, H.
Van Doran, Chris.
Wilson, H. M.
Wiegand, Chas.
Weber, Robt.
Wooley, John
Weed, Geo. B.
Ward, Egbert
Wood, Samuel
Wheeler, H. A.

Second Class

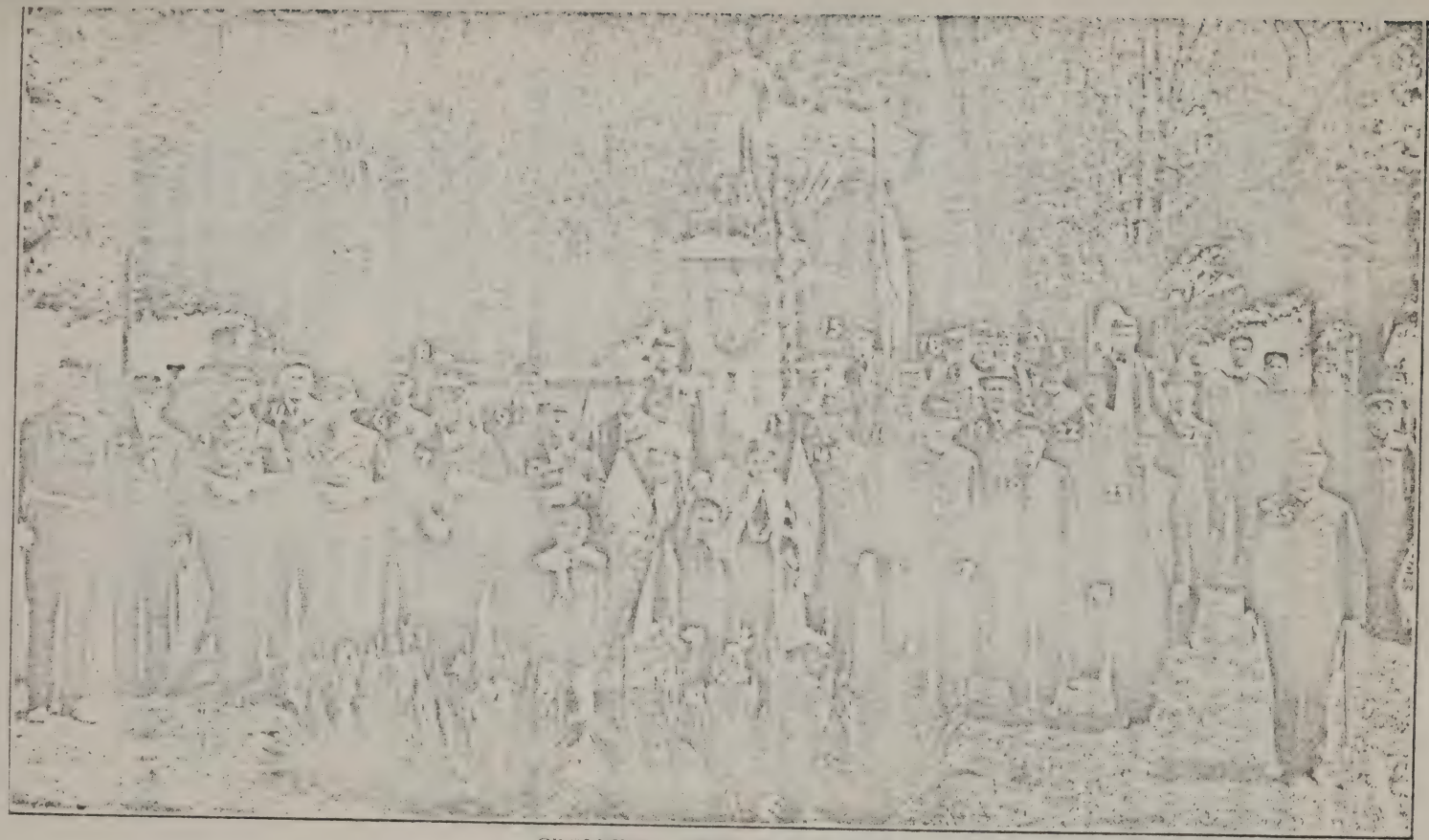
Willets, Geo.
Ward, Wm.
Wright, Jackson
Welch, Oliver
Ward, Cornelius B.
Walker, Alexander
Wesley, H. C.
Wood, H. P.
Wright, Wm.
Young, John W.
Yeams, Wm.

MOSES A. LEONARD, *Captain and Provost Marshal*
JAMES RYDER, *Commissioner*
JAMES B. UPHAM, M.D., *Surgeon*
Board of Enrollment, 10th District, N. Y.

RETURN OF CIVIL WAR VETERANS
Site, southeast corner Lexington Avenue and Main Street

When the War of the Rebellion closed, nearly a million Union soldiers stacked arms and resumed their places at the fireside. Immediately after this, the veterans residing in White Plains organized a Veteran Association, in 1866. The officers were:

Valentine M. Hodgson	*Commander*
John C. Verplanck	*Vice-Commander*
Edward W. Bogart	*Adjutant*
George W. Brown	*Officer of the Day*
David P. Barnes	*Sergeant*
Burlin H. Palmer	*Quartermaster*
Henry J. Williams	*Officer of the Guard*
James S. Snedeker	*Chaplain*
Richard Roach	*Inside Sentinel*
Charles W. Whitson	*Outside Sentinel*



CROMWELL POST, G. A. R., 1880

1. Edward B. Long
2. Valentine M. Hodgson
3. Webb Bogart
4. Eliott See
5. .....
6. Michael J. Cooney
7. .....
8. George Lewis
9. David Barnes
10. Charles Levines
11. James S. Snedeker
12. John C. Verplanck
13. Theodore Dean
14. .....
15. Edward Scofield
16. .....
17. A. D. Smith
18. Patrick McCarty
19. .....
20. John Parker
21. .....
22. .....
23. John Ferguson
24.
25. George W. Brown

This was continued until 1884, when a number of veterans petitioned General Ira M. Hedges, Department Commander, for a charter for a G. A. R. Post in White Plains. The petition was granted and Colonel James H. Jenkins of Farnsworth Post No. 170 of Mt. Vernon, was detailed to muster the soldiers into the Grand Army of the Republic, and install the officers.

At this time the Post was known as Wetzel Post, but as that name had been given to another Post, it was decided to name it Cromwell Post, after Major James Cromwell, who was killed at Gettysburg. The following were the first officers installed:

V. M. Hodgson	*Commander*
E. B. Long	*Sr. V. Commander*
J. C. Verplanck	*Jr. V. Commander*
George W. Brown	*Quartermaster*
J. A. Snedeker	*Chaplain*
B. H. Palmer	*Officer of the Day*
H. J. Williams	*Officer of the Guard*
D. P. Barnes	*Surgeon*
E. W. Bogart	*Adjutant*

The Charter was issued March 19th, 1884, and on April 3rd, was mustered in by Col. James H. Jenkins.

ORIGINAL MEMBERS OF CROMWELL POST, No. 466, G. A. R.

Chartered March 19th, 1884

Valentine M. Hodgson
John C. Verplanck
James S. Snedeker
Edward W. Bogart
Richard Roach
Henry J. Williams
Charles B. Whitson
J. Sidney Martin
Daniel W. Flandrow
James A. McCarty
Oscar Stephens
Thomas Rush
Edward B. Long
George W. Brown
Berlin H. Palmer
David P. Barnes
George Lewis
George W. Coventry
Robinson W. Smith
James H. Budway
Daniel W. Bogart
George H. Morse
Crawford N. Smith
(Father of former Mayor of White Plains)
Henry A. Maynard
John Lowery

The Soldiers Monument on Broadway was erected by the White Plains Veterans Association, and citizens. The former, with only limited means at its command, contributed to the $1,600.00 that had been voted by the town at the Spring election. This amount was secured only by the most persistent efforts on the part of the veterans and was won by a very small majority. A Committee composed of the Hon. E. G. Sutherland, Town Supervisor, Elisha P. Ferris, Village President and Captain V. M. Hodgson, entered into contract with the National Art Foundry of East 25th Street, New York City, for the erection of the monument.

J. Warren Tompkins, opposed to its location in front of his premises, secured an injunction from the Supreme Court of Brooklyn, to stop the placing of the memorial. This injunction was dated for July 1st.

Nearing midnight of the 1st, a number of the veterans, knowing of this injunction, proceeded to the hotel where the contractors were residing, and induced the men to accompany them at once, and to place the figure in its position. Several of the veterans carried their muskets with them—the same weapons that had served them on many a battle-field.

All went to work and at 2 A.M. the complete monument, under the brilliant blaze of a huge bonfire illuminating the village green, was placed and the objectors defeated. Incidentally, the bronze soldier's back was turned to the Tompkins home.

This monument was dedicated on July 4th, 1872, a large crowd attending the ceremony. Addresses were made by the Hon. Clarkson N. Potter, ex-Judge R. S. Hart and General Alexander Hamilton, the grandson of the Revolutionary hero.

However, Mr. Tompkins was not content and he instituted a suit for the removal of the monument, naming Elisha P.

HISTORIC WHITE PLAINS

The Soldiers Monument on Broadway was erected by the White Plains Veterans' Association, and therefore, The Commission, with only limited means at its command, contributed to the $1,600.00 that had been voted by the town at the Spring election. This amount was secured only by the most persistent efforts on the part of the veterans and was won by a very small majority. A Committee consisted of the Hon. E. G. Sutherland, Town Supervisor, Elisha P. Ferris, Village President and Captain [illegible] Hodgson entered into contract with the National Art Founders [illegible] 23th Street, New York City, for the erection of [illegible]

J. Warren Tompkins [illegible] moved to his location [illegible] front of his premises, secured in [illegible] from [illegible] Court of Brooklyn, to stay the action [illegible] injunction [illegible] was date for July [illegible]

Nearing midnight of [illegible] number of the veterans [illegible] knowing of this injunction proceeded to the hotel where the contractors were resting, [illegible] accompany them at once and to place the [illegible] in [illegible] position. Several of the veterans carried their muskets with them—the same weapons that had served them on many a battle-field.

All went to work and at 2 A.M. the complete monument, under the brilliant blaze of [illegible] bonfire illuminating the village green, was placed and the objectors defeated. Incidentally, the bronze soldier's hand was turned to the Tompkins home.

This monument was dedicated on July 4th, 1872, a large crowd attending the ceremony. Addresses were made by the Hon. Clarkson N. Potter, ex-Judge R. S. Hart and General Alexander Hamilton, the grandson of the Revolutionary hero.

However, Tompkins was not content and he instituted a suit for the removal of the monument, naming Hiram P.

Ferris and V. M. Hodgson in the action, which he claimed was an encroachment on his property. But the suit was dismissed by Judge Joseph H. Barnard, who decided that the monument was an ornament to the village.

Valentine M. Hodgson was born in New York City, December 23rd, 1836. He moved to White Plains in November 1837, attended Hamilton Military Academy, was first of cadets in 1852, and died January 22nd, 1921, in his 85th year.

Residing in White Plains in those early days, he recalled seeing the arrival of the first train on the Harlem Railroad. He served with distinction in the Civil War and was prominent in public and civic affairs in the old Village.

CHAPTER XXII

The Spanish-American War

ON APRIL 23rd, 1898, a Proclamation was issued by the President of the United States, for 125,000 volunteers. The White Plains men who served in the Cuban campaign are listed here:

James J. Morris
William Gorham
William N. Hart
David McKinley
James E. Goerke
Michael Ryan
Edward Wilson
Richard Morisey
Thomas Smyth
Thomas Cleary

In the Navy:

George Mallery
A. L. Squire
Charles Rowe
E. H. P. Squire
Thomas Le Valley
William P. Fiero Jr.

The roster of the White Plains men who enlisted in Company C of the 71st Regiment, New York Volunteers, follows:

Chester A. Bayles
Frank B. Denham
E. Howard Miller
Sterling B. Rowe
Albert E. Comstock
William H. Fish, 2nd
Walter Martin
Robert J. Roby, Jr
Samuel A. J. Walton
Edward C. Dunning
Thomas H. Fitzgerald
J. Avery Nathans
Charles E. Stahlin

On April 28th, orders were issued to the Regiment to assemble at the Armory, prepared to enter the U. S. Service. On May 2nd, 1898, the Regiment left Camp Black (located at Hempstead Plains, L. I.) On May 10th, the Regiment was mustered into the U. S. Service for two years, unless sooner discharged.

On May 12th, it broke camp and entrained for Long Island City, where it embarked on the Transport, "City of Washington", and the "Seneca", for New York Harbor, and then, by rail, to Lakeland, Florida, on May 17th. On May 31st the Regiment broke camp for Tampa Heights.

On June 8th camp was broken for the last time on U. S. soil. Embarking on the Transport "Vigilancia" the Regiment set sail on the 14th for Cuba. It was accompanied by 32 other Transports, all convoyed by a number of warships. Disembarked June 23rd. The next morning the Regiment was ordered to assist the Cavalry Division, commanded by General Fitzhugh Lee (of Civil War fame). It was during this engagement that Roosevelt's famous "Rough Riders" first came into spectacular prominence.

On June 27th, the Regiment camped overlooking Santiago, and on July 1st, 2nd, and 3rd, participated in what became known as "The Battle of San Juan Hill".

Up to this time the health of the Regiment had been comparatively good. The men were placed in trenches and kept there until the surrender, on July 17th. During this period, they contracted a devastating disease, typical of the tropics in the rainy season, which caused heavy sickness and death.

The 71st Regiment finally broke camp in Cuba, on August 11th, embarked for home the same day, August 11th, and saw the Island fade from view, from the decks of the Transports, the converted cruiser "St. Paul" and the "Grand Duchess". Montauk Point was reached on August 16th, and on the 29th, returned to New York City, where the men were mustered out of Service on the date of their discharge, November 15th, 1898.

The Casualties

Killed in action		12
Died of wounds received in action		3
Died of disease		81
Deaths from other causes		3
Total deaths		99
Wounded	67	

On June 8th camp was broken for the last time on U. S. soil. Embarking on the Transport "Yosemite" the Regiment set sail on the 14th for Cuba. It was accompanied by 32 other Transports, all convoyed by a number of warships. Disembarked June 22nd. The next morning the Regiment was ordered to assist the Cavalry Division, commanded by General Fitzhugh Lee (of Civil War fame). It was during this engagement that Roosevelt and his Rough Riders first came into spectacular prominence.

On June 27th, the Regiment [illegible] and on July 1st, 2nd and 3rd participated in what became known as "The Battle of San Juan Heights."

Up to this time the health [illegible] had been comparatively good. The men were [illegible] trenches and there until the surrender on July 17th. During this period they contracted a debilitating disease, typical of the tropics in the rainy season, which caused large numbers of sickness and death.

The 71st Regiment finally broke camp [illegible] Cuba, on August 11th, embarked for home the same [illegible] August 14th and saw the Island fade from view from the deck of the transport the converted cruiser "St. Paul" and the Cruiser Dodge. Montauk Point was reached on August 16th, and on the 1[illegible] returned to New York City, where the men were mustered out of Service on the date of their discharge, November 1st.

The Casualties

Killed in action	12
Died of wounds received in action	7
Died of disease	81
Deaths from other causes	[illegible]
Total deaths	[illegible]

In the General Hospital at Montauk Point Camp, L. I., Saturday, August 20th, 1898, Samuel J. Walton died from fever contracted in the U. S. service, as a member of the 71st Regiment, N. Y. Volunteers, during and following the campaign leading up to the taking of Santiago. His remains arrived here after midnight, November 22nd, in charge of Corporal Robert J. Roby and Richard Martin.

Memorable and Exciting Scenes

White Plains had been accustomed to many strange and exciting scenes and incidents for a suburban village, but not within the memory of its citizens had they witnessed a more solemn and impressive event than that which took place on Railroad Avenue (now Main Street) at 1:30 o'clock on the morning of November 23rd.

The people at large knew that death had at last entered the the ranks of the brave boys who had marched away to participate in the Cuban War. All had passed through the battle before El Caney and Santiago, but disease had at last conquered, in the Camp at Montauk Point, one of the youngest of the White Plains soldiers: Samuel J. Walton, the eldest son of Mr. and Mrs. William A. Walton.

He passed away on Saturday night, the 20th, unknown to his father, who, on Sunday morning, was en route to the Camp. It was not until he arrived there, that he learned of the death and burial of his son. The remains were disinterred and brought home accompanied by the aforementioned escort. The party was expected to arrive at midnight, but did not reach White Plains until 1:30 in the morning. Notwithstanding the late hour, at least four hundred people were present, gathered in a spirit of sadness.

In the General Hospital at Montauk Point Camp, L. I., Saturday, August 20th, 1898, Samuel J. Walton died from fever contracted in the U. S. service, as a member of the 71st Regiment, N. Y. Volunteers, during and following the campaign leading up to the taking of Santiago. His remains arrived here after midnight, November 22nd, in charge of Corporal Robert J. Roby and Richard Martin.

Memorable and Exciting Scenes

White Plains had been accustomed to many stirring and exciting scenes and inside us for a suburban village lies buried within the memory of its citizens had they witnessed a more solemn and impressive event than that which took place on Railroad Avenue from Main Street [illegible] o'clock on morning of November 23rd.

The people at large knew that death had at last entered the ranks of the brave boys who had marched away to participate in the Cuban War. All had passed through the battle before El Caney and Santiago, but disease had at last conquered, in the Camp at Montauk Point, one of the volunteers of the White Plains soldiers: Samuel J. Walton the oldest son of Mr. and Mrs. William A. Walton.

He passed away on Saturday night the 20th, unknown to his father, who, on Sunday morning, was en route to the Camp. It was not until he arrived there, that he learned of the death and burial of his son. The remains were disinterred and brought home accompanied by the aforementioned escort. The party was expected to arrive at midnight, but did not reach White Plains until 1:30 in the morning. Notwithstanding the late hour, at least four hundred people were present, gathered in a spirit of sadness.

The Fife and Drum Corps was at the depot, with muffled drums.

Village President Samuel C. Miller acted as spokesman. At his request, absolute silence prevailed as the train drew into the station, and the remains were tenderly transferred to Lockwood's funeral coach, while every head was bowed. Then it was that a most dramatic and impressive scene took place.

Headed by the Drum Corps, the hearse passed into Railroad Avenue, flanked on either side by the Guard, and followed, with uncovered heads, by village officials, the Junior Order of American Mechanics, and several hundred citizens. The march up the street began. The solemn drum-beat, the slow and silent tread of many feet, the funeral bier, the mourning cortege, the stillness of the grey, hushed dawn—all these brought uncontrollable tears from mothers, and from stern men, who saw, as the electric lights threw fantastic shadows, that black hearse and its marching followers proceeding to Grove Street, where the remains were officially guarded during the remaining hours of semi-darkness, before being transferred to the distraught family.

Thomas Clinton Le Valley enlisted in the Naval Reserve, on the U. S. Steamship "Yankee", November, 1897. He was one of the very first to respond to the call for volunteers. Sworn into service April 21st, 1898, he was assigned to the "Yankee" and was in the five engagements of that vessel, standing loyally at his gun, proving himself a most worthy member of that brave and gallant crew whose cup of happiness overflowed at the personal compliment bestowed on it by Admiral Sampson, after the bombardment of Calmanera.

Thomas Clinton Le Valley died on July 1st, 1898 of blood poisoning after an operation in the General Hospital at Key West, Florida.

SPANISH WAR MONUMENT

Thomas H. Fitzgerald died at Camp Wyckoff, September 13th, 1898, of illness contracted in the Santiago campaign.

The Spanish War Monument

This monument to the memory of the Spanish War Heroes was unveiled May 30th, 1908, on Dusenbury Hill. Addresses were made by Village President John J. Brown, Ambrose F. McCabe and William A. Woodworth. Inscribed on the bronze tablet are the words:

CUBA FREE, 1898

THOMAS C. LE VALLEY, U.S.S.S. Yankee
THOMAS H. FITZGERALD
SAMUEL WALTON
Co. C. 1st Regt. N. Y. Vol.

CHARLES W. VAIL
Co. E. 6th U.S.A.

LOUIS ISSENEGGER
Corp. Co. E. U. S. Vol.

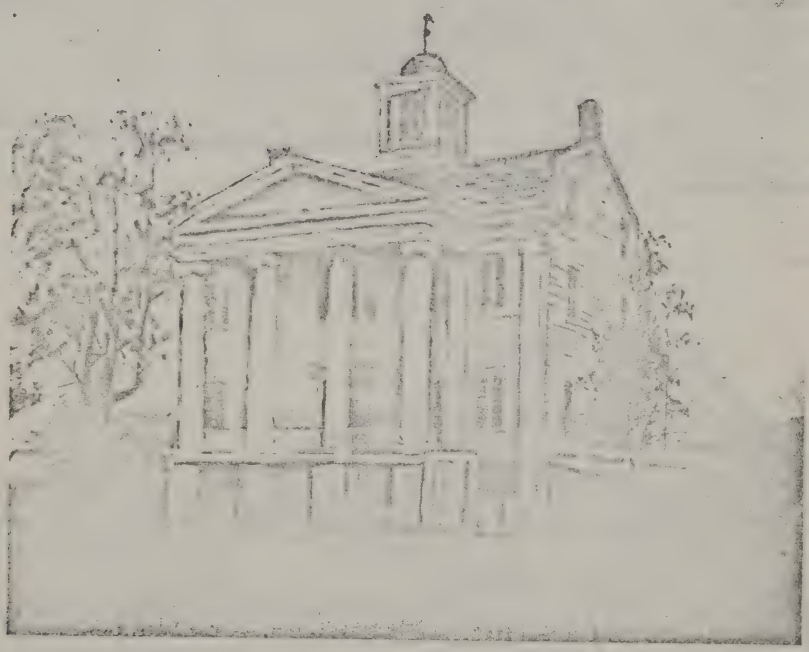
"Made Way for Liberty and Died"

ADDRESS BY WILLIAM A. WOODWORTH (in part)

"And now on this old camp ground, where in 1776, tented the bedraggled, discouraged Army of Revolutionary Patriots, on this hillside where they built their barricades by night and prepared to take their final stand in defense of their rights and their liberties, and looking across to yonder plain, where was bivouacked the proud, glittering array of British troops, elated with successes, confident of easy victory on the morrow—here under the same sky to which the calm soul of Washington lifted his eyes in unflinching faith, and saw the vision of his Country's Independence and Union, and by his prayers, moved the will of the Almighty to stay the hand of the invader and save the American cause.

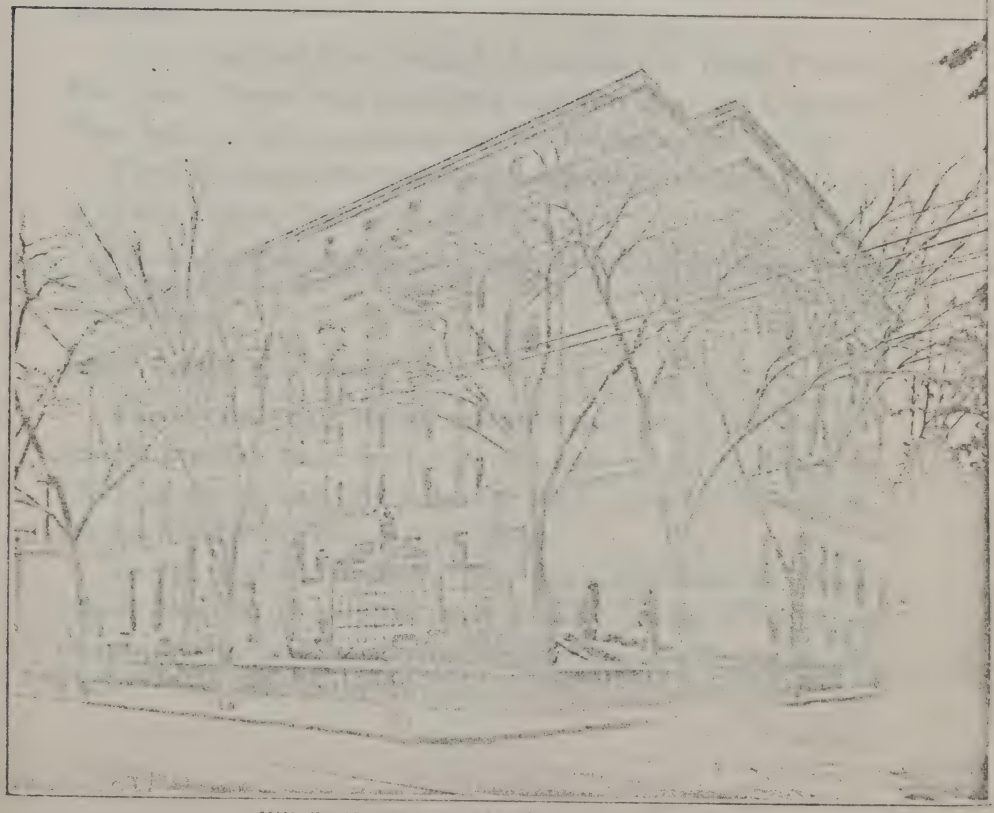
"On this Memorial Day, when North and South unite to decorate the graves of the brave men who fell in that terrific conflict of 1861 to 1865; a conflict which has made more perfect and lasting, the Union which the heroes of '76 fought to establish; we, citizens of this historic town, on this historic hill, on this historic day, in honor of the brave

boys who gave their services in 1898, not for themselves, not mainly for their country, but in a sublimer sacrifice, laid down their lives to recover the liberties of an oppressed and long-suffering race, not their own, in honor too, of their surviving comrades, who are with us today, we dedicate this monument, to tell the story of their sacrifice to all succeeding generations."



THE FOUNDATION AND JAIL OF FIRST COURT HOUSE BUILT IN 1759, AND SECOND COURT HOUSE BUILT ON SAME FOUNDATION

THIRD COURT HOUSE BUILT IN 1856



WESTCHESTER COUNTY COURT HOUSE
World War Honor Roll in foreground.

CHAPTER XXIII

Buildings of Civic Importance

WHEN the County was organized, the Courts were established in Westchester and were continued there until November 6th, 1759. The Court House at Westchester was destroyed by fire February 4th, 1758. By an Act of the Provincial Assembly, passed December 6th, 1758, the Justices and Supervisors were directed to select a new site for a Court House and an appropriation of 1000 pounds was provided to meet the expense of erecting a suitable building and furnishing the same.

It was decided that it should be located in White Plains. The Court House was completed and the Court of Common Pleas held its first session therein on November 7th, 1759.

The following is the first entry made upon convening Court in White Plains, November 7, 1759:

"The Court met according to adjournment at the Court House at the White Plains, November 7, 1759, Nathaniel Underhill, Gilbert Blumer, Esqs. Judges."

The Second Court House

The second Court House was built upon the same foundation and on the same lines of architecture as the first one, in 1786, on the ground of the present State Armory. It stood at the approximate center of the Village.

To Dr. Robert Graham, who was supervisor of White Plains from 1769 to 1775, and County Judge in 1778, is mainly due the credit of having White Plains fixed upon as the County Seat, the Court building erected and the Courts re-

moved from the village of Westchester. He gave the County the site upon which the Court House was built. These important efforts were ably seconded by John Thomas of Rye, who was then a member of the Colonial Assembly."

(From Henry T. Price's Manual of Westchester County, Past and Present)

Robert Graham was a deputy to the Provincial Convention held in New York April 20, 1775, and deputy to the first and second Provincial Congress in 1775 and 1776. He served as a member of the Assembly in the twenty-fourth session, 1800 and 1801. Robert Graham was the first to fill the office of "First" Judge of the Court of Common Pleas of the County appointed in February, 1778. This court, it appears, was first presided over by John Pell of Pellham, who was appointed August 25, 1688.

Text of the Deed to the First
County Court House Site in White Plains

To all Christian People to whom these presents shall come, I Robert Graham of the White Plains in the County of Westchester and Province of New York[,] Doctor of Phys'ck[,] send greeting. Know ye that for divers good causes, but ffor and in consideration (in a more special manner) of the good will, which I have and do bear, unto the inhabitants of the said County of Westchester and for their ease benefit and advantage Have and by these presents absolutely do, give, grant, assign, release, transferr, set over, appropriate, convey, and confirm, unto John Thomas Esqr. of Rye in the County of Westchester aforesaid and to his assigns, in Trust, and to and ffor the uses here'nafter mentioned, All That one half acre of land being part of my lot, where I now dwell . . . . . .

In witness whereof I have hereunto Set my
Thirty Second Year of his Majestys Reign &c.

R. Graham

Mr. Josiah Mitchell, in Scharf's History of Westchester County, relating to White Plains says that, "In the last year of this decade there came to this town from Woodbury, Connecticut, Dr. Robert Graham, a young physician of genius and enterprise, son of the Rev. John Graham, a Scotch clergyman, who was himself the son of the Marquises of Montrose. Dr. Graham in 1749 purchased the farm on which Samuel Faile now lives (1886) (at present the property of the Society of the New York Hospital). He at once became interested in the welfare of the town, and for some thirty years was the ruling spirit in all matters of public interest. His energy, enterprise and learning, inspiring the people with new vigor, soon raised White Plains to prominence in the country."

Now came the Harlem Railroad, up the Bronx Valley and with it a complete transformation of the County Seat. The Harlem Division began operating in 1844.

Slowly but surely White Plains turned towards the railroad, on a beaten path (literally an old "cowpath") that left Broadway where it now intersects Main Street. Some enterprising citizen had placed a board along this route, with the word "Railroad" lettered on it, and with a hand pointing in the direction of the Depot.

And so the townsfolk followed the line of least resistance from Broadway west, through the hollow and marsh ground between Brookfield and William Streets.

In the early "Fifties", Charles A. Purdy made certain of the future of Railroad Avenue, and did much to make certain a greater Tomorrow for White Plains.

There was talk of moving the Court House and County Seat elsewhere. Mr. Purdy wanted it to remain here, and a great deal of our growth and present prosperous condition can be traced to the fact that this remained the County Seat. He

Mr. Josiah Mitchell, in Scharf's History of Westchester County, relating to White Plains says that "In the last years of this decade there came to this town from Woodbury, Connecticut, Dr. Robert Graham, a young physician of genius and enterprise, son of the Rev. John Graham, a Scotch clergyman who was himself the son of the Marquiss of Montrose. Dr. Graham in 1740 purchased the [illegible] which Samuel Fraile now lives [illegible] at [illegible] room of the Society of the New York Hospital [illegible] the welfare o[illegible] ruling spirit [illegible] He [illegible] prac[illegible] and [illegible] in [illegible] White [illegible] Va[illegible] [illegible] on [illegible]

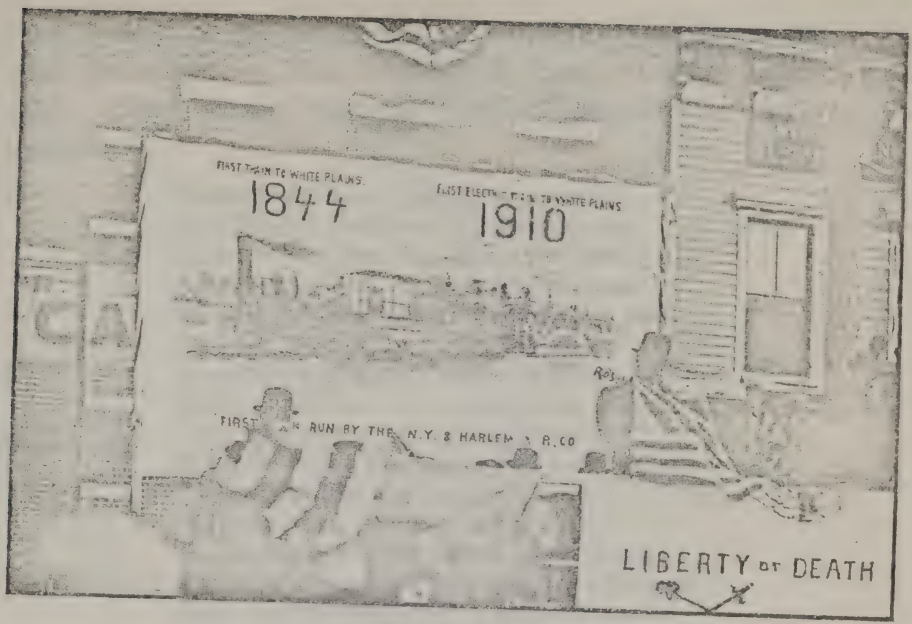
Harlem Division —

Slowly but from White [illegible] rails road on a beaten [illegible] Broadway where it pon[illegible] presents the [illegible] prising citizen had [illegible] road "Railroad" [illegible] in the direction of the Depot.

And so the [illegible] to [illegible] from Broadway west, through the [illegible] between Brookfield and Hartman Streets.

In the early [illegible] made certain of the future of Railroad Avenue and did much to make certain a greater Tomorrow for White Plains.

There was talk of moving the County Hall-and County Seat elsewhere. Mr. Purdy wanted it to remain here, and a great deal of our growth and present prosperous condition can be traced to the fact that this remained the County Seat. He



Arrival of First Train, 1844. First Electric Train, 1910

wanted the Court House to be on Railroad Avenue, now Main Street, for he foresaw that South Broadway was fast passing from the stage as the real center of the Old Town. He was owner of the land facing Main Street on the south, from Mamaroneck Avenue, west near "Rabbit Street" (now Brookfield Street) and running back to Martine Avenue.

Mr. Purdy presented to the County the square block, from Grand Street to Court Street, and from Railroad Avenue to Martine Avenue — a generous gift indeed. It was accepted by the County in 1855.

Construction was at once begun on this, the third Court House erected in White Plains. It was finished in 1857, and stood until it became outgrown, when the present structure, the fourth, was built on its site. The following verses were copied

from the wall in the Death Cell of the Old Court House, on South Broadway, by Miss Elizabeth E. Farr, a teacher in our public school, under Principal Joseph Thompson, in 1867-1874:—

"On my right hand, a group of jurors sat,
And listened sometimes to a lawyers chat.
When he had done, an ugly negro came,
A Portuguese and Andrews was his name.
He listened to an oath, then kissed the book
And told his story with a savage look.
It makes the blood, within my veins run cold,
To hear such lies and contradictions, told;
Then 2 men came up and under oath
Made the first a liar, or else they are liars both.
The lawyers then for such men as me
Made speeches, eloquent exceedingly,
But having down they took a softer strain,
Forgot their rage and were good friends again.
Last was the Judge, with a magnetic air,
And as he pleased, discussed the whole affair.
He told the jury to enforce the law,
And permit some to keep the rest in awe.
The obedient jury to the room retired,
And found a verdict, as the Judge desired,
So I was done for, poor miserable sinner,
While the Court adjourned and went to dinner."

Miss Farr, who married Mr. William A. Walton, was the mother of Samuel J. Walton, who died in the U. S. service, as a member of the 71st Regiment, N. Y., in the Spanish-American conflict. Mrs. Lewis C. Depew of 90 Waller Avenue, a sister of Samuel, kindly furnished me with the above information.

It is interesting to know that Aaron Burr frequently tried cases in the Courts here, between 1785 and 1794, and that Alexander Hamilton, his distinguished political opponent, did the same during this period.

KEY TO JAIL 1776

One-half size. Original key now in possession of Caleb Wildy, Valhalla, N. Y.

Minutes, Court of Common Pleas 1774 to 1793
County Clerk's Office

The minutes of the courts under the British Crown led up to May 20, 1776, when they ended abruptly during the Revolutionary period. White Plains was a war zone. The Court House having been burned to the ground, the Courts alternately met in Bedford and North Salem. The assumption is that the records recently discovered by Harold Mercer, the County Clerk, were removed to Bedford for safety during the

period of the Revolution, between May 22, 1776 and May 26, 1778.

The delegates of the United American States in general Congress convened in consequence of the many tyrannical and oppressive usurpations of Great Britain on the rights and liberties of the people of America, having for the preservation of their lives, liberties and properties solemnly on the fourth day of July 1776 declared the said declaration of Congress and the separation thereby of America from Great Britain have been unanimously approved of in a convention of the representatives of this State, all power whatever exercised under the Crown of Great Britain over the people of this State reverted thereby to the people thereof, and this convention did by their suffrages, free choice and authority, institute and establish a constitution and government for this State, which constitution and government was fully organized by laws of the Legislature under the said constitution and courts of record instituted and established throughout this State: whereby the following courts were held in this county, viz:

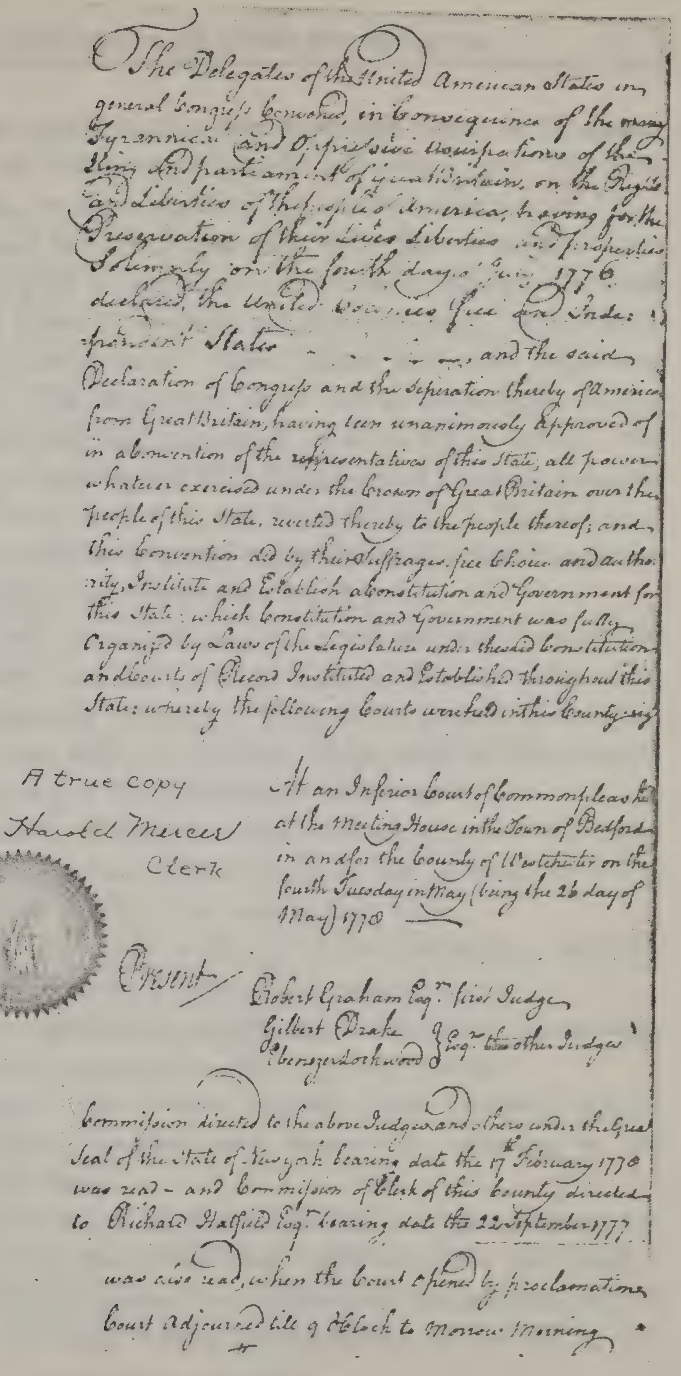
> At an inferior Court of Commonpleas held at the meeting house in the Town of Bedford in and for the County of Westchester, on the fourth Tuesday in May, being the 26th day of May, 1778—

Present,

Robert Graham, Esq., first judge
Gilbert Drake
Ebenezer Lockwood
Esqs., other judges

Commission directed to the above judges and others under the Great Seal of the State of New York bearing the date the 17th of February 1778 was read, and commission of the Clerk of this County directed to Richard Hatfield, Esq., bearing the date the 22nd of September 1777 was also read when the court opened by proclamation.

The Court of Common Pleas, a Civil Court, convened at Bedford, Westchester County of New York State on the twenty-sixth day of May, 1778, with three judges present. Upon convening, the Clerk of the Court read the following proclamation:



The Delegates of the United American States in general Congress Convened, in Consequence of the many Tyrannical and Oppressive usurpations of the King and parliament of Great Britain, on the Rights and Liberties of the people of America, having for the Preservation of their Lives Liberties and properties Solemnly on the fourth day of July 1776 declared the United Colonies free and Independent States - - - - - , and the said Declaration of Congress and the seperation thereby of America from Great Britain, having been unanimously approved of in a Convention of the representatives of this State, all power whatever exercised under the Crown of Great Britain over the people of this State, reverted thereby to the people thereof; and this Convention did by their Suffrages, free Choice and authority, Institute and Establish a Constitution and Government for this State: which Constitution and Government was fully Organized by Laws of the Legislature under the said Constitution and Courts of Record Instituted and Established throughout this State: whereby the following Courts were held in this County, viz

A true copy
Harold Mercer
Clerk

At an Inferior Court of Common pleas held at the Meeting House in the Town of Bedford in and for the County of Westchester on the fourth Tuesday in May (being the 26 day of May) 1778

Present
Robert Graham Esqr. first Judge
Gilbert Drake
Ebenezer Lockwood } Esqrs. the other Judges

Commission directed to the above Judges and others under the Great Seal of the State of New york bearing date the 17th February 1778 was read - and Commission of Clerk of this County directed to Richard Hatfield Esqr. bearing date the 22 September 1777 was also read, when the Court opened by proclamation

Court Adjourned till 9 O'Clock to Morrow Morning

Minutes Court of Common Pleas. 1774 to 1795

After the proclamation was read, the Court of Common Pleas, a Civil Court, immediately adjourned, and the same judges again, on the same day, the twenty-sixth day of May, 1778, mounted the bench and took with them nine other laymen who sat with these judges— thirteen in all, and convened the Court of General Sessions, a Criminal Court. Apparently Civil actions could wait. These judges had more important work to do. The important work was to investigate, indict, and try those who had remained loyal to Great Britain, the Tories, and to accomplish this, the Court of General Sessions did, on the very first day, the 26th of May, 1778, impanel a Grand Jury of nineteen men, and on that day, the first judge, Robert Graham, did charge the Grand Jury.

The records show that they were sent out with a constable to attend them, and the Court of General Sessions adjourned until the following morning. That is the record of the first Criminal Court and Grand Jury to be held in this County after the signing of the Declaration of Independence.

The Records of the proceedings of the Court of Common Pleas shows no actual adjournment of the tribunal in 1776, despite the fact that the case entries halt there.

Evidently the clerk in charge of the proceedings in 1776 did not know when the Court would convene again.

This jury handed up indictments for treason against dozens of the most prominent residents of the County.

Indictments were leveled against entire families, wives, mothers, fathers, brothers and sisters, for adhering to the enemies of the State.

On the first pages of the Grand Jury's "presentments for treason" we find the Grand Jury delivered into the Court a bill of indictment against the defendants for adhering to the enemies of the State, taken in pursuance of the Act of the

Legislature of this State, entitled, an act for the forfeiture and sale of the Estates.

Dispositions Missing

Unfortunately the first Oyer and Terminer records yet discovered in the County, which contain the disposition of the cases in other courts, is dated 1853.

Therefore there is no record of what happened to those persons indicted for treason.

Richard Hatfield was born in White Plains November 3, 1750. Died November 2, 1813. Buried in the Presbyterian cemetery on Broadway. He was County Clerk from 1777 to 1800, and Secretary to Governor Clinton during the Revolution. Major Hatfield, as he was called, was Surrogate of the County from 1778 to 1787. He was Commissioner of Forfeiture in 1783; member of the New York convention from Westchester County for deliberating on the adoption of the Constitution of the United States assembled in Poughkeepsie on June 17, 1788; Secretary to the Commissioners of Conspiracies, and State Senator; also Trustee of the Presbyterian Church in White Plains.

Richard Hatfield purchased land in 1784 bounded by Scarsdale line and the Bronx River on the East Chester Road, 54 acres, and one of 74 acres. Register's Office Libra K, page 95.

Records in the old Episcopal Cemetery on Broadway: Abraham Hatfield, born Dec. 28, 1720; died Nov. 26, 1775. (The owner of the Tavern.) Gilbert Hatfield, son of Abraham, born Jan. 21, 1746, died Oct. 6, 1829. Capt. Joseph Hatfield, son of Abraham, born May 7, 1766, died July 24, 1837. Capt. Joseph was sheriff of Westchester County in 1807, and Captain of the Westchester County Militia in 1789.

New Municipal Building Proposed in 1885

Because of the ever-increasing rental expenses and to stop a drain upon the contingent account of the Board of Trustees, Mr. Charles H. Tibbits, on October 12th, 1885, moved that the President of the Village appoint three citizens, and three firemen, a committee to consider "the expediency of erecting a building for general village purposes".

Trustees C. H. Tibbits, J. H. McArdle and Wm. Sutton; citizens D. Cromwell, Wm. Reynolds Brown and E. Schirmer; and firemen Stephen W. Smith, John Emberson and Martin O'Rourke, comprising this committee, unanimously reported in favor of erecting a $30,000 brick structure.

The site selected was the southwest corner of Mamaroneck Avenue and Main Street. This site, with Mamaroneck Avenue frontage extending back and including a small building, was offered to the village by the owner, Mr. James Gibson, for $6,000.

The architect's drawing, which was on display in the Trustees' rooms on Grand Street, provided for the housing of the Board of Trustees, the various civic offices, a Court Room, quarters for the Fire Department Headquarters and a Hall of sufficient capacity to seat 800 people. The cost was set at $30,000.00, plus the plot cost of $6,000.00, making the modest total cost $36,000.00. The present assessed value of the land alone is $433,000.00.

That the Commitee's range of consultation did not extend far enough was soon evident, even before the essential taxpayers' petition to the Board, asking that body to call a special meeting of the inhabitants to vote on the proposition, had received one-sixth the necessary signatures. An oppo-

sition scheme arose, favoring a $12,000.00 Village building, and was put in circulation.

It was contemplated to erect this building upon the southwest corner of Hamilton and Lexington Avenues, which precipitated one of the liveliest local fights in White Plains for many years on a question of public improvement.

Mr. Tibbits headed those who favored the $36,000.00 proposition, while Mr. E. B. Long championed the $12,000.00 building. Mr. Long and his followers denounced the first suggestion as extravagance of an unnecessary magnitude, a luxury and a burden on the taxpayers, while those who fought for it said that it was a "necessity".

In Lafayette Hall, where the decisive meeting convened on the night of January 4th, 1886, a lively debate preceded the balloting. Messrs. Long, Hopper, Clowe, Powell, Reed, Lyon and Albro took sides against the $36,000.00 proposition.

Mr. Charles H. Tibbits delivered an address in behalf of the recommendation of his constituents and a ballot was taken. Both propositions were defeated. On the $36,000.00 question the vote stood: For 52, against 78. And on the $12,000.00 plan: For 42, against 75.

Cost of Present City Hall

Cost of Building	$363,000.00
Present assessed valuation of the land, 231 feet on Main Street	467,[illegible]00

Carlyon Arms Hotel

The destruction of this once famous hostelry, named after a famous Inn in London, England, is regrettable. The old Hotel stood diagonally opposite the State Armory on Broadway, and was built on the site of the Miles Oakley Tavern,

the establishment that played so large a part in the pioneer days of American history.

Mr. Harry L. Johnson of White Plains says that he was employed for three years by Mr. Disbrow, the owner, to remove the "fill" in the subterranean passages beneath the cellar floor of this building. The tunnels were eight in number, leading from what he called a "Marker". They had evidently been filled-in at a later date.

One of the passages, running northeast and southwest, through the position of the marker, adjoined a well. It was necessary to brace its crumbling walls during the excavation work, and at the bottom there was found, at a depth of over one hundred feet, a slab of stone extending beyond both sides of the well. This stone could not be removed. It had been painted a brilliant red with metallic color that held its lustre, when cleaned, even after all these years. The crude drawing of a hand on its surface pointed to the south was clearly visible. But the excavator, Mr. Johnson, could not decipher the strange hieroglyphics.

Another tunnel led to the west, under the present roadbed of Broadway. It passed through a subterranean chamber, wherein was found a block of wood, cut from a tree trunk, three feet in diameter, together with time-faded parchments that disintegrated when brought up into the air and light. Some of the tunnels were fifty feet below the cellar floor. The one leading to the south ran beneath a neighbor's property, while the one leading to the east, was no less than fifty feet in length. Mr. Johnson states that a number of electric light bulbs and twelve hundred feet of electric cable were left there by him, on the completion of his work. There are no records to show for what purpose such strange underground passages were used, or when they were used.

The Miles Oakley Tavern, which occupied the ground where the Carlyon Arms Hotel originally stood, was the rallying place of the Patriots, then known as "Rebels", and it is easily understandable that secret places of meeting might be desirable. The subterranean passages probably date back to that era. It was in the Oakley Tavern that those favoring the American cause met at the time of the great convention in April, 1775, called for the purpose of electing a second Congress.

The destruction by fire of the Tavern was an incident of the burning of the Village of White Plains. These premises formed a part of a northwesterly corner of a farm of about 51 acres owned by John Valentine and Isaac Valentine in the year 1825.

The Valentine heirs conveyed to James Crawford, in 1826, Lib. 44, deeds page 33. James Crawford conducted a hotel on the same premises. The front foundation, built on a line with the sidewalk, featured an overhanging porch, and sheltered the mail coaches that carried mail from New York City to Boston. This second place burned down in 1851. Mr. Crawford died in 1855.

Mr. Jay Crawford, son of Stephen Crawford, was born in 1849 and is today the oldest living man in White Plains, born here and always making a home here. Jay Crawford, while a baby in a cradle with his sister, was rescued from the upper floors of the burning house in 1851.

The Village Park Association

The first meeting of the Village Park Association was held on July 6th, 1898, and on July 20th, the first officers were elected, as follows: President, Dr. O. D. Kingsley; Vice-President, William A. Woodworth; Secretary, Frederick S.

Barnum; Treasurer, R. A. Kutschbach, with Charles H. Tibbits as Chairman of the Executive Committee.

The object of the Association was most worthy: to beautify the City. Unfortunately, the Association had no power, nor authority, until October, 1899, when the Trustees

Mortar found on the west side of Broadway, midway between sidewalk and street curb, opposite Good Counsel College. Later placed on marker of Washington's first line of entrenchments.

of the Village gave it control of Broadway Park—without an appropriation for the carrying out of any plans or work.

Nothing daunted the ardent citizens, though few in number, soon raised a fund of $500, and with this limited sum, operations were started and were rewarded by wide, popular approval.

Broadway, now Tibbits Park, in the early seventies was a pasture field for cattle; a dumping-ground for refuse of all kinds. With a vision of what is now a reality, the small group

of public-spirited men and women, realized the possibilities of the future, and, on March 23rd, 1906, it was voted to incorporate the Association under the name: "The White Plains Park Association."

To Mr. Charles H. Tibbits, great honor and credit should be given, for due to his untiring efforts and deep personal interest, the present Broadway of flowers and shrubs and carefully cared-for trees has been made possible. Year after year, improvements and additions have been made, and this area is now landscaped in such a manner as to win the praise of both citizens and visitors alike. In all likelihood, Broadway's artistic charm would never have attained such professional perfection, had it not been for Mr. Tibbits' zeal, which never for a moment flagged. It is indeed a fitting memorial to the man who gave so unstintingly of his time, money, knowledge and energy.

Unveiling the North Broadway Marker

With appropriate ceremonies, on Tuesday, October 13th, 1906, the Village Park Association placed a tablet to mark the first line of breastworks of General Washington's troops during the Battle of White Plains, October 28th, 1776.

Dr. O. D. Kingsley, President of the Association, presided and after a brief address, he turned the exercises over to Mr. Charles H. Tibbits, who then presented the marker to the City.

Mr. John J. Brown, the Village President, accepted the same on behalf of White Plains. Dr. H. Ernest Schmid, President of the Westchester County Historical Society, also made a short address, and was followed by Mrs. Henry Powell, Regent of the White Plains Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution.

SCENE AT DEDICATION OF MORTAR ON NORTH BROADWAY, OCTOBER 13, 1906

The unveiling was by Miss Hazel Paulding and Miss Edna Van Wart, lineal descendants of the captors of Major Andre.

245

The tablet bears this inscription:

> "This mortar and remnant of the Revolutionary entrenchments of October 1776, mark the final stand by General Washington, at the end of his long retreat. The abandonment by General Howe of his purpose to capture the American Army and the revival of the hopes of National Independence."

The unveiling was performed by Miss Hazel Paulding and Miss Edna Van Wart, lineal descendants of the captors of Major Andre.

CHAPTER XXIV

Birthplace of the State of New York

ON THE 10th day of July, 1776, the following resolution was adopted by the Provincial Congress:

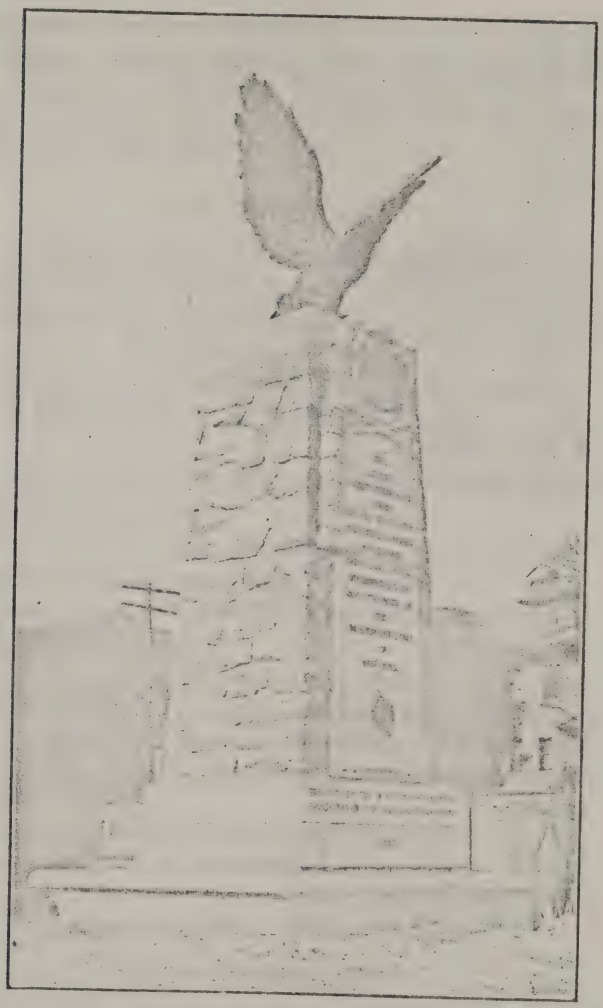
> "Resolved and ordered, that the style or title of this House be changed from that of 'The Provincial Congress of the Colony of New York', to that of 'The Convention of the Representatives of the State of New York'."

This is the first time the designation: "State of New York" was officially used, and the passage of the resolution properly marks the birth of the State. And the historical city of White Plains enjoys the distinction of being the birthplace of the great Empire State.

The monument erected by the White Plains Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution, to commemorate and perpetuate the spot where the State of New York was given birth, has been dedicated in such a masterful manner by the speakers of that day in words that reflect the glory of our past, that a chapter is justly devoted to the ceremonies.

This noble shaft was presented by Mrs. Freeman H. Merritt, Regent, on the 14th of June, 1910, and accepted by Attorney General O'Malley in behalf of Governor Charles E. Hughes on behalf of the State of New York, under imposing circumstances in the presence of several thousand spectators.

The monument stands on the site of the old Court House building, where the present State Armory is located. It was from the steps of this ancient building that the Declaration of



DEDICATED JUNE 14, 1910

Independence was first read in the state, three days after the original reading in Philadelphia. The stones used in the shaft, were taken from the foundation of the first Court House, erected in 1759. Those forming the walk leading to and around the monument formed the partitions of the prison walls which were under the building.

THE PROGRAM

INVOCATION by the Chaplain, Dr. Frederick B. Van Kleeck

CHORUS—Kellers American Hymn

ADDRESS OF WELCOME AND PRESENTATION TO THE STATE by the Regent, Mrs. Freeman H. Merritt

MUSIC—Daughters of American Revolution March—*Sampe.*

UNVEILING OF MONUMENT—Miss Dorothy Weed and Master Fitch Ingersoll

ACCEPTANCE—Hon. Edward R. O'Malley, State Attorney General

MUSIC—Selections from *Faust.*

ADDRESS—Mrs. James S. Wood, State Regent

ADDRESS—Supreme Court Justice Isaac N. Mills

PRESENTATION OF FLAG TO COMPANY L. by the Regent

MUSIC—Star Spangled Banner

ACCEPTANCE OF FLAG—Captain Ralph M. Glover

GREETINGS—Mrs. William Cummings Storey, Honorary State Regent, Daughters of American Revolution and Mr. William A. Marble, National President General, Sons of the American Revolution.

CHORUS—"America", School Children and Audience

BENEDICTION—Chaplain, Dr. Frederick B. Van Kleeck.

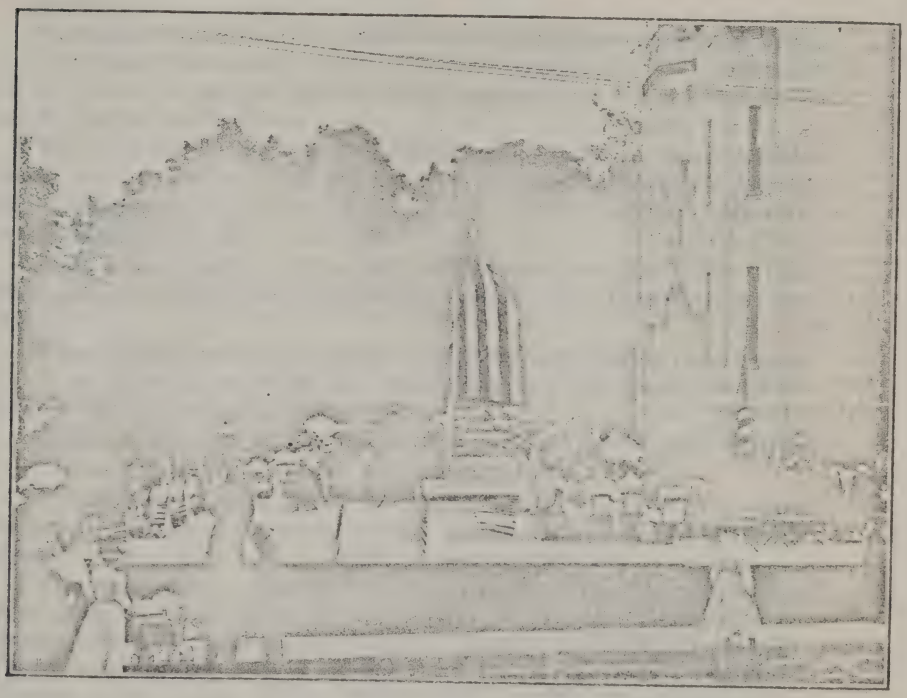
ADDRESS BY HON. ISAAC N. MILLS

Justice of Supreme Court

Ours is an age of distinct commemoration. During the adult life of even the older not to say the oldest of us here present, nearly every leading event in the record of our country, has been celebrated and the memory thereof preserved in some form of enduring monument . . . and Revolutionary records of the county permanently memorialized. In this great work no one of the patriotic ancestral societies has performed better

service than the society of the Daughters of the American Revolution, which has reared this monument that we here today, under its auspices, dedicate.

Certainly no proceeding of the sort could be of greater interest or promise, more of lasting benefit than the permanent commemoration of the "Birth of the Independent State of New York".



UNVEILING OF MONUMENT

In all history, few events can have been of greater moment, notwithstanding the marvelous growth and development of the West. Our State remains and promises long to continue the "Empire State of the Union".

In the period of the Revolution, the formal and accomplished revolt of the Province of New York from the Dominion of the British King and Parliament was an event of the utmost importance to the success of the Revolution, and the time and place of that event, if they may be clearly designated, mark unerringly the British time and place of the state.

At the celebration of this place as the Birthplace of the State, held here on July 9th, 1892, by the Sons of the Revolution, the speaker of the

day, upon the importance of New York said: "New York was of prime importance to the Revolutionary cause. Her geographical location, manifold resources and the character of people made her aid indispensable."

New York was the Keystone of the continental arch, with her sustaining strength the arch might stand, without her the Revolution would have been in history but a rebellion, with her it was bound to be and was a "Revolution".

Through him we seemed to touch hands, as it were, with the very actors in those great events, which stirred and tried souls of men of that period. Rarely in my life have I felt so inspired by a man's words as I was by his on that occasion.

Here and now we dedicate this monument and publish it to the world, we are, by the very nature of the things, called upon to prove the legend which these daughters have engraved upon it; which is, in effect, that this is the Birthplace of the State of New York.

Upon what warrant is this proclamation made and justified? Upon what grounds is this place thus declared to be "The Birthplace of our State"?

I beg therefor briefly but distinctly to present the leading proofs upon which we base our assertion and contention that this place should be regarded as the birthplace of our State.

Before attempting to recite such evidence, we should have well in mind what constitutes the birth of a commonwealth.

It is the first formal act of the people thereof, by direct vote or by their duly authorized representatives, declaring themselves or their Government to be a State and no longer a colony or province.

The assembling of the Provincial Congress of the Colony of New York at the old Court House in White Plains, N. Y., July 9th, 1776 . . . On the following morning July 10th, the Congress resolved and ordered: That the style or title of this house be changed from that of the "Provincial Congress of the Colony of New York" to that of "The Convention of the representatives of the State of New York".

It is more than barely possible that in the zeal for Historical commemoration, which characterizes our times and especially societies of this kind, a monument may be reared here and there upon insufficient proof, and so stand as a false and not a true witness.

There is special need that our evidence of the truth of the declaration upon this monument here should be at hand because it is well known that our local assertions in that regard have been challenged by some in times past, at least since 1892 when that Commemoration was held.

The delegates as represented the fourth Provincial Congress here on the morning of the 9th of July 1776, undertook the work of preparing its first constitution which was adopted at Kingston April 20th, 1777.

The contention opposed to our view by the learned chairman of this committee, is that the act of that convention at Kingston of April 20th, 1777, in adopting the first constitution was the birth act of the State; that there was prior to that act no legal State of New York.

In that view of the matter, of course, Kingston, not White Plains, is the birthplace of the State. Such reasoning is utterly unwarranted.

The State was not made by the Constitution, but the Constitution was made by and for the state, that is by the people thereof, acting through their representatives during the interim of nine months between July 9th, 1776 when those resolutions were here adopted by that Provincial Congress, and the 20th of April 1777, when the Constitution was enacted by it. . . . I fancy that no serious student of history or political science would presume to claim that Rhode Island was not a state until 1842. . . . It is just as unreasonable to claim that New York did not become a State until April 20th, 1777, as it was and is to declare that Rhode Island was not a State until 1842.

Such an utterly false claim is all there is or can be to any opposition to our contention that this is the very spot where our State had its completed inceptions.

These evidences, which I have reviewed, establish and even as it seems clearly to me, demonstrate that upon this spot, on the 10th of July, 1776, this State had its birth; that then and there by the action of the Provincial Congress, New York ceased to be a vassel province of the British Crown and became a free and independent State.

Well and truthfully speaks the legend which you Daughters of the American Revolution have written upon this Memorial stone. Your work is thus perpetuated as long as stone and bronze may endure. The memory of this place as distinguished and even hallowed by a great historic deed, you have richly earned the gratitude of every patriotic heart.

To the many historic memorials in Westchester County, you have added another and perhaps the one most deserving to be treasured.

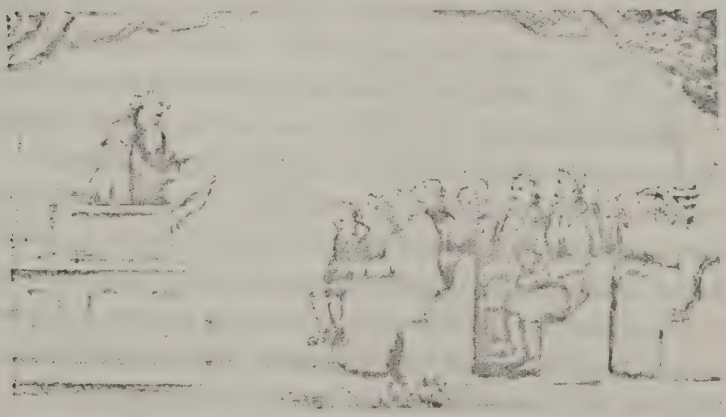
CHAPTER XXV

The Churches of White Plains

IT IS very interesting and instructive indeed to study the early history of our churches and to trace them down the path of the years from ancient times, when facilities were primitive and problems numerous.

The Presbyterian Church

The colonists of White Plains were members of and attended the dissenting or Presbyterian Church of Rye prior to 1727. A church building was erected here, however, some time before 1727. The moving spirit in the erection of this early church was the Reverend John Walton, a native of New London, a graduate of Yale College, who moved from Rye to White Plains in 1726. The land on which the church was built was the gift of Mr. Walton.



Rev. John Smith the first ordained Minister — 1722

To what extent were the early settlers guided by spiritual earnestness?

One answer is to be found in the history of the first Presbyterian Church, for its first fifty years is practically the history of its first building.

From the historic Hartford petition of May 11th, 1727, it is known, that after several earlier attempts had failed, the forefathers here had a suitable church building in 1727. Of that sanctuary there is not a line as to its size, when it was built, cost, or description, except that it was built of wood.

We can, however, picture in our mind a quaint little white painted church, shaded by the overhanging branches of elms on the same site as the present structure.

It was destroyed by fire on November 5th, 1776.

It is almost impossible for us today to go back two hundred years and to realize the actual conditions of human life existing when this historic church took root in White Plains.

The social, spiritual and material changes during the interval have been too revolutionary for imagination to reconstruct.

The two hundred years take us back into the formative days of American history, when only the barest beginnings had as yet been attained. There was then no evidence and but little promise of America's eventual greatness, nor of the part that White Plains in the year 1776 was destined to play.

Regarding the church itself, its small congregation could not realize how far reaching this small hamlet's influence was to be. Yet in the year 1776, White Plains was the scene of one of the really memorable episodes of our national history and we have every right to say that our city is inseparably linked with that greatness, intensified by the passing of the years.

Faith in God was to be sorely needed in the dread hours to come.

Residence of the Rev. John Smith

This altogether modest building was located on the west side of Underhill Avenue, a few hundred feet north of Westchester Avenue. In Shonard and Spooners and in Scharf's History of Westchester County, a picture of the structure is reproduced with the notation: "The Ann Miller House, Washington's Headquarters in 1776." The reproductions, from photographs, in both instances, are from originals made by the author of this book, in the late seventies.

It was my privilege and painstaking duty to make a thorough search in quest of the origin of this old house, ownership of the property, prior to 1825, and all facts authentically available concerning its history. I could find no record of ownership, although rare files in the records of the Register's Office and of the Westchester Title and Trust Company were exam-

ined thoroughly. Some of the early settlers of White Plains failed to record their deeds, storing them away in personal archives.

Fate, coincidence, call it what you will, eventually led me, through an accidental visit to the ancient Colonial burial ground of the Presbyterian Church, to the very facts for which I had searched so long. There were very old records connected with this church, and one of them supplied my supposedly non-existent data.

The old house was built and owned by the Rev. John Smith, the first ordained minister of the Presbyterian Church in White Plains. He, with his large family, lived there and it was no doubt used as a manse. He died in 1771.

You may see it with your own eyes . . . this worn inscription on a weather-stained and time-eroded tombstone in the little churchyard: "Here lies the remains of the Rev'd John Smith, the First Ordained Minister of the Presbyterian *Perswasion* in Rye and The White Plains".

In May, 1724, John Smith married Mehitabel, daughter of James Hooker, of Guilford, Conn., great granddaughter of the Rev. Thomas Hooker, who had the proud distinction of being one of the founders of Connecticut. He joined the Presbytery of New York in 1752, and one of his brothers was Judge William Smith of New York City, a member of that immortal triumvirate of "Wall Street Presbyteries", Livingston, Scott and Smith, who started the "Sons of Liberty" and issued the first call for the Convention of Patriots. They met in Philadelphia and played a part in drawing up the Declaration of Independence.

John Smith was the minister for nearly half a century, and was closely identified with the progress of White Plains and the surrounding community, during those important, forma-

tive days. He served here until his death, in 1771, and his body rests beneath the present church edifice. A tablet in the vestibule records: "John Smith: the first ordained minister to this church", and states that he was born in England, May 5th, 1702: Died February 26th, 1771.

His grandfather had been a brave soldier under Oliver Cromwell, and his father, Thomas, a business man of force and fine character, came to New York with his family in 1715.

The Baptist Church

This church was organized in the Spring of 1871, and was regularly incorporated April 13th, 1871, with John M. Rowell, Samuel Taylor, George R. Hopkins, James H. Purdy, Richard S. Geary, Sellick Roberts and Enoch Harris as Trustees.

During the winter preceding the incorporation, meetings were held composed of seldom more than twenty persons, who were nevertheless desirous of organizing a Baptist Church, and as a preliminary effort, the Rev. Jerome B. Morse was invited to and did preach on the 26th of March, 1871. At the close of the services it was resolved to organize under the name of "The First Baptist Church of White Plains", and twenty-two persons became members.

The Rev. Jerome B. Morse was chosen pastor; John M. Rowell, treasurer and Daniel M. Tucker and John M. Rowell, deacons. On the 1st of June, 1871, at a meeting of sister congregations, the White Plains Church was formally recognized, and services were thereafter held in the Methodist Chapel on Hamilton Avenue, until August, 1871, when Mr. James B. Colgate of Yonkers, purchased for $25,000 the fine stone structure on Mamaroneck Avenue, which had been built by the Dutch Reformed Church, and generously donated it to the society. This property was sold; and in 1925 the present

church at the corner of Maple and Mamaroneck Avenues was erected.

The Episcopal Church

In 1724, exactly 100 years prior to the establishment of the parish, Mr. Jenney, Rector of the parish of Rye, wrote to the Bishop of London on July 18th: "I officiate four times in White Plains, about four miles off, the remaining Sundays here at Rye." White Plains also contributed its quota to the Rector's annual salary, which in 1763 amounted to 24 pounds, 6 shillings.

In 1735, the Rev. James Wetmore writes: "I continue my method of preaching alternately at several parts of the parish vis: three Sundays at Rye, then one at North Castle, then again at Rye, then one at White Plains" and again in 1738 he writes: "Mr. Dwight, the school master at White Plains teaches twenty-seven children whose parents profess themselves of the Church of England."

In 1833 the vestry of the parish of Rye, resolved that services should be held alternately in Rye and White Plains provided "Our brethren in and about White Plains shall raise an equal portion of the salary and that such rector shall attend at White Plains in proportion to the sum of money that shall be raised by our brethren in and about White Plains."

In 1808, two thirds of the services were held at Rye and one third at White Plains. This connection continued until 1816, and at this time the conditions were most discouraging, there being, according to some, not one male communicant and not more than four or five female communicants. Prior to the establishment of the parish the Rev. William Cooper Mead officiated several times in White Plains and in a letter to the late Dr. Van Kleeck he says: "On Friday evening, February

13th, 1824, I officiated for the first time at White Plains. The services were held in the old Court House. It was very cold and no fire. I wrote in my journal on my return to New Rochelle, prospect of building up the church, very unpromising."

"I officiated again in the Court House at White Plains on February 29th, it being Sunday, and Sunday March 14th, I again officiated at White Plains Court House and gave notice of a service on the next Sunday the 21st and that there would be a meeting of those disposed to organize a parish on the 22nd."

Notwithstanding such discouraging circumstances, it was determined to have a church, and accordingly on the 22nd of March, 1824, one was incorporated under the title of "Grace Protestant Episcopal Church of White Plains", with Richard Jarvis and Allen McDonald as wardens; William Purdy, John Horton, Gilbert Hatfield, James Dick, Alexander Fowler, Joshua Horton, William Bulkly and James D. Merritt vestrymen. The same year the Rev. William C. Mead was elected Rector, and proceedings were instituted for the actual building of a church. Dr. Mead was most acceptable to all, both in and out of the church, and his efforts to establish a House of Worship were generously aided by the people, without regard to creed or sect.

How deeply this kind assistance was appreciated is shown by the records of the Vestry in an entry of the minutes of June 25th, 1826, after the building was completed. A vote of thanks was extended to the officers and members of the Presbyterian Society of White Plains for the generous use of their own church.

Mr. Eugene T. Preudhomme, a prominent citizen of White Plains and one who contributed much to the welfare of the

village, gave the land upon which the present church is erected and contributed the sum of $5,000.00.

Saint John's Roman Catholic Church

The first Mass said in Westchester County took place at the home of Domonick Lynch, on Throg's Point, in the town of Westchester, where the Academy of the Sacred Heart was formerly located.

Father O'Rielly was the first Catholic Priest to conduct services in White Plains. He began to hold meetings about the year 1848, at the time he was in charge of the Roman Catholic Mission of Port Chester.

In 1849, or the early part of 1850, he moved to New Rochelle, having been appointed pastor of St. Matthew's Church at that place, in addition to his Port Chester charge. Father O'Rielly was a zealous worker for the advancement of the Roman Catholic faith, and a man of more than ordinary ability and force of character.

For several years after the beginning of ministrations in White Plains, the Catholics here were without a place of worship of their own. Father O'Rielly, eager to supply this need, solicited subscriptions from Catholics and Protestants, and was finally able to attain his ambition. A plot of ground located on the south-west corner of Hamilton Avenue and Spring Street was purchased and the first church, a wooden structure, was dedicated in June, 1852, with Archbishop Hughes presiding at the ceremony.

Information at this point was secured from the oldest living member of the Parish, Mrs. Mary McCarthy, now in her 86th year: Father Dowling, an alternate of Father O'Rielly, likewise came from (Saw Pits) now Port Chester. The first Mass said in White Plains was in a small, one-story building on the

south side of Railroad Avenue, near Broadway, and Mass was said here every third Sunday.

The small quarters could accommodate only a limited portion of the two hundred seeking attendance, and frequently the overflow would kneel on the sidewalk outside, in their deep devotion.

The home of Mr. and Mrs. Patrick Moran was at the corner of Spring Street and Railroad Avenue, and should be mentioned in connection with the earlier days of the Catholic Church in White Plains. The entrance to the basement floor of this house was on Spring Street, and in the front room Mrs. Moran sold candies and cakes; in the rear room light refreshments were served.

On the floor above a room was set aside for the use of Father O'Rielly and Father Dowling, and was looked upon as a temporary rectory.

Before services were held in White Plains, the parents of Mrs. McCarthy and others would frequently walk all the distance to Port Chester and return, to attend Mass, so great was their devotion to their faith.

The present stone church was erected through the generosity of Mrs. Jules Reynal, in memory of her husband and father, and was consecrated June 9, 1892, the interior decorations of the church being the gift of Mrs. Anna Jarvis, in memory of her daughter, Mrs. Anna Jarvis McIlroy.

An act supplementary to an act entitled an act to provide for the incorporation of religious societies passed April 5, 1813.

CERTIFICATE OF INCORPORATION OF THE CHURCH OF ST. JOHN'S WHITE PLAINS, N. Y. — MARCH 25, 1863

We the Most Reverend John McCloskey, the Roman Catholic Archbishop of the Diocese of New York; William Quinn, the Very Reverend Vicar General of said Diocese; Rev. John McEvoy, now the Pastor of the Church of St. John erected in the town of White Plains,

County of Westchester, have selected and appointed Edward Baxter and James H. Moran two laymen members of said church for the purpose in said act mentioned.

The M. E. Church

"During the American Revolution no regular meetings of public religious worship by any denomination of Christians were held in White Plains, but very soon after the War, little companies were gathered without any formal organization, one of which met at the house of Mrs. Ann Miller, in North Castle. (Washington's headquarters in 1776.)

When the New Rochelle circuit was organized in 1787, Mrs. Miller's house was one of the regular appointments on the circuit. The Rev. Samuel Talbot, who organized the first class, consisting of six persons, was preacher.

In the year 1785, Mr. Peter Bonnett made application to Mrs. Ann Miller, the widow of Adjt. Elijah Miller who, with his two sons, had died in the American service in the early part of the Revolutionary War, for permission to have a Methodist preaching in her house. This request was granted, and the Rev. Cornelius Cook, the first Methodist preacher that ever visited White Plains, commenced preaching at her house. The system of reading sermons had made high pulpits necessary, and Mrs. Miller thought a sermon could not well be preached out of one; accordingly she had a temporary pulpit put up in her best room. On the day appointed for preaching quite a large congregation gathered together, and all were anxious to see the strange minister who was to address them.

The First Sermon Preached

On his arrival his appearance was very different from what they had expected. Instead of the divine of fine raiment and white soft hand, they saw one of those whose appearance be-

spoke fatigue, hardships, and exposure to the sun and storms. The preacher did not enter the pulpit prepared for him, but standing by a chair, he preached a plain heart searching sermon. He had not been preaching long before the curiosity of the congregation ceased, and most of the audience were occupied with the overwhelming truths to which they were listening. Mrs. Miller was much disappointed. Her views of clerical dignity had not been met. At the next meeting, however, which was in two weeks, she was so much affected under the preaching of the word, that she concluded that they might be servants of the Lord, and as such she willingly entertained them for several years.

As this woman was the first to open her doors for Methodist preaching, and the only one for some time to entertain Methodist preachers, her name will be ever held in grateful remembrance, and her history closely identified with Methodism in White Plains.

Amusing Incident

In the year 1787 the New Rochelle circuit appears for the first time in the minutes, with the name of Samuel J. Talbot as preacher. After having preached in the house of Mrs. Miller several times, Mr. Talbot proposed to meet, apart from the congregation, those who were convinced of sin, and were desirous to save their souls. Several persons retired with the preacher to an adjoining room, (the very room which General Washington occupied) among whom was Mr. I. P. H. who had been a magistrate and captain of militia under the crown of England, and still favoured the royal cause. He was, undoubtedly, led to go into the room by a report extensively circulated, that the Methodist Preachers were secret agents of the King of England, and that they received from him twelve

shillings for everyone who joined them. Having shut the door, Mr. Talbot exhorted the little company to express the state of their minds freely to him and each other. He then proceeded to speak to them personally, and came first to this man and in a solemn manner asked him to express the state of his mind; to which he replied, "I am a friend of the government." The preacher, not understanding the import of his answer, varied the question and put it to him again, when he rose from his seat and loudly exclaimed, "To be plain with you, I am for King George." To this Mr. Talbot gravely replied, "I perceive thou art in the gall of bitterness, and in the bonds of iniquity." At this reply of the preacher, he looked indignant; and finding out his mistake as to the object and character of this people, he became very desirous to withdraw from the room.

American Independence and Methodism

The house in which Washington had his headquarters, was where Methodist ministers were entertained and preached the gospel in White Plains and in which White Plains Methodism was born.

The room which Washington occupied was where the first class meetings in White Plains were held.

In 1792, some six members were added to the little society, three of whom — Abraham Miller, Abraham Davis and John Hatfield, were men of influence in the neighborhood; and through their efforts the embryo church became vigorous and strong, under the name or title of "The Trustees of the second Methodist Episcopal Church of White Plains". A house of worship was erected on the central part of Broadway and on the 13th of April, 1871, some of the members of the First Church united with those of the Second Church, to form a new society, which is still in a prosperous condition. The name

was changed from the "Second" to the "Memorial Methodist Episcopal Church of White Plains" and a commodious house of worship was erected on Railroad Avenue (now Main Street). This building was torn down in 1903 and the present church building erected on the same land.

CHURCHES

Baptist

Bethel Baptist
First Baptist
Second Baptist
Primitive Baptist

Catholic

Church of the Assumption (Italian)
Our Lady of Mt. Carmel (Italian)
Our Lady of Sorrows
St. John the Evangelist
St. Bernard's

Congregational

Church in the Highlands
Chatterton Hill
Ridgeview
(Westchester Congregation)

Hebrew

Congregation of Hebrew Institute
Congregation Sons of Israel
Jewish Community Center

Lutheran

St. Matthew's Church
Trinity Church

Methodist Episcopal Church

Memorial Church
Mt. Hope A. M. E. Zion
Second Church

Methodist Protestant Church

St. Paul's

Christian Science

First Church of Christ Scientist

CHAPTER XXVI

Newspapers and Amusements

WHEN we look upon the great County Center building, housing anything from lavish Grand Opera to stupendous pageants; take pride in the most modern playhouses with every modern convenience, and ponder the surprising number of artistic, comfortable places where amusements of all kinds are available the year through, it is all the more incredible that such vast changes should have taken place from such modest beginnings.

How did the earlier generations relax? What amusements broke in upon the tranquility of a remote village? Lafayette Hall was the community center of the long ago. It was located on Main Street, east of the Methodist Church, (now the property of Dr. Charles Birch) and provided space for all social and political gatherings. Itinerant Stock Companies began to arrive here for a week of changing dramas, acted crudely and with inadequate settings, but they seemed to provide acceptable entertainment, with those venerable favorites, "Uncle Tom's Cabin", "Ten Nights in a Bar-Room" and the Swiss bell ringers.

The stage was devoid of the now familiar accessories, projected into the Hall in a circular form and there was a perfectly plain rear wall. There were doors on the two sides of this jutting-out stage, and it was necessary for the players to make entrances or exits through them, up four or five steps to the stage, always in plain view of the audience.

It was the custom in those days for each touring Stock Company to bring its own scenery and effects for not one, but a repertoire of plays, and no vivid imagination is necessary to picture the incongruity of some of the stage sets, with an "East Lynne" or "The Two Orphans" room scenic effects used one night, and the same identical atmosphere bobbing up the next evening for "Uncle Tom's Cabin". The dogs that play so prominent a part in the drama, were brought in on a leash, when released they flew up the steps to do their part.

One incident stands out vividly in the writer's recollections of Lafayette Hall. As the Village photographer, I had been engaged to take a picture of the first local minstrel performance, given by the first Hook and Ladder unit of the Fire "Department".

The show over and the audience dismissed, I tacked two heavy tin pie plates on each of the two balconies; on each of the four plates, I placed a quantity of gun cotton, a similar amount of Blitz Pulver and a percussion cap connected with batteries. When ready for the exposure, I pressed the button at the rear of my camera. The flash was successful, so was the exposure, but I had set the balcony on fire in four different places.

The ready aid of the firemen present prevented a conflagration.

The method used for flash light exposures was very primitive and even dangerous.

The building was a two-story structure, with balconies on two sides and at the rear. The lower floor was occupied by the office of the Gas Company.

In addition to Lafayette Hall, the village boasted of Moran's Hall and St. John's Hall, both decidedly crude, and in 1894 what was known as an "Auditorium" on Mamaroneck

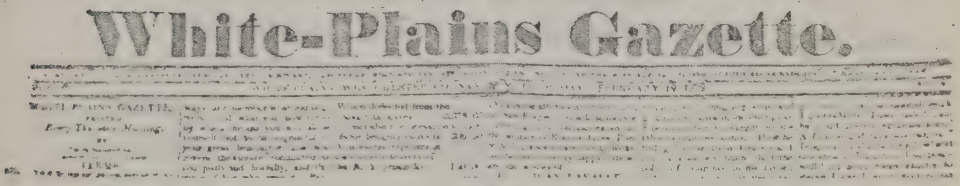
Avenue made a bid for popularity. Martin Spreitzer opened the first motion picture house in 1910, known as "The Electric Theatre": prices, "Five and ten cents".

The more ambitious Newell Theatre was built in 1912, and became unusually prosperous as the home of the Crescent Stock Company. Some time later, the name was changed to the "Court Square Theatre", and, after that, to "The Palace". The present Bar Building occupies this site.

The city's present theatres are the R.K.O. Keith-Albee, Loew's State, The Strand, The Colony and The Pix, with adequate and very attractively equipped stages.

Newspapers — Past and Present

Insofar as I have been able to discover after a thorough search of all the old records the first newspaper published in White Plains was the "White-Plains Gazette". Previous pub-


White-Plains Gazette.

lications, and former writers all make the statement, that the "Westchester Spy" was the first newspaper published in White Plains.

While writing this, I have before me a copy of the "White-Plains Gazette" published in White Plains, Thursday, February 19, 1829. Vol. 1, No. 8, a weekly publication, printed by Smith Harpending. This paper was published in White Plains over one year prior to the first appearance of "The Westchester Spy" in May, 1830.


WHITE-PLAINS GAZETTE.

Kunst macht Gunst.

WHITE-PLAINS:

THURSDAY, February 19, 1829.

The masthead and the reproduction from the editorial page, accompanying this article, are from the original of above date, a six column, four page, 14 x 21 inch size publication, bearing the slogan on the masthead: "Kunst macht Gunst", with literal translation on same line, "but before his art, thrones crumble and tyrants shrink and the mighty and the wise are as nothing — truth alone endures."

"Kunst macht Gunst", German proverb usually translated: "Art makes Favour." That is equivalent to "Knowledge is Power."

The following excerpt copied from the front page:

LOOK OUT

At a public meeting held at the Academy in the towne of White Plains (the Academy was located on the east side of Broadway just south of Lake Street, John N. Smith, principal) on the 28th day of April, by inhabitants of White Plains and vicinity, a society was formed for the purpose expressed in the following constitution and bye laws which were adopted.

CONSTITUTION

Article 1st. This society shall be called the Jacob Hays Club of White Plains.

2d. The object of this society shall be the protection of its members from theft and robbery, and for that end a company of riders be appointed,

and the funds of the society be appropriated for the pursuit and detection of thieves and felons, and the recovery of the stolen property.

3d. Members on joining pay to the treasurer fifty cents semi-annually.

4th. The annual meeting first Monday in April.

5th. Officers elected annually.

6th. This constitution shall not be altered without the consent of three-fourths of the members at the annual meeting, or the decision of a majority of two successive annual meetings.

WILLIAM BARKER, *Chairman*
ALLEN MCDONALD, *Secretary*

Accepted, April 26..

Another Item of Interest

THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES

Washington, Feb. 14.—The house proceeded to act upon the joint resolution introduced by Philip P. Barbour, in relation to the counting of the votes, for President and Vice President of the United States.

For President, Andrew Jackson received 178; John Q. Adams 83. For Vice President, John C. Calhoun received 171; Richard Rush 83; William Smith of South Carolina 7.

The Vice President then declared that Andrew Jackson was elected President of the United States for the term of four years commencing on the fourth of March, 1829; John C. Calhoun was elected Vice President for the same period.

To support a publication of this standard they, of necessity, depended largely upon the subscriptions and advertisements from surrounding townships.

We find advertisements from Saw Pitts (Port Chester): Tailor — Tall and short pants. Fashionablness of our work guaranteed. Blacksmith, White Plains — Horses and oxen shod. Yonkers — Hydes and fulling mills. Harrison — Hatter; hats with ample brim to meet the approval of the most fastidious Quaker in Purchase; and others from Rye, Tarrytown, Sing Sing, Mount Vernon and New Rochelle.

This paper was found in an old trunk containing diaries, programs, and memoranda which belonged to my grandfather, J. Malcolm Smith who was County Clerk of Westchester County from 1868 to 1876 inclusive and Clerk of the Board of Supervisors for a short time. He came to White

Plains from Ossining in 1868. I first learned of the existence of this paper while examining the contents of this trunk before moving from our house at 34 South Broadway in the fall of 1937. This old trunk had been stored in our attics for over fifty years.—CHARLES EVERETT MOORE.

The second newspaper published in White Plains was called "The Westchester Spy", and the initial issue made its appearance in the village on a Spring day in May, 1830, under the proprietorship of Allen McDonald and Minott Mitchell. It was published until 1847, under various managements and editors, and then discontinued. Minott Mitchell was the brother of Josiah S. Mitchell, whose article on White Plains appears in Scharf's History of Westchester, published in 1886.

Copied from the Eastern State Journal fifty years ago:

"The cows of E. B. Long and Joseph Acton were poisoned last week by eating red paint."

"An old maid in town (no name given) keeps a parrot which swears and a monkey that chews tobacco. She says that between the two, she doesn't miss a husband very much."

1866 — Hopper's Grocery Store advertised fresh laid hen's eggs for 13 cents a dozen.

1876 — E. C. Sniffen advertised "Two bald headed cigars for a nickel."

There came in May, 1845, "The Eastern State Journal", founded by Edmund G. Sutherland, and under his direction it became the leading Democratic newspaper in the County, and so continued, up to the time of his death, May 21st, 1883. The same journal was then continued under the management of Ezra J. Horton.

Copies of some of these very old newspapers are still in existence, and, although faded by time and poorly printed, in small type, show a surprising editorial vitality. They were small in size and composed of seldom more than four printed pages. Community gossip was couched in a style peculiar to that early day.

"The Westchester News" came out in October, 1871, as a Democratic organ, with the above mentioned Ezra J. Horton, Esq. as owner, and was published under changing owners, until 1876, after which it was taken over by Edward B. Long. Its politics had been swung to the Republican support and it became a power in the community.

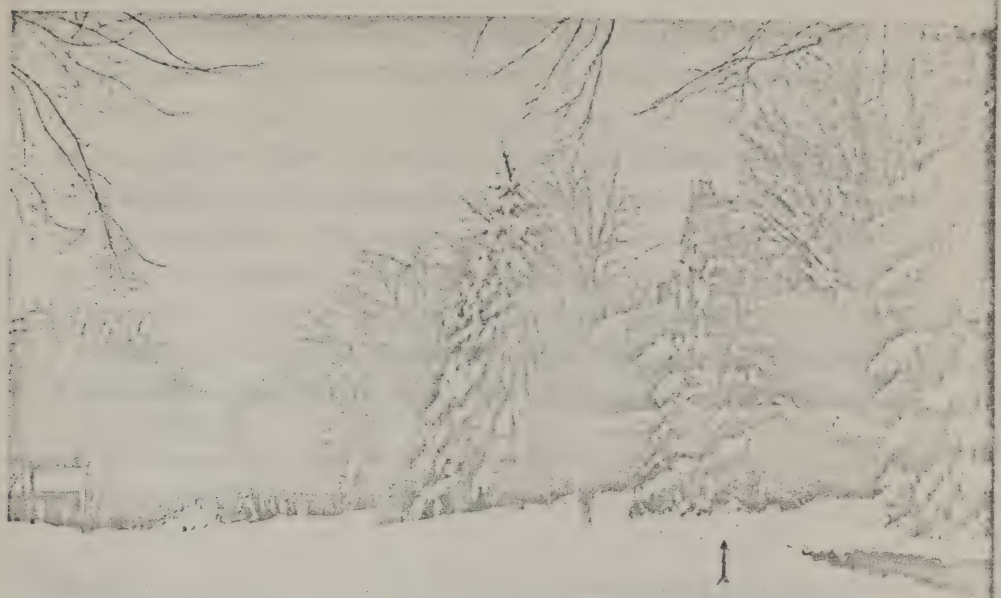
"The Daily Press" made its appearance in White Plains April 1st, 1929 and was published for two years only.

"The White Plains Standard" was established in 1885 by J. O. Spencer, as a weekly. And finally there is the currently published "White Plains Home News", Louis Eugene Tepp owner, who combined it with the old "Eastern State Journal".

"The Daily Reporter" first published on October 22nd, 1917, under the present management, W. Lee Tuller, publisher, Walter V. Hogan editor, was founded in Mount Kisco as the Westchester County Reporter by Charles E. Patterson, in 1878. This newspaper took over "The Daily Argus" published by John T. Rehill in November, 1919 and the "Daily Record" published by Frank E. Perley in January, 1920, and the three merged into the present enterprising institution.

The Westchester County Reporter was removed to White Plains in 1890 by Charles I. Nichols in April, 1892. The Reporter was purchased by William B. and Edmund G. Sutherland, who published the weekly until November 1905, when the Daily Reporter first made its appearance. It was published for a number of years by Henry Sutherland.

Looking back over the dim and yellowed newspapers of 1888, we find one outstanding news story, the memories of which were destined to be woven into history, for the village was visited by a remarkable demonstration of Nature's elements, gone wild.



RAILROAD AVENUE
Arrow, present site, the Bar Building. Note the trees.

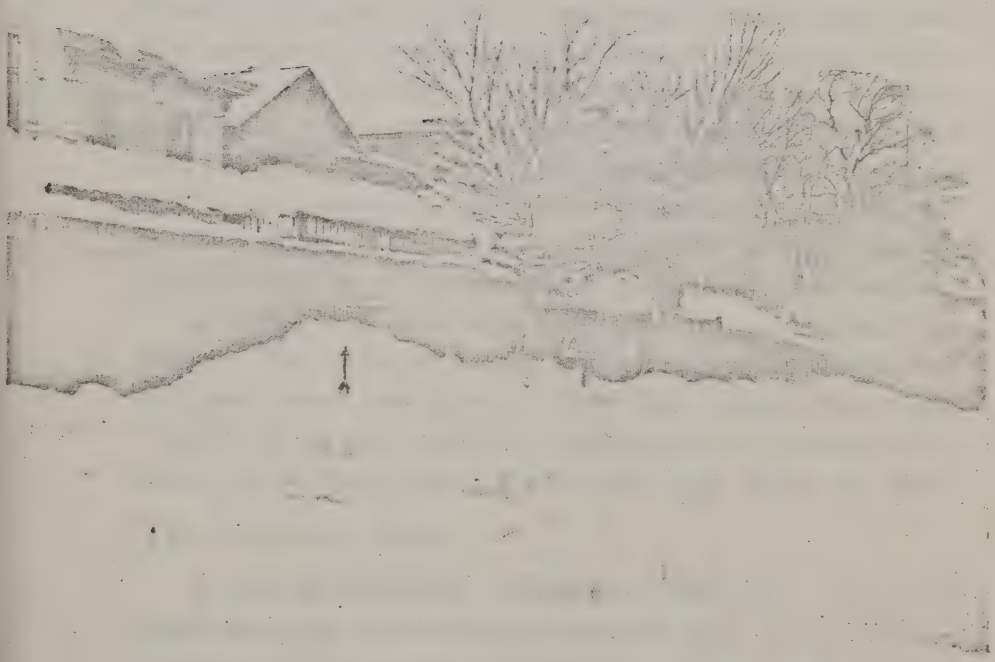
The Blizzard of 1888

On March 12th, 1888, this part of the country was the unexpected and wholly unprepared victim of the heaviest snowfall ever recorded. Snowdrifts piled high on the north side of Railroad Avenue, and were soon up to the very top of the tin-roofed shed which stood in front of the E. C. Sniffen building, at the northwest corner of Railroad Avenue and North Lexington Avenue.

In front of James Purdy's grocery store, a tunnel was dug through the snow, in order to make it possible for people to

cross to Orawaupum Street. Edward B. Long and Steven W. Smith, both members of the Board of Trustees, standing at the corner of Railroad and Lexington Avenues, issued orders to ring the fire alarm. It was a ruse to get a large number of men together to clear the high drifts from an impassable business thoroughfare. The unintentional volunteers were voluble in their disapproval when they discovered why they had been summoned . . . not as firemen but as snow-shovelers.

The situation was, however, quite serious for a while. Business was completely paralyzed, somewhat vindicating the



Arrow, present site of Woolworth's 5 and 10 store, formerly the Rösch Studio from 1874 to 1900.

hurry-call that had sounded the alarm of "fire!" from the steeple bell of the old Court House. Stores ran short of provisions, and, alas, hotels and taverns had no more beer!

Many people were unable to leave their homes, drifts being as high as fifteen feet. One such mountainous mass of snow crossed Hamilton Avenue near Broadway.

Practically all roadways and sidewalks were impassable. I lived, at the time, on South Lexington Avenue, and upon opening my front door, found to my surprise, a perfect matrix of that door facing me in the white wall of snow. No particle of daylight was visible.

The 7:45 A.M. train Monday, leaving White Plains, became stalled in the tunnel. It was the custom of Mr. Frederick Ranscht, the grocer, father of our present Supervisor, to take this train every Monday morning, to purchase stock in New York City for the week. The first train to arrive here from the Metropolis, was a passenger makeshift, with two locomotives and but three cars, in charge of Conductor Baker. The train left Grand Central Station at 4:30 Wednesday afternoon and reached White Plains at 6:30, after a real struggle, having been preceded by a large snow-plow propelled by four engines.

A large crowd assembled, waiting for the train to reach the station. They were, of course, anxious to greet those who had left their homes and gone to New York, Monday morning. There were demonstrations of overjoyed relief, accompanied by cheers, as if relatives and friends had been absent for years.

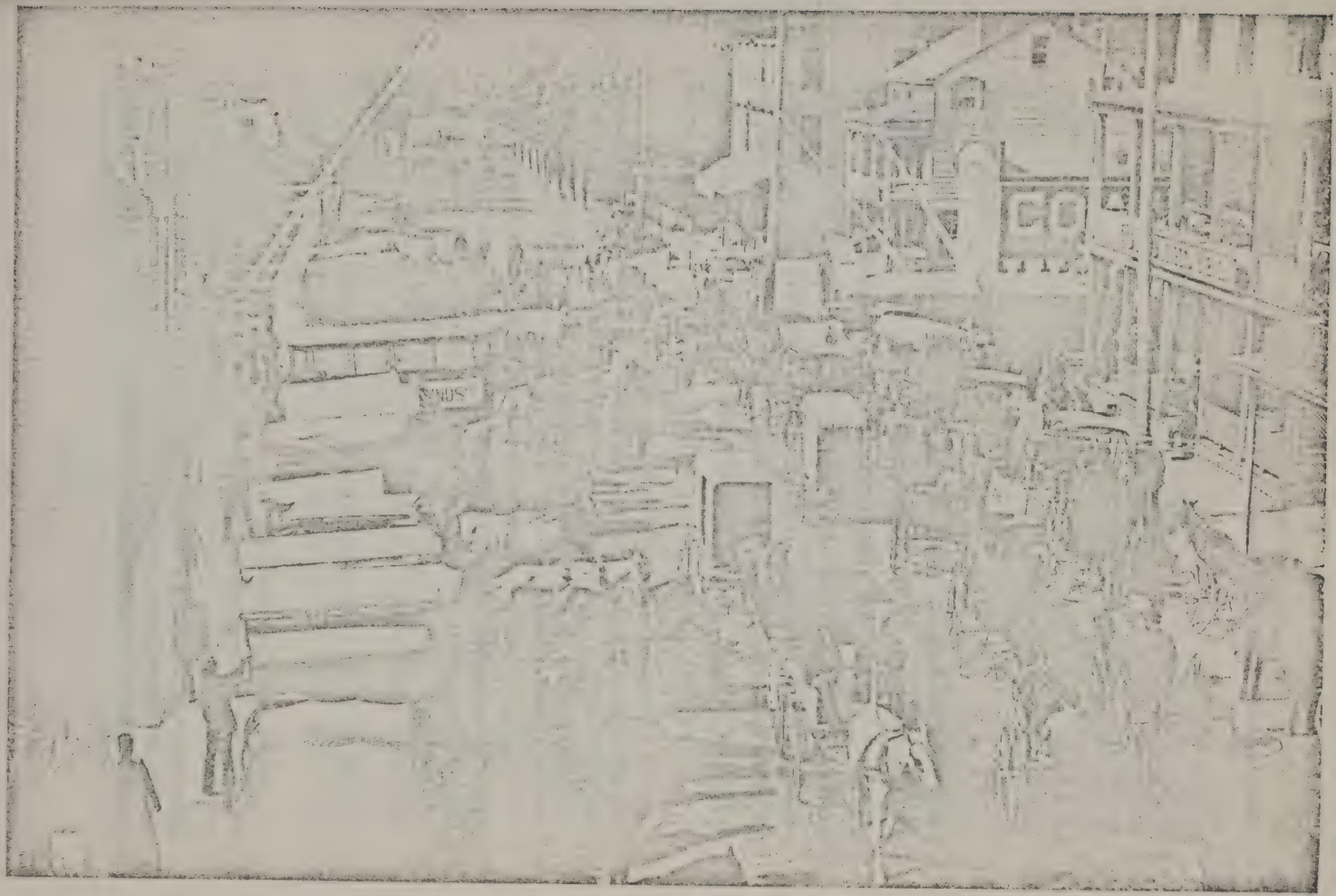
The Snow-Plow Horror

It was on Friday the 16th that a snow-plow set forth to clear the tracks of the blizzard's intense fury. Every obstacle was successfully overcome until the Cut was reached, one mile north of Coleman's Station. This Cut was excavated from

solid rock, being thirty feet high and fifty feet in length. Drifts had completely filled the Cut and the thaw of the two previous days had filled every nook and cranny with a hardened mass of what amounted to ice.

The huge snow-plow, pushed ahead by five locomotives plunged forward into the Cut at great speed, the stubborn character of the undertaking being realized. Then an unforeseen thing took place! The first engine telescoped the plow, and the other engines came crunchingly onward on top of them, piling the wreckage in a splintered, fiery mass in the rock cut. Nothing like it had ever been seen on the Harlem Railroad before, or since.

Four engineers and one fireman were killed outright and one other died soon after. They were Thomas Riley, fireman; Thomas Feeney, conductor; George Fowler, engineer; and Charles Horton, fireman. Six others were badly injured, but recovered. Fowler and Horton were residents of White Plains; also Frederick Strang, a fireman on the third locomotive who was thrown thirty feet in the air to land on top of a side bank of snow with a few slight injuries only.



RAILROAD AVENUE DURING FAIR WEEK 1869

CHAPTER XXVII

Civic Enterprises

White Plains Concordia

THIS Society was organized June 10th, 1880 for the purpose of cultivating song and to promote social enjoyment among its members. For many years it was widely known for its gatherings, choral entertainments, Christmas playlets and "stag" parties. The New York Herald of July 22nd, 1894 gave a graphic account of one of the festivities, under the heading: "Westchester County Choral Societies have a gala day at White Plains". The article follows:

"The fourth annual parade and festival of the Westchester County Saengerbund, held at White Plains on Monday, was the grandest celebration of its kind that has ever been seen in that city. . . . The town was given over entirely to the Germans, and it was indeed a 'Teutonic Day' . . . It was particularly characterized by what is claimed to be the greatest street pageant ever seen in Westchester County.

"The citizens of the Village united in giving the thousands of visitors a most hospitable welcome. . . . Great crowds lined the sidewalks along the line of march. Twenty singing Societies took part, including the Beethoven, Doppel Quartet, Schiller Bund, and Euphonia of New York City.

"The Grand Marshal was Dr. Ernst Schmid; aids: Dr. R. R. Morrison, James D. Wright, Fred B. Van Kleek, Jr., T. Halle Baile and William Van Kleek.

"All along the line the appearance of the three floats was hailed by loud bursts of applause. They were magnificent specimens of spectacular art and were made at great cost.

"The first float, called 'Unity' symbolized the unison of sentiment and good feeling existing between the United States and Germany, the sister nations. It was drawn by six white horses, each horse being led by a costumed attendant.

"The second float, 'Music', carried the impersonators of celebrated composers of the world and was also drawn by six bay horses attended by men in costume.

"The third float represented 'Education' and was beautifully constructed. Twenty-five school children dressed in white formed the tableau vivant that adorned it. This float was drawn by six white horses led by six jockeys. A musical program was given in Floral Hall after the parade. The Festival was continued here, on the Westchester County Fair Grounds."

This Society continued in a flourishing condition for more than 35 years, with an active membership of from 25 to 40. These active members constituted the singing unit, and there was a passive membership of over 100. During the World War, weekly rehearsals were discontinued. Of the original organizers, the author of this book is the only living survivor of those who started it in 1880.

Masonry in White Plains

Because George Washington figures in the episode, it is interesting to learn of the first authentic account of Masonry in White Plains. The archives of Huguenot Lodge, No. 46, located at New Rochelle, N. Y., show that on the 18th day of February, 1799, it was resolved to petition the Grand Lodge of the State to allow meetings to be held alternately at Eastchester and White Plains, because of the "great distances" to be traveled by members. The petition was unanimously granted. It was presented in due time, and here is the official notice as sent to the Lodge:

December 22, 1799.

"Dear Sirs:

I have the pleasure to inform you that the Grand Lodge convened an extra last evening respecting the arrangement to take place on account of the death of our illustrious Brother, George Washington. I took the opportunity of moving on your petition to hold your Lodge alternately at Eastchester and White Plains, and have the pleasure to inform you that

the prayer of the petition was granted unanimously. It will be communicated to you officially by the earliest opportunity. Remember me to all of our friends and to your good family.

Yours with esteem,

ABRAHAM SKINNER."

To Captain Joseph Hatfield,
White Plains.

This letter has been carefully preserved and now hangs framed in Huguenot Lodge room. An official communication was received shortly afterwards with reference to the action of the Grand Lodge on the petition, and the Lodge accordingly met at White Plains, at the house of Brother Joseph Hatfield every alternate meeting night.

Official notice of the death of General Washington was not received by the Lodge until February 10th, 1800, when it was resolved to meet at White Plains on the 22nd, to pay honor to the memory of him who had done so much for the cause of his country.

Brother David Rogers was requested to prepare and deliver an oration on that day at the Court House. Invitations were then forwarded to all the other Lodges, and, on the day appointed, the combined Brethren and others met at the home of Captain Joseph Hatfield, and proceeded to the Court House, in the following order:

CAVALRY

Independent Company in uniform.
Military Officers
Scholars of Divers Singing Schools.
Young ladies draped in white with a scarf of mourning on their left arms and a bough of green laurel in their hands.
Masonic Order.
Civil Authority.

In 1802 the meetings at White Plains were discontinued and the Lodge held its meetings in Eastchester only. By a

further dispensation, dated June 16th, 1859, Past Worshipful Brother Daniel Sickles was duly authorized to constitute "in due form", White Plains Lodge, No. 473, Free and Accepted Masons, and on June 30th, A.D. 1859, A.L. 5859, the Charter of White Plains Lodge No. 473 of Free and Accepted Masons was duly granted.

Thus, after many years of persistent effort, Masonry became firmly established in the historic town of White Plains. During the first seven or eight years of its existence, the meetings of the Lodge were held in the upper story of the brick building known as "Mogers Hall". It was the first structure of brick in the village, the materials being brought from Tarrytown by oxen. The ground floor was used as a blacksmith shop.

Young Men's Christian Association

The White Plains N. Y. Association, "Dedicated to the Service of Men and Boys", was organized in 1897, and has served the community continuously ever since. The progress of this organization is here given chronologically:

February, 1897 — Organized at a meeting in the old First Baptist Church on Mamaroneck Avenue.

March, 1897 — Work conducted in rented rooms on the 2nd and 3rd floors of the Auditorium Building, corner of Main Street and Mamaroneck Avenue.

February, 1900 — Ladies' Auxiliary formed.

March, 1900 — Association incorporated.

June, 1903—Association rented Martine homestead.

January 1st, 1907 — Laying corner stone of first building, northeast corner Mamaroneck Avenue and Martine Avenue.

January 5th, 1908 — Dedication of first building.

December 9th, 1928 — Dedication of present building, Mamaroneck Avenue, near Maple Avenue.

It is the aim of the Association to make its facilities truly helpful to the young men of the community. This purpose will

be accomplished through: Young Men's Clubs, Social and Cultural, with a full program of Club activities, including Bible Study, discussions, outings, socials, counsel and guidance on vocation and employment, co-ed parties, life-problem study groups, Sunday afternoon meetings, help on personal problems, educational classes, dramatics, orchestra, glee club, debates and discussions, dormitory group activities, lectures and entertainments, chess and checkers, billiard tournaments, bowling leagues, opportunities for service and leadership, a full program of gymnasium classes, opportunities for individual gymnasium exercise, swimming and recreation of all types.

Members of the Red Cross during the World War.

The Red Cross

Prior to 1914 there was no organized Red Cross unit in White Plains. On September 8th, 1914, a sub-division was called, with Mrs. Nathanial Reynal chosen as chairman.

When the United States entered the World War, April 4th, 1917, the White Plains branch was fully prepared to push its work in all directions. Mrs. Philip B. Parker was chairman at this time.

It was estimated that from the time of organization in October 1915, and to June 15th, 1919, nearly one million surgical dressings were sent overseas. A Recreational Canteen was opened at 22 Martine Avenue, October 1st, 1917.

In May, 1918, Mrs. Parker resigned due to failing health. She had been chairman during the tremendously important three war years, and during the construction period of the local organization which had grown from a small circle, to an important group of almost six thousand members, its remarkable efficiency measured by actual, tangible results. These records exceeded those of any and all of the 31 Westchester County branches.

Present location: Grand Street. The chairman at this time is Mrs. R. H. Derby.

225th Anniversary of the Founding of White Plains

On November 24th, 1908, special exercises were held at St. John's Hall and the Memorial M. E. Church, in commemoration of the 225th anniversary of the founding of the Town of White Plains. A newspaper item of that time is here quoted:

"The Anniversary event is over, but the celebration and the special features will go down in the annals of the history of White Plains.

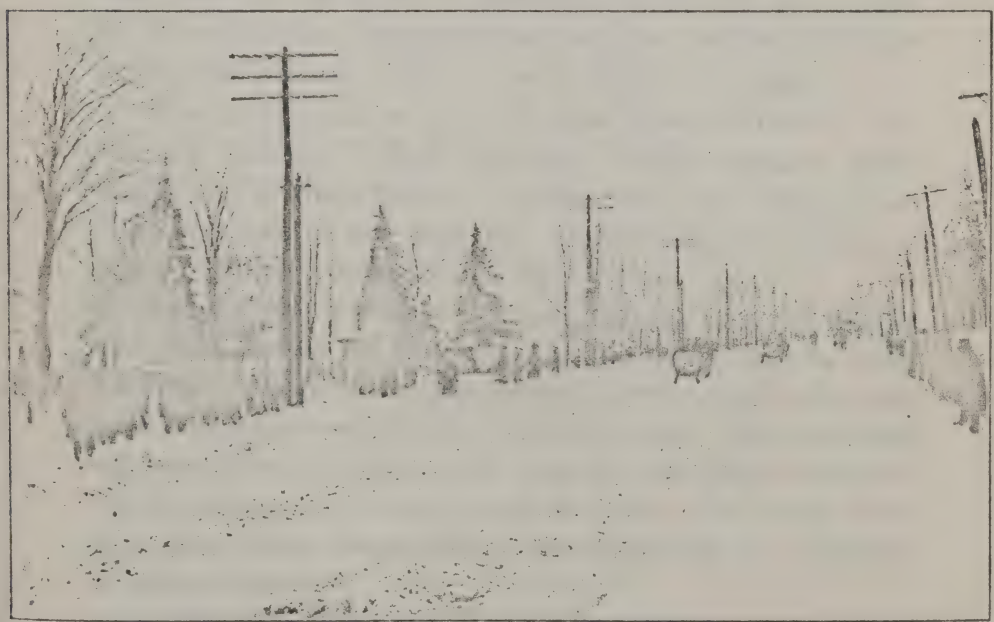
"Robert E. Farley opened the 18th century addresses along general lines. County Judge William Popham Platt also spoke on incidents of the early days of White Plains in the 18th century. He spoke of the favored

ones in office and land grants by the British authorities, the dissensions that naturally followed and of its importance to White Plains and vicinity.

"Dr. H. E. Schmid, one of the town's foremost citizens and a familiar figure in all things that tend to the good and advancement of White Plains, took up the discourse under the 19th century head, speaking of the advancement made in the 19th century along all lines. He spoke of the educators, volunteer firemen, and gave a pleasing history of the growth of the churches.

"V. M. Hodgson, a veteran of the Civil War, and one who is qualified to speak, in his address, under the same head as Dr. Schmid, gave much valuable data as to early events in the history of the town and vicinity. He also told how ready was the response to the call to arms in '61 from the White Plains citizens.

"Ambrose F. McCabe talked under a 20th century head, or, as the speaker himself said, 'To come back to everyday life'. His address was one of praise for the town in which he had elected to make his home and he pointed with pride to the many evidences of advancement."



MAMARONECK AVENUE IN THE GAY NINETIES
Stone columns, entrance to Carhart property; later William Muldoon's health resort; present site Fire Headquarters.

In the Gay Nineties

In the "Gay Nineties", Mamaroneck Avenue was the mid-winter Speedway. This weekly attraction drew the "sporting" element every Saturday afternoon. Crowds lined both sides of the Avenue when the elements were favorable for sleighing. When the road surface was not suitable here, Railroad Avenue was frequently used. This led to a protest from the Village Board of Trustees and they passed an ordinance prohibiting all driving in excess of six miles an hour on the latter thoroughfare.

One day it happened that Mamaroneck Avenue was unfit for speedy sleighing, and Railroad Avenue was. Howard Griffen, father of ex-Mayor Chauncey Griffen, and Fire Chief H. Abbott Griffen, suggested that they run counter to the new ruling, and proceed with the races on Railroad Avenue.

The participants in the event were Howard Griffen, William H. Gedney, William Deveson, William Sammis, Peter Rielly and William Brooks. At this time, the Village police force consisted of one man only, Edward Bogart, a big six-footer. Elijah Purdy was the local Judge.

Judge Purdy had been informed that the race was to take place and he sent for Chief Bogart, demanding that he make an arrest. However, he gave the order with a wink in his eye, and Bogart was very familiar with that wink. The race came off according to schedule, and then the wise Bogart arrested the participants, who were taken to Court. The Judge wore that shiny black Prince Albert coat of his and was a picture of official dignity.

"What is the charge, Officer?" he asked.

"Excess speeding on Railroad Avenue, Your Honor", replied the officer.

"My, my!" exclaimed Judge Purdy. "This, gentlemen, is a very serious charge . . . ahem . . . a very serious charge indeed . . . ahem . . . against the law . . . endangering the lives of women and children . . . a very serious charge you must admit! Ahem. Notwithstanding the fact that you are all close — and good — friends of mine, I am compelled by law to fine you ten dollars each."

One by one they walked up to the Judge and paid their fines. "Bill" Sammis was the last man in the line, and handed over a $20.00 bill. He explained that $10.00 of this was to settle for his fine and the remainder to pay for just one more trial heat to settle a dead heat between his trotter and Howard Griffen's entry.

This singular request was granted, with the understanding that they were all to report again immediately after the race. The starting point was the corner of Mamaroneck Avenue, and the finishing post at the Bronx River Bridge.

"Bill's" trotter, "Apple Jack", won by half a neck, after a close and exciting race, the length of Railroad Avenue. After this stirring exhibition, the "Police Department", the Court of Justice, and the violators of the law, adjourned over to the horse-sheds in the rear of the Standard House, which stood on the site of the present Northcourt Building.

When the horses had been sent to their stalls, this singular procession headed for the rear door of the Hotel, singing: "Here Comes the Gang", and "The Gang's All Here". To prove he entertained no ill feelings for his life-long friends, the Judge immediately ordered liquid refreshments for all hands. On the early dawn of the next day, the horses were still in the sheds of the Standard House, and the till of the popular hostelry held the $70.00 that had been paid in fines.

AN OLD HAND BILL OF 1883

OFFICIAL NOTICE

The Assessment List of this Village and Township is at my House on Lexington Avenue, nearly a mile from the Village, where it may be seen by any of the Taxpayers who desire to do so. If any Assessment is not satisfactory I will make it to suit for a fair consideration. My time and services are entirely devoted to the public, therefore my reputation for distinterested patriotism and philanthropy is beyond question in this locality.

The arduous duties of this Office were forced upon me by my kind fellow-citizens, and may not WILLINGLY be retained by me beyond my present term, as I will then go to Congress. While I continue to discharge its onerous duties I will take pleasure in accommodating any of the Tax-payers who may call upon me so far as their interests may harmonize with a conscientious regard for my own.

Should any of my friends not have the cash readily, any kind of Provisions, Clothing or good Bourbon Whiskey, not below proof, will be taken in trade. Please do not approach me upon the Sabbath Day, except before or after Devine Service, as I am a leading Member of the Church.

Uncle Daniel Miller's friends will understand that he and I control this Board. One of my brothers being a Commissioner of Highways and another Path Master, they will attend to any extra jobs outside the Village limits, providing I am properly seen.

As ever true to the traditions of this Glorious Republic as founded by our Illustrious Fathers and the Immortal Washington, I remain your devoted servant,

ELIJAH PURDY,

Chairman and Engineer-in-Chief of the Board of Assessors.

Dated August 12th, 1883.

Reproduced from an original in the library of the Westchester County Historical Society

No motor car driver can experience the same affection for his car that inspired the old-time owner for his trotter.

The transformation of Mamaroneck Avenue within a few short years captivates the imagination, as it has emerged from a rather quiet country street, to a thoroughly modern boulevard of handsome stores.

CHAPTER XXVIII

Politics

IN POLITICS, civil affairs and business, the Lexington Avenue Corners was the heart of Village activities. On the second floor of the Sniffen Building, the Court held forth, together with the holdings of national, State, County and Town political gatherings. For many years, the Court room was the only polling place.

There were no voting machines in those days and no ballots containing the names of all the candidates. The various Parties had their own ballots. The Republican ballot was easily distinguishable from the Democratic, however. It was not easy at this period for a man to escape a Party label, for the election inspectors and all who happened to be nearby, could *see* exactly how every man voted.

Voting was exclusively masculine. The Leaders knew their supporters and could immediately ascertain whether they were loyal or not, at all times, for it was customary, when a leader desired to make very *sure* of a certain man's vote, to accompany him right up to the ballot box and witness his fidelity. There was no "promising" one way and "voting" another, as is the case now due to the secrecy of the voting machine.

Supervisor James H. Moran was active in politics. He and his brother, John P. Moran, were the Republican leaders. It is recalled of Supervisor Moran that Election Day was always the occasion for him to appear at the polls in a high silk hat, and no election was held without that jaunty "beaver" headgear being present.

James Brogan was the Democratic leader. He was a very large man, and whenever the opportunity offered, he would push "Jimmie's" hat down on his head as far as it would go. At times, the brim would rest on his shoulders. For years no election was considered complete, if this singular event did not take place at least three or four times during the day.

The Democratic Headquarters was right next door, on the north side of Railroad Avenue. The Republicans made their Headquarters in the Masonic Lodge entrance of the Gibson Building, on Election Day, directly opposite the polling place. There was much excitement in those rousing old times around the polls, for there were no restrictions as to campaign activities within a certain distance of the polling place.

The fever of interest ran high as the hour approached for the closing of the polls. A considerable number put off voting up to the very last moment, demanding to see the "size of the dollar" before making a final decision. The final mad rush and crush on the narrow and gloomy stairway leading to the ballot box, always precipitated a fight. It was not necessary then, as it is today, to pay from $5.00 to $10.00 for a front seat to witness a "fake fight". The pugilistic encounters of those hours were genuine.

The first election was held in April, 1727. Caleb Hyat, Jr. was chosen Clerk, and continued to be re-elected annually until 1776, when Miles Oakley came into office. From 1776 to 1783 — the period of the Revolution — there were no Village elections.

The Primary

In the early nineties, the political fight for supremacy for leader in the Republican Party (or Boss) of the County, was similar to the recent Macy-Eton, Turnure-Hite battle for the

Republican Chairmanship. Prominent political leaders in White Plains who favored the selection of William L. Ward of Port Chester, were Samuel Miller, (later postmaster and sheriff) James and John Moran, John J. Brown and others. Those in opposition to Ward and who favored James Burns of Yonkers, were Edward B. Long, John and George Thompson, John Breece, James W. Stafford, Marvin Horton and others.

The Ward faction won out in the local primary election. The fierce contest put up by the Burns group to defeat the Ward delegates, almost led to casualty. When George Thompson took an Italian by the hand and led him to the ballot box, "Jimmie", in his attempt to prevent the casting of his vote, was picked up bodily by Thompson, who made for the stairway and was in the act of throwing "Jimmie" down the stairway, when the victim's co-workers came to his timely rescue.

Samuel Miller was appointed teller after this episode and all was normal for a short time; but soon a quarrel was imminent and another fight was in the making. The two factions could not breathe the same atmosphere, now so highly charged with "dynamite". The Burns faction took the ballot box, in charge of Miller, carried it down the stairs, and placed it on a barrel on the sidewalk adjoining the entrance to the polling place. Samuel Miller now sent a messenger to Edward Schirmer's "Gents" Furnishing Store, for a hat-box, which replaced the former ballot box.

Now the Burns followers had the advantage of reaching the voters first, and before the polls closed, they had a big majority. The Village at this time could count on from 800 to 900 legitimate voters. On counting the ballots, it was discovered that over 1200 votes had been cast. When the County convention was held in New Rochelle, all of the Burns ballots and dele-

gates were thrown out. Shortly after this a bill was passed making it necessary for all voters to enroll before casting a ballot.

Harmony Brought Out of Chaos

On August 27, 1898, the Senatorial Convention was held at the old Orawaupum Hotel; the genial Samuel C. Miller presiding. His rulings and general demeanor smoothed the feelings of the party then in the midst of a desperate political quarrel, for his tact brushed misunderstandings aside and calm came again to the troubled waters. Henry R. Barrett was chosen as one of the Senatorial Committeemen.

No Republican Ticket in the Field

On Tuesday, December 17, 1901, the election was held for Village Trustees, with the following result:

1st Ward.	Christopher Harmon	149	Dem.
1st Ward.	William M. Sweet	103	Ind.
2nd Ward.	John J. Thompson	131	Ind.
2nd Ward.	Patrick Holden	114	Dem.
3rd Ward.	John T. Rehill	276	Ind.
3rd Ward.	*Harvey Husted	7	Dem.
4th Ward.	James H. Moran	163	Ind.
4th Ward.	Isaac V. Fowler	79	Dem.
5th Ward.	John A. Snedeker	122	Ind.
5th Ward.	William L. Banks	72	Dem.

*Not a candidate.

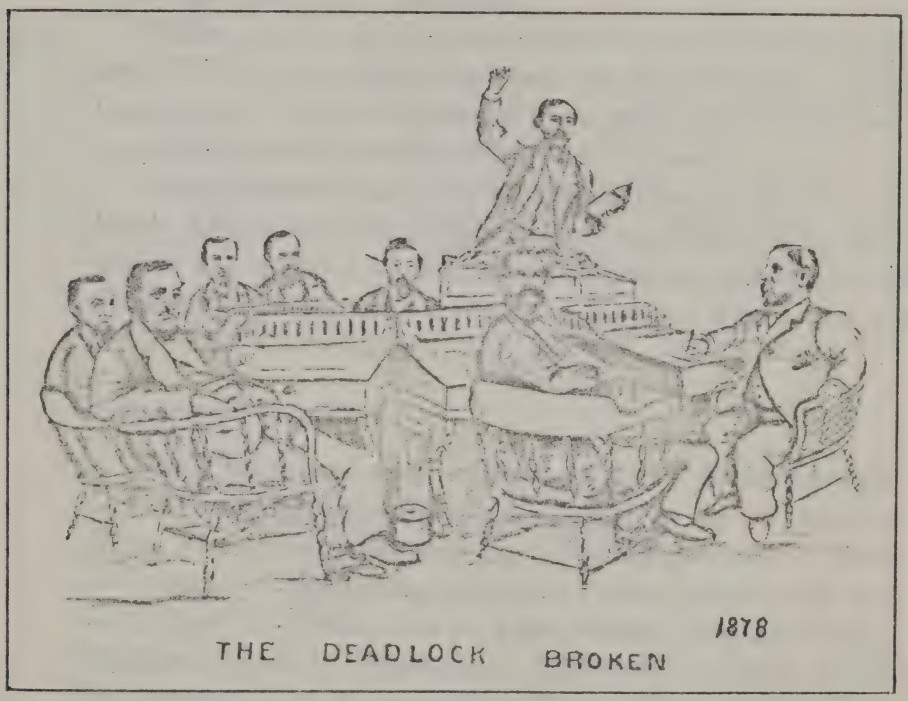
Thus the newly elected members stood — one Democrat, four Independents.

The First Dead-lock

The new charter, dividing the Village into wards, went into operation in 1878 and two Trustees were elected from each

ward instead of seven from the whole village, as formerly. The President was chosen from outside the Board, for a term of two years, and his powers were somewhat curtailed.

"BY VIRTUE OF THE AMENDED CHARTER I DECLARE GILBERT S. LYON DULY ELECTED PRESIDENT OF WHITE PLAINS."



MEMBERS OF THE COMMON COUNCIL IN 1878
Reading from left: Michael Reardon, Leonard Miller, David Verplanck, George Mead, John Birch, clerk, President Elisha Ferris, Orlando Eggleston, Samuel Faile.

The election of Gilbert S. Lyon was reached after a long and obstinate contest between Elisha P. Ferris and William H. Albro. Ferris sat as President during this balloting, having occupied this position the year before, and finally, when he

saw his own election was impossible, with Lyon and Albro as candidate in which each received three votes, he threw the deciding vote for Lyon.

His right to do so was contested in the Courts. During the contest no public business was enacted. The suit was not decided for many months, but was finally settled in favor of Lyon, the Democratic candidate.

Police Justice, an office established in 1870, was not filled until 1879, owing to the litigation over the Presidency of the former year. It was for a term of three years. James H. Moran was elected for the unexpired term of two years.

The Supreme Court reversed the declaration of President Ferris and favored the Republican Councilmen. The mandamus was quashed by the General Term and the opinion of the Supreme Court was reversed in favor of Ferris and the Democratic Councilmen.

The Second Dead-lock

The Presidential snarl of June 28, 1890, forms an interesting part of our records. Mr. Long, in the *Westchester News*, who participated, asks the following question: "When a President of the Village cannot be elected among such men as William H. Tibbits, Dr. H. Ernst Schmid, Samuel Hopper, William Reynolds Brown and Charles H. Tibbits, simply because they have expressed themselves as opposed to a 'Trap' or 'Syphon', and in favor of enforcing the contract for our system of sewers, there must be something wrong. What is it?"

This unsettled condition lasted ten weeks, at the expense of all other business, except the weekly call to elect a President. In the accompanying reproduced cartoon is shown the three Councilmen favoring the taxpayers, and three who favored the contractor.

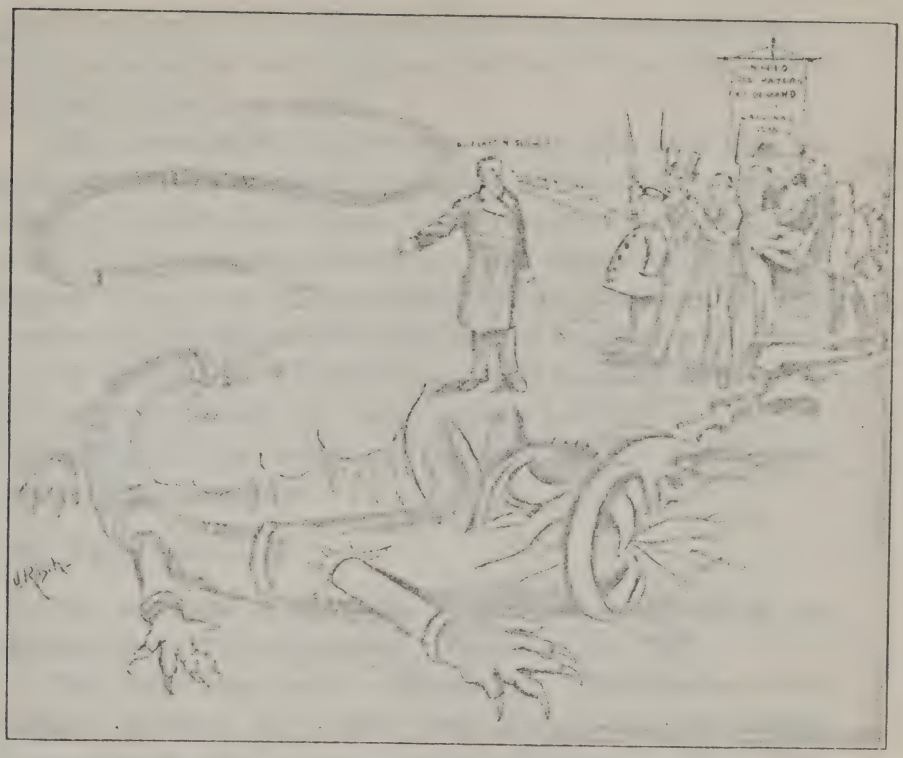
In an angry mood White Plains asks:

What dark hand holds thee,
The taxpayers have spoken.
Arise! this deadlock must be broken.

On July 12th, 1890, this dead-lock was broken when the *three hundred and fifty-fourth* ballot was ordered, and resulted in this manner:

Samuel Hopper	4
Harvey Husted	1
William B. Tibbits	1

Hopper was declared elected for the ensuing year.



THE SYPHON QUESTION
Dr. H. Ernst Schmid: "Gentlemen, that monster *must* be buried deeper."

Sewer Contracts

The contracts for the sewage were awarded to Freeman Merrit for the east side of the Bronx River. On the west side, the laying of the trunk sewage pipes and the disposal works on the extreme south line of the Village was awarded to William B. Landreth.

The delay of the condemnation by the Common Council, of the disposal works, halted the operations of 150 men. Three of the four walls were condemned and finally taken down and rebuilt. The trunk line or outlet pipe line, leading to the dis-

posal works on the west side of the river was started at the lower end, and when the north end was reached, it was found to be two feet higher than grade!

This necessitated the lowering of the pipe at a cost of $40,000, or the erection of a pumping station on the west side of the river, between Central Avenue and the river bed, just north of Hamilton Avenue bridge. The menace of Trap and Siphon to the health of the community was such that all of the doctors advised the people to vote against a siphon, which they did on April 12th. The three hours that the polls were open, 199 taxpayers voted: 182 voted against a siphon and for the expenditure of the money and only 17 for the siphon and against the expenditure.

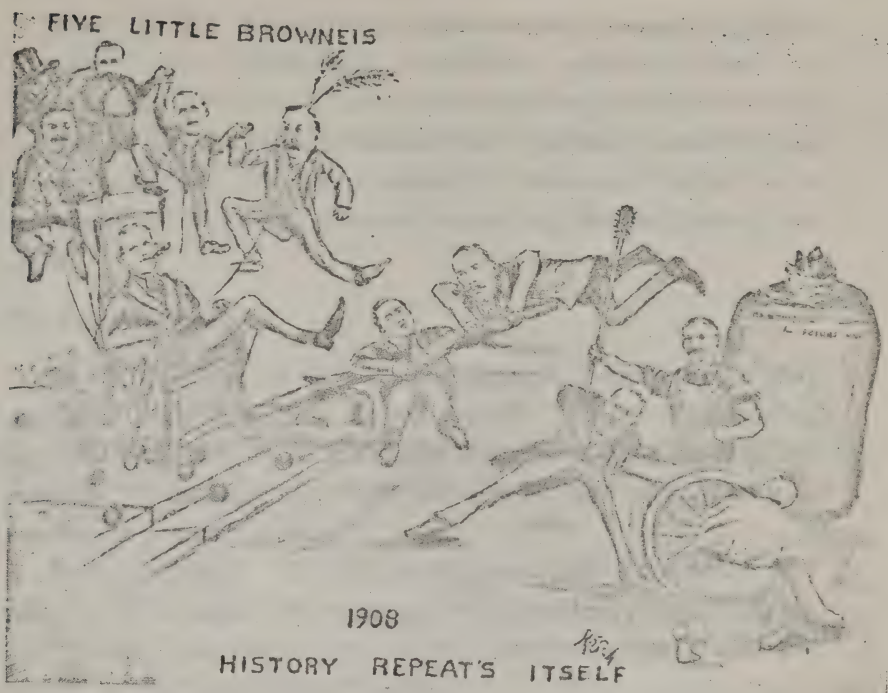
The Third Dead-lock

The sentiment of the public at this time is reflected in an editorial from "The Reporter", November 14, 1907:

The candidates on the Democratic Village ticket were Messrs. Harmon, 1st Ward; John Thompson, 2nd Ward; Staton, 3rd Ward; James H. Moran, 4th Ward; and G. Albert Thompson, 5th Ward. They were pledged to smash the machine. Dr. H. Ernst Schmid and W. J. Ackerly ran for Water Commissioners on this same ticket.

"The Daily Record", referring to the sale of the Democratic emblem, said that "numerous Democrats who place respectability above party machine manipulators, are disgusted with these conditions, to give way to a few disgruntled Republicans whose sole motive and ambition is to crush and defeat John J. Brown for President".

"Politics", the ancient adage says, "make strange bedfellows". The deal that was put through and the manner in which it was done is significant. First, the Democrats held



Harmon to Thompson: "Bert, if we had one more on this lever, we'd do the trick."

"This is a good time for the people to throw off the yoke of the Boss system."

their Ward conventions and named the candidates for Trustees. Then, by a prearranged understanding, these candidates, in three of the Wards, resigned and James H. Moran, John J. Thompson and G. Albert Thompson were placed on the ticket to fill the vacancies. Here is the result of that election:

Fourth Ward

Floy D. Hopkins	249	Republican
James H. Moran	248	Democrat

Mr. Moran took his seat under the decision of the Appellate Division of the Supreme Court.

Most of the Republican efforts were directed against "Jimmie", the Democratic candidate opposing Floy D. Hopkins, in the Fourth Ward. Every known political trick was resorted to and the returns showed that "Jimmie" was defeated by one vote. Mr. Moran protested the vote and carried it to the Appellate Division. Brown recognized the decision of the Court.

The First Meeting

At the opening of the Board, Trustee Moran arose and suggested that President Brown retire. "Your office having expired", he said, "you no doubt are too modest to vote for yourself. I suggest that you retire and that we appoint a temporary presiding officer."

Brown replied: "Under the Charter, the President must hold his office until his successor is appointed. I don't think the Trustee from the Fourth Ward represents the voice of the people, as the late election shows."

The spectators who crowded the Council Room were highly entertained. Finally, Clerk Paulding, with a solemn face, walked about after the manner of a Church Deacon, taking up a "collection". Sixty-seven times Mr. Paulding circled about the Trustees, gathering the ballots. An adjournment followed.

At the next meeting 34 ballots were cast; a total of 101, with no choice. Brown was not given the opportunity to vote for himself. His opponents had a scheme carefully planned, whereby no tie vote was permitted, by this means holding up the election, if possible, until the next year, in the hope that they could elect Trustees in opposition to Brown's ascendancy. Each clique accused the other of playing the familiar "Dog-in-the-manger" game.

Frederick S. Barnum was elected President the year following.

In 1909, the evening before the election of officers for the ensuing year, a meeting was called at Trustee Bond's residence. The object of the call was to defeat John J. Brown for President of the Board. Six of the ten members that constituted the full board were present: Mr. Chris Harmon (D), J. Henry Armbruster (D), James H. Moran (R), G. Albert Thompson (R), Elmer Bond and John J. Thompson (R).

The four members of the Board not present were regular enrolled Republicans favoring John J. Brown for President. The Moran faction that called the meeting, had invited the two Democratic members of the Board, to attend, with the object in view of concentrating on a man meeting with their approval. Thus they would accomplish their object: defeat Brown.

When this object was made known, the two Democratic members failed to lend themselves to any such proposition immediately. The flea-like acrobatic antics of "Jimmie" can only be appreciated by those who know him as well as does this writer. When he realized the scheme had failed, the feverish atmosphere cooled down somewhat.

The candidacy of Assessor was then taken up. George Thompson the brother of John, was named for the office. At this point, Bond's ire was instantly aroused. He objected on the grounds of: "Too much Thompson! Too much Thompson!" Here, Mr. Harmon named John Rösch for the office. In a moment "Jimmie" was on his feet with vituperative objections.

Now Harmon was on his feet, exclaiming: "You will vote for John Rösch for Assessor. If you don't, Mr. Armbruster and I will vote for John J. Brown. Take your choice!" I received the appointment the following night.

I was not consulted and was not informed of the fact that I was slated as a candidate, until late on the afternoon of my election. I received the necessary six votes and served for three terms.

CHAPTER XXIX

The White Plains Lyceum

THE White Plains Lyceum was first established November 21st, 1871. The objects to be attained by the Association, as set forth in its Constitution, were the advancement of intelligence, of culture and of morality. First officers:

President—Hon. John W. Mills
Secretary—Charles H. Tibbits
Treasurer—Gilbert S. Lyon

During the first year of the Lyceum's activity, the rooms occupied were on the south-east corner of Railroad Avenue and Grove Street.

From the "Westchester County Reporter", William B. Sutherland and Edmund G. Sutherland, Editors and Proprietors, of Friday, November 27th, 1891, these facts are taken:

"The History of the Lyceum — an interesting narrative of the birth, struggles, trials and triumphs — in an address by Charles H. Tibbits, at the celebration of the twentieth anniversary, Saturday evening, November 21st, 1891. In part, he said:

"'We are told that the unexpected is always what happens, and the impossible is that which is always being accomplished. The familiar utterances of our proverbial philosophy are again verified in the occasion which brings us together tonight.

'When the formation of this organization was being discussed, one of its warmest advocates remarked that he would give it one year as the utmost limit of existence and he only gave utterance to what was in the minds of all.

'Nor was this despondent view to be wondered at when we remember that more than one attempt of a similar kind had already been made, only to result in speedy and complete failure.

'Nothing daunted, however, by the said record of the past, a little band of men, thoroughly impressed with the importance of establishing some such association as this, met here on the evening of November 21st, 1871, and organized the Lyceum, pledging themselves to pay the rent until the first of April following, of a desirable suite of rooms then offered, on the corner of Grove Street and Railroad Avenue. . . . A committee was appointed to solicit subscriptions. . . . At the beginning of the new year the rooms were thrown open and the Lyceum entered upon its useful career. . . .

'After several years larger quarters became necessary. The new quarters were in the Hopper Building, corner of Railroad Avenue and Lexington Avenue. . . . The sum of $80.00 was expended for books, selecting full sets of Irving, Dickens and Scott. . . . Some volumes have been donated from time to time but by far the greater portion of the works now in the Library was purchased with the profits of the annual lecture-course which was always devoted to this object, except when the exigencies of the situation demanded that that be used to pay current expenses.

'The Library now contains some 1500 volumes. . . . One feature of its early years which commended it to the public more perhaps than any other, was the night school. . . . No charge was made for books of instruction. . . . Membership fee, $3.00. . . . The night school for years did a noble work for those who had neglected or been deprived of educational opportunities in their boyhood.

'The annual lecture course held at Lafayette Hall during the winter months were thoroughly enjoyed. $2.00 to $3.00 for season tickets. We recall some of the most distinguished speakers during the course of lectures: Gough, Beecher, Chapin, Philips, Proctor, Parsons, Du Chaillu, Mrs. Scott Siddons, Burbank. And among the musical organizations: The English Ballad Company, The Temple Quartette, and the New York Philharmonic Club. Also Camilla Urso and The Temple Quartette of Boston'."

White Plains Public Library

The White Plains Lyceum, established November 21st, 1871 was the nucleus of the present city Library. It became the property of the White Plains Public School, and was transferred from the school building on Court Street to a small frame structure adjoining, owned by the School. Thereafter it was known as The White Plains Public Library, and was under the supervision of the Trustees of the School Board, Dr.

H. Ernst Schmid, John J. Haley, George G. Platt, Edward B. Long and James B. Lockwood, remaining under their charge until the year 1908.

The Library opened to the public December 6th, 1899, with Clara H. Hopper as Librarian. Outgrowing this building, Dr. H. Ernst Schmid, John J. Brown, Philip B. Parker, David Cromwell, John T. Rehill, Henry R. Barrett, Henry O. Sniffen, Howard E. Foster, Edward B. Long and George G. Platt were successful in interesting Andrew Carnegie in the project for a new building.

The village furnished the site and Mr. Carnegie the money. This new Library, corner of Grand and Quarropas Streets, the present location, was completed in the year 1908; the removal made and the new edifice opened to the public April 29th, 1908, with 9,907 volumes, chartered under the University of the State of New York.

In 1917, Mr. Andrew Carnegie appropriated money for an addition, and the north and south wings were built. In 1923, with vision to the future growth and space needs, the City purchased the adjoining lots on Court Street.

Overcrowded conditions again made it necessary to furnish more space and in 1925 the Common Council of the City of White Plains, at the request of the Library Board, made an appropriation for a new, fire-proof addition, a stack-room for the safe housing of the more valuable volumes, and a very much needed Reference Room.

The depression years of 1932 and 1933 witnessed a heavy increase in the use of every department of the Library, with a circulation of 417,782 volumes in 1932 and 417,432 in 1933. For many people it was both school and recreation center, doubly valued when other opportunities were closed to them.

Since 1933 the number of books circulated has decreased, due largely to wider employment and less leisure for reading, while the reference use of books within the building has steadily increased from 31,359 in 1932 to 44,419 in 1936. Ten thousand nine hundred and fourteen (10,914) questions on a wide variety of subjects were asked and answered at the reference desk in 1936; 4,319 in the children's room.

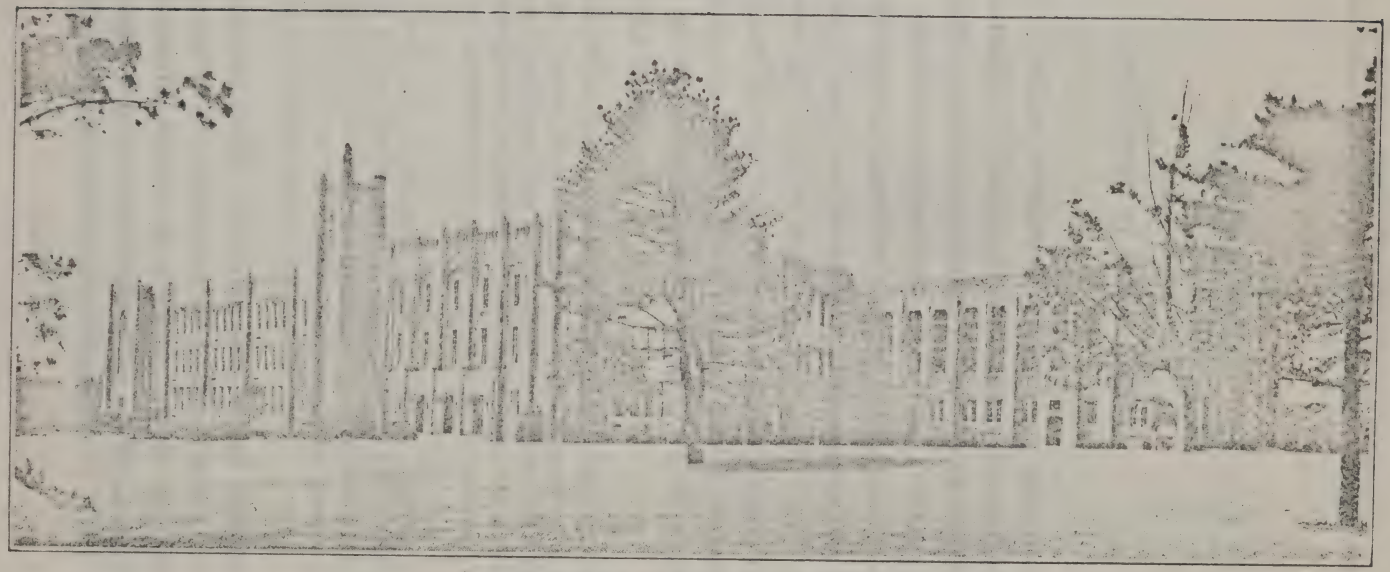
The Library's less well-known services, — Saturday morning story hour for children, annual exhibit of children's books in November featuring the best publications of the year, advisory aids to readers, the compiling of lists of books on special subjects, visits to schools to acquaint children with the library, and the borrowing of unusual books from other libraries on request — are growing continually more popular, giving evidence of the Library's usefulness as a "University of the Public".

New book shelves, furniture and equipment have been added from time to time as demands increased. Space for both books and readers is now again inadequate, and either a new building or an addition to the present structure is much needed.

In September 1937 the Daughters of the American Revolution presented to the Library a shrine, framing a copy of the original draft of the Constitution of the United States. This stands in the main reading room and is an interesting addition.

The Library closed the year December 31st, 1936 with a very carefully selected stock of books, an effort being made to supply demands on all subjects, with a total number of 61,243 volumes and a circulation of 386,717, convincing proof of a useful unit in community life, very aptly expressed as in the days of the Lyceum Library: "The objects to be obtained are the advancement of intelligence, culture and morality."

The present Library Board for the year 1937, the greater number of whom have served since 1935 are: Richard H. Levet, President; Mrs. Samuel W. Hamilton, Secretary; Crescens Hubbard, Mrs. Newton I. Steers, Albert A. Verrilli, Fraser P. Price and H. Claude Hardy, Superintendent of Schools, ex-efficio member.



THE WHITE PLAINS HIGH SCHOOL

CHAPTER XXX

The Schools of White Plains

A PUBLIC school system of a town is a sure index to the character of the people. Communities are judged to a large extent by the nature of the educational facilities at hand. Without good schools any given community is seriously handicapped. Conversely, good schools are usually found where the people are enterprising and progressive. Progress and schools go hand in hand.

Dr. H. Claude Hardy, Superintendent of the White Plains public schools, in his book "The Evolution and Development of the Office of Superintendent of Schools of Westchester County", (1932) says:

> "Educationally Westchester County stands out pre-eminently among the Counties of the Empire State. This has been so for nearly 150 years. In 1795 a bill was introduced into the Assembly at Albany entitled 'An Act for the Encouragement of Schools.' This act was finally passed, and paved the way for the ultimate establishment of a State system of public schools.
>
> "Ebenezar Purdy, of Westchester County, was a member of the famous committee of five that reported to the Assembly the bill in question. As a subsequent result of the enactment of this legislation, in 1812, the University of the State of New York, which was the name given to the State's system of common schools, was established."

It is a matter of pride, therefore, that we of Westchester County can point to the influence of a Westchester County citizen in the establishment of a State system of common schools that is now regarded throughout the world as one of the greatest educational experiments of all times.

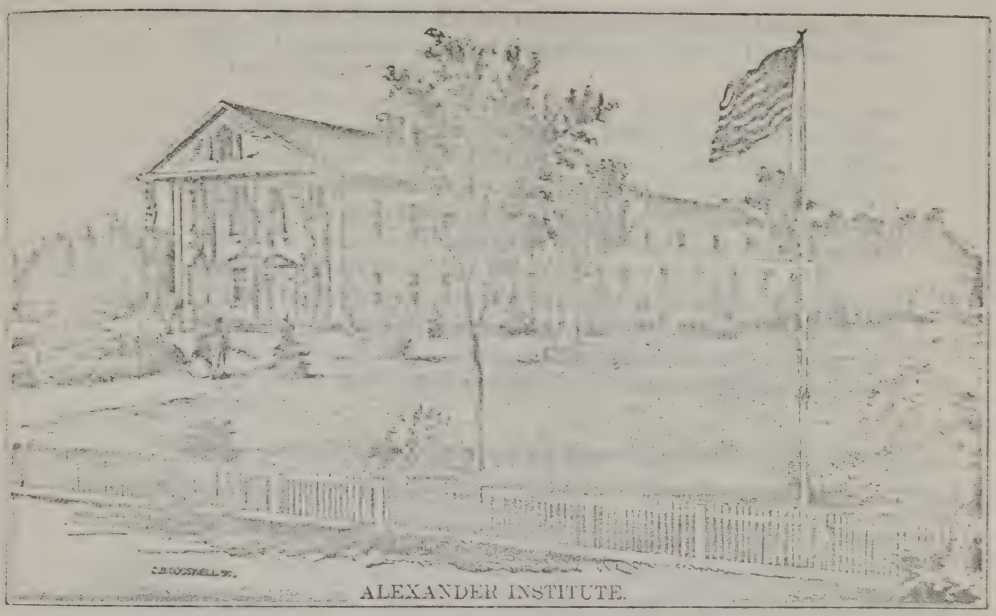
Early Schools

The White Plains Academy was incorporated in 1828. It was located on the east side of Broadway between Lake Street and the new extension of Main Street. John N. Smith was principal and held the position until 1832. He was succeeded by Professor John Swinburne. In 1840 Professor Swinburne withdrew from the Academy and opened a private school which he conducted until 1851, when he retired. The school was located midway between Main Street and Hamilton Avenue, on the east side of Broadway.

A female seminary was founded in 1835 by Andrew L. Halstead. The Rev. Robert W. Harris opened a boarding school for boys in 1835 that continued successfully until 1857. A school for girls, known as the White Plains Institute was successfully conducted up to 1873. In 1886 there were three private schools. The Alexander Institute, the most important, was established in 1845, and was conducted for twelve years by William S. Hall, under the name of Hamilton Military Institute; for the next six years it was under the supervision of General Munson J. Lockwood who called it the White Plains Military Academy.

During the year 1863 Mr. Oliver R. Willis assumed charge and the name was changed again to Alexander Institute. Mr. Willis had a corps of competent teachers to assist him. The pupils were taught in military maneuvers as a part of the curriculum. It was pleasantly situated on the west side of Broadway a short distance north of the Presbyterian Church.

Miss Francis Harris' School, started in 1867, was located on South Lexington Avenue near the Post Road. In 1875 Miss Mary Adler opened a school for boys and girls on Lexington Avenue. She subsequently removed to Lafayette Hall, and in



ALEXANDER INSTITUTE, LOCATED ON BROADWAY

1885 removed to Church Street. The number of pupils averaged about forty. The building on Brookfield Street, now occupied by Robert Bromm, formerly a member of the Board of Education, was once occupied, on its upper floor, by a private school, in 1854, with Mr. George Forsythe, the son of a Presbyterian minister, as the teacher. Mr. James H. Moran attended this school in his early boyhood.

During the nineties, Miss Strecker, an unusually competent instructor, conducted a private school for boys and girls, in a building on upper Railroad Avenue, near Broadway.

The First Public School

From the following records, it will be seen that the first public school in White Plains, was established about 1836:

'David Fisher Ex of to Trustees School District No. 1 White Plains Deed and Rd Dower dated May 1, 1845 Red June 4, 1846. Libre 116. C. 15.

"All that certain School House lot and parcel of land situated and being in the Village of White Plains and known as the property of School District No. 1 in said town of White Plains and bounded on the north in front by the public highway leading from the village of White Plains to Rye and on the west and south and east by land of David Fisher decd. containing and being forty feet front and rear and thirty feet deep.

"This conveyance hereby declared to be given to supply the place and in lieu of deed given for said school house lot by deceased Purdy and wife to said school district about the year 1836 which deed is supposed to be lost, and has not been recorded."

This locality was known as the vineyard. The above description locates the school house on the vineyard map. This map is recorded as the Serrell Map in 1852 No. 263 (Register's Office). Serrell was the surveyor. This school house was on the first highway, laid out in April 1708, leading from Rye to White Plains, six rods wide and was called the "Queen's Highway", (now North Street), which ran diagonally across the present Westchester Avenue through to Broadway. The school stood on the north side of the present Westchester Avenue and about opposite the Westchester and Boston Railway Depot, and adjoining the property of James Dick, the Village tanner. His vats were on the Casaway brook, the stream to the east of the Depot.

The Court Street building was erected in 1856, and consisted of four rooms. The site of this building is that of the present Court Street structure, which is contained within the block bounded by Court Street, Martine Avenue and Mamaroneck Avenue. Principals of this school were Richard Cornell and Gasper G. Brower.

In 1864 the Joint School District No. 1, in the Towns of White Plains and Harrison, was organized with the following

Board of Education: Hiram P. Rowell, Charles H. Davis, Stephen S. Marshall, Clerk, John Swinburne, Treasurer.

At this time Charles Ferris was made Principal of the Male Department; Miss Sarah Jane Heustis, Principal of the Female Department, and Miss Kate E. Horton, assistant teacher. The budget, including the teachers' salaries, was less than $2000 for the year.

In September 1865, Luther S. Feaks was made Principal of the Male Department and continued in that position until June 1867. Joseph Thompson was appointed Principal in September 1867 and continued until December 1874, at which time Principal Charles A. Genung assumed the office until June 1893.

In 1893 Ralph A. Stewart was appointed Principal and remained in that position until November 1894, at which time he was made Superintendent of Schools of White Plains and continued in this position until June 1897.

The High School was established in 1895 with a freshman class of thirty members. Five of these were graduated four years later in 1899. The first High School Principal was Frederick W. Brown, who was appointed in 1895 and remained in this position until June 1897. The next High School Principal was George H. McNair, who held the position from September 1897 to December 1902. At this time there were 28 teachers connected with the school system. There were 132 High School pupils and 952 Elementary School pupils making a total of 1084. During this time Sylvester R. Shear was Superintendent of Schools, that is, from September 1897 to April 1902.

Following Mr. McNair as High School Principal, John W. Lumbard was elected to this position and served in this capacity until June 1912, at which time Harry W. Rockwell

was elected to the position, which he occupied until June 1917. He was followed by W. Lynn Houseman who served to June 1927, when Herman L. McCullough was appointed and remained in the position until June 1930. He was succeeded by Frank H. Nye.

In 1895 the Court Street building was remodelled and several rooms added to the structure. In 1898 two new eight room buildings were constructed, the Fisher Avenue building and the East View Avenue building. Five years later the registration had increased to such an extent that another building was necessary and the Hillside Avenue grammar school building was erected in 1903. This is also an eight room building. At this time the teachers numbered nine in the High School and 29 in the Elementary Schools, making a total of 38, and the increase in pupils brought the number up to 185 in the High School and 1301 in the elementary schools, making a total of 1486.

William A. McConnell served as Superintendent from May 1902 to March 1905. Guy H. Baskerville was elected Superintendent in May 1905 and served to August 1908. His successor was Charles Cornell Ramsay who served until July 1912, at which time John W. Lumbard was elected to the position and served until February 1, 1934, when he retired from service.

In 1908 the Chatterton Hill School, which is in the Town of Greenburgh, was annexed to the White Plains school system and this brought the teaching force up to a total of 55 teachers, and total pupils to 2206.

In 1909, a two room structure was built at Silver Lake Park in the Town of Harrison, also within this school district. In 1909 also, the High School building on Main Street was completed, costing about $250,000. Until this time the High

School had been located in the Court Street building, which was now given over entirely to the elementary grades.

In 1912 a four room fire-proof brick building was constructed at North White Plains and the boundaries of the school district extended to include a portion of the Town of North Castle.

In 1913 there were 17 High School teachers, 81 elementary school teachers, making a total of 98. There were 415 High School pupils, 2758 elementary pupils, total 3173.

In 1914 there were 19 High School teachers, 84 elementary school teachers, making a total of 103. There were 504 High School pupils, 2973 elementary school pupils, making a total of 3477. At this time two more elementary schools were voted by the taxpayers, an eight-room fire-proof building at the corner of Post Road and Sound View Avenue which was occupied February 1915, and a four-room fire-proof building on Battle Hill. These two latter buildings have been extended and at the present time the Battle Hill School, with its latest additions, occupies nearly an entire block, and the Post Road School now contains twenty-four rooms.

When White Plains became a city, January 1, 1916, and the school district boundaries were made co-terminus with the city boundaries, thus eliminating small sections of the towns of North Castle and Harrison which formerly formed a part of the school district, there was added to the district at this time, considerable area which formerly was a part of the Town of White Plains, but not of the Village or School district. Two small buildings, known as the Rosedale school and the Ridgeway school were thus added.

The school population of the city was increasing so rapidly that it became necessary to plan for larger quarters for both elementary and High School pupils. In 1925 extensive addi-

tions were made to four elementary schools and in them the Junior High Schools were established. This greatly relieved the overcrowded condition in the High School on Main Street.

Then followed in 1926 the construction of an elementary school on Orchard Street, known as the George Washington School, to serve the fast growing section in the northern part of the city.

It was soon found necessary again to relieve the High School situation and accordingly in 1928, a seventeen acre site was purchased at Old Mamaroneck Road and Hartsdale Avenue, on which a modern building was erected and athletic and play fields established. On the completion of this school plant, the old High School on Main Street was abandoned for school use.

In 1929 extensive additions were made to the East View Avenue Junior High School and to the Battle Hill School. On completion of the latter, the Chatterton Hill School was discontinued.

And in 1930 the Rochambeau School was erected on Fisher Avenue near Midland Avenue, to replace the old Fisher Avenue elementary school at Bank Street.

At the time the Court Street building was remodelled and the High School established, in 1895, the following members of the Board of Education were in office:

Edward B. Long, James W. Stafford, John P. Moran, James H. Moran, E. Ernst Schmid, Harvey Husted. The following have also served as members of the Board for one or more terms during the years from 1895 to 1936: Dr. G. G. Platt, John J. Haley, John J. Brown, James B. Lockwood, George B. Burbank, Dr. Edward N. Jones, Robert C. Bromm, William A. Cromwell, Eugene F. McKinley, James J. Shaw, Mrs. Henry P. Griffin, John Y. Lavery, H. William Smith,

Robert Y. Clark, Ambrose F. McCabe, Richard E. Dougherty, William X. Weed, R. Emmet Digney, Eben H. P. Squire, John Burling, Thomas Holden, Jr., Charles H. Burr, Albert W. Haigh, William G. Barrett and F. C. McLaughlin.

The present Board of Education consists of: Dr. Vincent A. Gallo, John A. Greer, Mrs. Edith S. Berges, J. Henry Neale and George L. Allin.

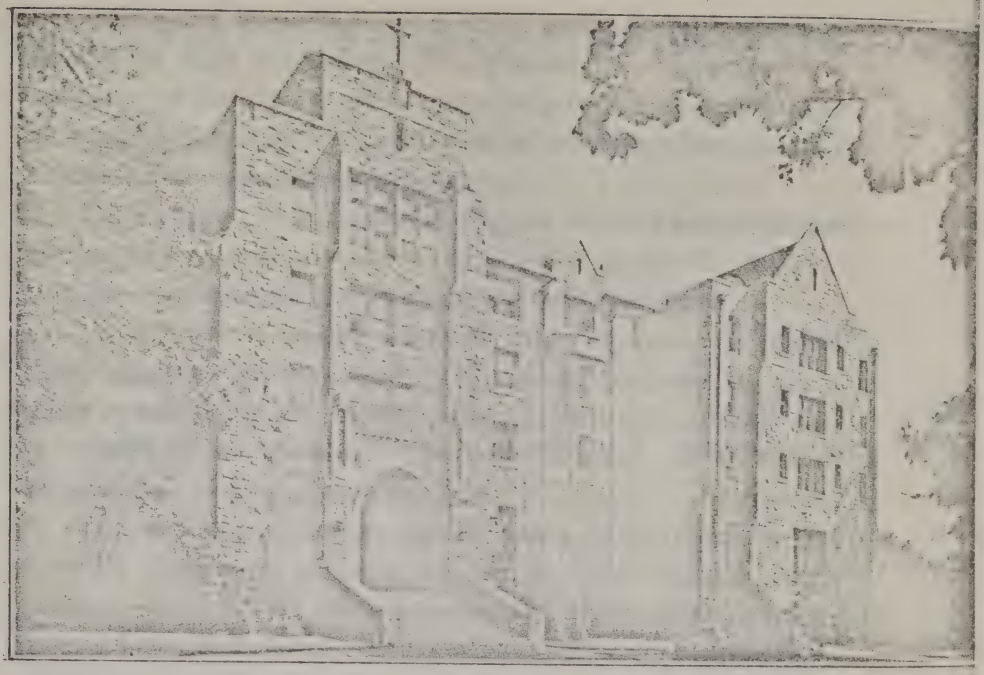
Dr. H. Claude Hardy is Superintendent of Schools and Francis C. Buros is Assistant Superintendent, and Miss Eleanor Lowthian is Secretary to the Board of Education. The present total public school registration is 7644 with 330 teachers, principals and supervisors.

In contrast to the budget of 1864, when less than $2000 was spent for school purposes, the budget for the year 1937 is $1,856,260.76.

During the period of the depression the school enrollment, especially on the High School level, has increased at an unusually rapid rate, due to the fact that boys and girls who would ordinarily accept employment have been unable to secure jobs, and therefore must remain in school.

This situation has been exceedingly troublesome from a financial point of view. The increase in school enrollment has taken place at the most expensive level of public education. The local school authorities have been considerably embarrassed by having to provide for the education of an increasing number of pupils, and at the same time by the necessity of meeting the insistent demand for retrenchment. It has been one of the most perplexing problems with which the school authorities have had to contend during these trying years.

Good Counsel College, a liberal arts college conducted by the Sisters of the Divine Compassion, was founded in 1923.



GOOD COUNSEL COLLEGE—PRESTON HALL

It is situated on the east side of Broadway in one of the most beautiful sections of White Plains.

The college comprises fifteen buildings surrounded by thirty-six acres of campus, including ancient groves, lawns, tennis courts, and fields for athletics. Many of the buildings are modern and all are well-equipped for their purpose.

The college is registered by the Regents of the University of the State of New York, accredited by the Middle States Association of Colleges and Secondary Schools, and the National Catholic Education Association, and has membership in the leading non-accrediting associations.

Although keeping pace with the changing requirements of the age by utilizing all that is best and noblest in modern ideals

and principles, the college holds tenaciously to the traditional culture of high education. The student must acquire as a background during her first two years a broad general culture as a preparation for whatever field of concentration she may choose for the remaining two years.

The college offers four-year courses leading to the degree of Bachelor of Arts or Bachelor of Science. It lays the foundation for careers in all the professions open to women.

In addition to sound academic training stress is placed upon character development. The college prepares its graduates to efficiently adjust themselves to positions of trust and responsibility to exemplify the highest ideals of Christian womanhood and to become leaders.

The enrollment being limited, there is opportunity for friendly intercourse between the faculty and students which is most beneficial for the scholastic and personality development of the individual. Every student has opportunities to participate in the wide range of extra-curricular activities which afford ample provision for the various talents and inclinations. They include musical (both vocal and instrumental), artistic, and literary pursuits; public speaking, dramatics, and athletic sports.

Formal social functions are held with sufficient frequency to enable the students to acquire poise and social grace.

The Alumnae of the college are creditably filling places in every field open to women and many have made outstanding academic and professional records.

In addition to the several public elementary and Junior High Schools in the city educational system, there are two Parochial schools, offering training for Catholic students. St. John's School and St. Bernard's School have enrollments of well over 700 children, and offer the same curriculum required

for the public and private schools, chartered by the University of the State of New York.

The older of the two is St. John's School, which this year added two grades to the curriculum, making the course that of a Junior High School. Opening about 46 years ago, St. John's School occupied a red brick building which has since been torn

ST. JOHN'S PAROCHIAL SCHOOL

down. It was on the site of the present church hall on Hamilton Avenue. In 1930 the school moved into its present quarters, next to the church. The Sisters of Charity conduct the school.

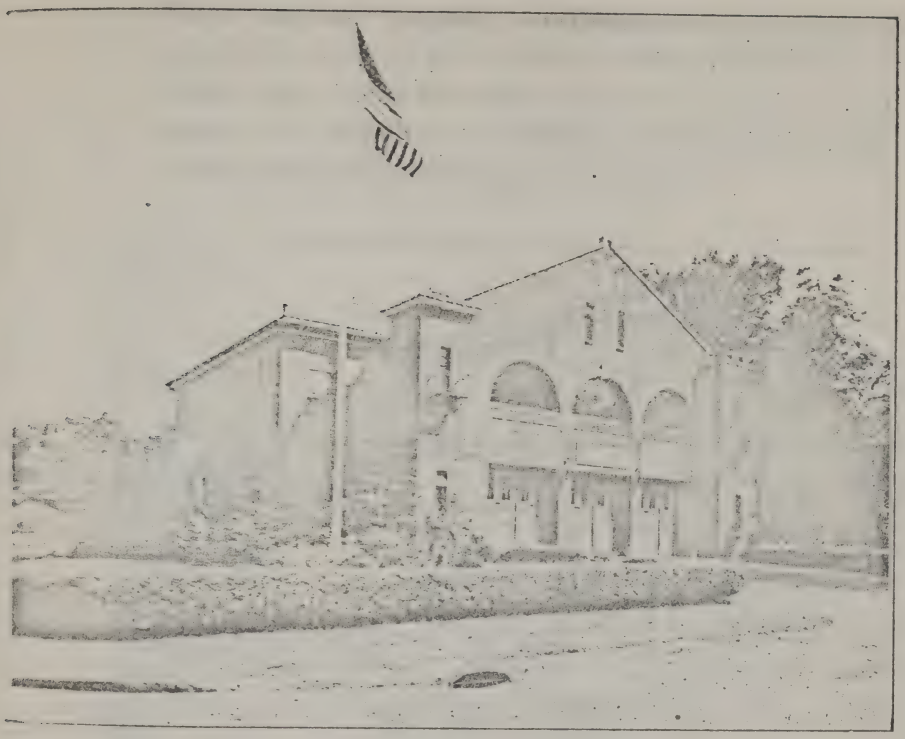
The new St. John's School is one of the most fully equipped in the county, as well as one of the most attractive from the architectural standpoint. It has facilities for the many classes, recreation rooms, a playground, a library, laboratories for

science study and a gymnasium. Dedicated in October of 1930, the present school building is a credit to the city and to the parish. The enrollment this year totals 450 pupils.

St. Bernard's Parochial School opened its doors in September of 1932, offering four elementary grades. The rapid strides which the institution has made in its short history is shown by the fact that the course, now complete to Junior High School, through the eight elementary grades, has a registration of 295 students. The Sisters of the Divine Compassion, of Good Counsel College, North Broadway, conduct the school, which offers complete educational and recreational facilities, in a modern building.

Each year after its inception, one or two classes were added and various improvements were made in equipment, so that at the present time the school ranks with any other progressive and modern educational institution in the city. Instrumental in aiding in the growth of the school, St. Bernard's Parents' Association has given financial assistance enabling the purchase of books, furniture, a library, a playground and many other advantages of the up-to-date institution.

The course of study is the same as that which is required in the public schools and is chartered by the Board of Regents of the University of the State of New York.



FIRE DEPARTMENT HEADQUARTERS

CHAPTER XXXI

The Fire Department

FROM the "Eastern State Journal", dated June 19th, 1845, a printing office then located on Broadway, the first mention is made of the real need for a fire company, and a localized desire for one in the Village of White Plains. But a lapse of six years intervened before any practical action was taken. The first company to organize was The

Hope Engine Company, on December 2nd, 1851. Shortly after, the members met in the old Pocahontas Hotel near the Depot, and elected the following officers: John D. Gray, Captain; J. P. Jenkins, 1st Lieutenant; Thomas H. Schuyler, Clerk; and Robert Cochran, Treasurer.

HOPE ENGINE COMPANY

"Old Hope" was shipped here in August, 1854 for the use of the Hope Engine Company No. 1. A large crowd gathered at the freight depot upon its arrival. A parade was formed and proceeded to St. Mary's Lake (now Silver Lake) to try the engine out.

The apparatus was temporarily stored in the blacksmith shop where Genung's Department Store now stands. The

permanent quarters were later built by Frederick Hartman on Rabbit Street (now Brookfield Street). The company paid an annual rental of $50 for the lower floor. Civil Service Commissioner Robert C. Bromm, ex-chief of the department (three terms) is the present occupant and owner of the premises that first housed The Hope Engine Company.

The year 1861 was a notable one in the Fire Department's history. A new Company was formed—another was in embryo—and the most destructive fire occurred—the John W. Young lumber yard, Simeon Smith's carpenter shop and several other structures. The fire broke out in the Orawaupum stables on the night of April 12th, 1861. The burned area lay on the north side of Martine Avenue between Lexington Avenue and Orawaupum Street.

"Old Hope" was on the ground very shortly after the alarm was sounded, under command of David P. Barnes. Then—water soon gave out at the Orawaupum cisterns. At this stage, a pump was requisitioned, the machine borrowed from the Harlem Railroad. Employees of the Road forced water from the Bronx River into the tanks at the Station, the supply flowing from there into the "Hope's" box.

All night long, the battle was kept up. Reserves manned the brakes, as one crowd after another became fatigued, and it was daylight before the flames were conquered. This conflagration brought about the forming of the Union Hook and Ladder Company. Mr. John D. Gray was the principal factor in its organization; and through his zeal and intense interest, following the great fire, thirty-seven citizens were enrolled.

They proceeded immediately to ascertain the price of apparatus. Money was subscribed by members and the public alike. The first fire-fighting unit, known as "Old Goose-Neck", cost $275. It was first housed in a barn adjoining Farr's Hotel,

opposite the Court House, and made its initial appearance on parade, on the 85th anniversary of our National Independence, July 4th, 1861.

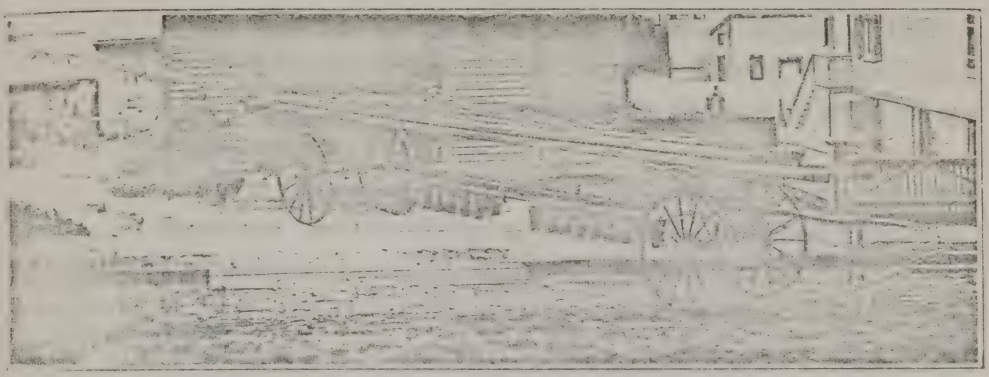
During the latter part of 1861 and the forepart of 1862, dissension arose in Hope Engine Company. One of the factions met in the Union Hotel and decided that an independent fire company should be formed. A Committee was appointed to select a name and it chose The Swinburne Fire Engine Company, No. 2, in honor of John Swinburne, then President of the Fire District, and later, in 1866, the first president of the then new Village.

The officers elected were: Foreman, David P. Barnes; First Assistant, Cornelius P. Ward; Second Assistant, Henry B. Ford; Secretary, Harris Sniffen. The Company procured an engine about one-half the weight of "Old Hope", at a cost of $450, on June 25th, 1862. The Civil War was on, a number of the members enlisted, and the few remaining were unable to sustain the financial burden. The Trustees of the fire district refused to assume it and take title to the apparatus.

The Union Hook and Ladder Company was organized May 16th, 1861. The first officers were: Foreman, John D. Gray; Assistant, John R. Tompkins; Secretary, E. P. Ferris; Treasurer, Daniel H. Little. The Board of Education gave permission to the Company to erect a building to house their apparatus, on the southwest corner of the lot, at Martine Avenue and Court Street. This was paid for by private subscription.

In 1869, to decrease expenses, old "Hope Engine" occupied the ground floor, and various necessary articles to sustain the efficiency of the Company were ignored by the Board of Trustees. The outcome of this treatment was that after returning

from a "Wash up", on the evening of July 30th, 1874, "Old Hope" was "run in", tongue first, and the Company disbanded.



HOOK & LADDER COMPANY — "OLD GOOSENECK"

The Union Hook and Ladder Company held their organization together until the first week in May, 1876, when they too, by a vote of 9 to 6, resolved to disband. The paraphanalia of the Company was sold and the proceeds divided among its members.

The department remained in this condition up to September 19, 1883, when it reorganized in the office of Dr. G. G. Platt, Sniffen Building. Dr. Platt presiding and C. P. Sherwood as acting Secretary. During the night of November 25th, 1876, a fire broke out in the rear of the block between the Union Hotel and Lexington Avenue, which threatened a large area. Citizens manned "Old Hope" and were rewarded by the final checking of the flames before any great damage was done.

Public opinion now demanded action; hence it was that on the evening of December 5th following, President Elisha P. Ferris addressed a lengthy communication to the Board of Trustees, in which the necessity of an adequate Fire Depart-

ment was recognized. In conclusion he recommended the adoption of a resolution appointing a committee of four citizens and four members of the Board to ascertain and report on these points: (1) The cost of a new and lighter apparatus, (2) What expense would be contracted to repair "Hope Engine", and (3) The best means to be adopted to provide an efficient re-organized Fire Department.

This resolution was unanimously passed. The President appointed Trustees Wiegand, Horton, Riordan and Eggleston, and citizens James H. Moran, Edward Baxter Sr., Samuel Hopper and John W. Young. After mature investigation, those gentlemen unanimously reported that "Old Hope" was "entirely unsuited to our wants, and if retained should be used as a spare engine" recommending at the same time that the Board "at once take steps to procure authority to purchase for the Village a steam engine the cost of which was not to exceed $4,000, and having such authority, to organize a good and efficient Fire Department.

In pursuance of that declaration so unanimously favored, the Board called a special meeting of the taxable inhabitants to vote upon the proposition. The meeting was held in the Town Hall, (Sniffen Building) on the the evening of January 9th, 1877. At this meeting James H. Moran offered a resolution appropriating $4,000 for the modern engine.

Unanimous as the proposition was in its full approval by the committee, it met a disastrous defeat at the polls. 103 votes were cast, of which but five favored the proposition. After this defeat, all active efforts in behalf of reorganization subsided. Minor fires occasionally resulted. "Old Hope", with her dried-up suction pumps, always came to the rescue after a fashion, manned by volunteer citizens.

Although the necessity for such a step was from time to time the theme of articles in the local press, there was no attempt at reorganization. These warning editorials brought no more than passing comment from old firemen. There was no "Wake Up!" spirit on the Board of Trustees. But the time came when they did stir from their lethargy in no uncertain manner. Destiny was slowly working out the problem.

THE GIBSON FIRE IN 1880
Corner Main Street and Lexington Avenue
This fire led to the reorganization of the volunteer department.

This awakening came one morning, when dawn brought extreme peril for the entire Village from a devastating fire. It was Saturday, July 10th, 1880, when the barn in the rear of

the Gibson Building, on the northeast corner of Railroad Avenue and Lexington Avenue, was found to be on fire and beyond all hope of saving.

The flames had their inception in a stable. So great was the extent of the fire that a bucket brigade's effort, formed on the spur of the moment, could in no wise cope with it. Before "Old Hope" could swing into action, the rear of the Gibson Building was burning.

And again "Old Hope's" pumps were dry! Frantic efforts of the pumpers could not force the stream to the blaze on the cornice of the structure. The outlook was desperately gloomy. A certain alarmed helplessness took possession of everyone. There was nothing much they could do. Telegraph messages were sent by President Ferris to Port Chester, Mount Vernon and Mount Kisco for aid. Superintendent Bissell of the Harlem Railroad prepared a special train to bring a "steamer" from Morrisania. Meanwhile, the ladders of "Old Goose Neck" Hook and Ladder Company were raised: one to the top of a sidewalk covered shed, another from the gutter of the shed to the top of the building.

A man on every other rung handed up leather buckets of water to the men on the roof. They, in turn, after pouring the contents over the blazing rafters, would toss the empty buckets down to the street. After all danger had passed, the requests for aid from Morrisania and Mount Kisco were withdrawn; but a truck from Mount Vernon and an engine from Port Chester arrived in less than an hour after being summoned. A collation was served the visitors on the Orawaupum Green, followed by speeches by President Ferris and others.

There was no water system in those days. The water supply, as a consequence, was scarce and inadequate. In the middle of Railroad Avenue, there was a large cistern, used for fire pro-

tection. Water drained into this cistern from the four buildings on the street intersection—the Gibson, Sniffen, Carpenter and Hopper buildings. Several volunteers had extremely narrow escapes from contact with the flames. During the fire described above, as men pulled off the iron cover of the cistern, accumulated gasses exploded, sending a gush of flame a dozen feet in midair.

Marcus Badt, the clothier occupied the lower floor of the Gibson Building; the second floor was used for many years by the Common Council, while the Masonic Temple had headquarters on the top floor.

Among the notable happenings in "War Days", was the turning out of the Fire Department on the occasion of Captain J. J. Chambers' Company leaving for the front, by way of Elmira, in 1861. The fire-fighting forces assembled in front of the old Court House and escorted the soldiers through the streets to the Railroad Depot when they boarded a train for New York.

Twenty-seven left the ranks during the days of the Civil War. Many men from the Fire Companies were chosen to fill positions of great responsibility in civil and public life. Conspicuous among them may be mentioned County Judge Robert Cochran, County Clerks John P. Jenkins and John M. Rowell, County Treasurer Gilbert S. Lyon, Register of Deeds Stephen S. Marshall, District Attorney William H. Pemberton, Sheriff Daniel H. Little, Coroner and Sheriff Frank G. Schirmer, Supervisors John D. Gray and Elisha P. Ferris, and Postmasters John B. Urmy, William S. Cameron and Chauncey N. Fisher.

Independent Engine Company, No. 2

A separate Company, independent of all Village authority, met with favor by men some of whom had served apprentice-

INDEPENDENT ENGINE COMPANY No. 2 — Picture Taken June 2, 1884

1. Pat Holden
2. Mike Faulkner
3. D. Shampnois
4. R. Harmon
5. Geo. Smith
6. John Reilly
7. J. Beaudrge
8. P. Man
9. Unknown
10. P. Holden
11. C. Levines
12. Hugh Blakely
13. Phelix Gillhooly
14. Tom. Lowey
15. Mike Gilhooly
16. Isaac Van Wart
17. W. Benson
18. Jim Rielly
19. S. Vantassel
20. Geo. Williams
21. Dave Barns
22. John Barns
23. W. H. Lown
24. S. Pye
25. Wm. Deveson
26. Geo. Pryor
27. Geo. Hammond
28. [illegible]
29. John Haley
30. Jas. McCarthy
31. Jim Murphy
32. A. Smith
33. Tim. Murphy
34. Wm. Lucks

ship on "Old Hope". Foremost among these was John R. Barnes, who had served as foreman of Engine Co. No. 7, in the old volunteers of the New York City Fire Department. They met in the White Plains Hotel (on the site of which now stands the Fowler & Sellars building) on February 20th, 1884, and organized the White Plains Independent Engine Company. On March 5th, the Company elected its first officers. Foreman, David P. Barnes; First Assistant Foreman, William H. Lown; Second Assistant Foreman, John R. Barnes; Secretary, Edward W. Bogart; Treasurer, William Benson.

In May 1884, a committee made a purchase of a hand engine for $300. In August the Company leased a lot on the east side of Orawaupum Street, for seven years at an annual rental of $25. The Company raised funds to the amount of $326, and received donations of labor, materials, etc. On July 31st, the work had so far progressed that the apparatus was moved from the temporary quarters in Dusenbery's Livery Stable (where the Citizen's Bank now stands), to the new quarters.

During the years prior to the organization of the fire patrol, firemen found their efforts in salvaging property of no avail, owing to the fact that the articles rescued from the burning buildings were frequently pilfered by loiterers who made it a business to be at every fire.

The losses were charged to the regular firemen. This state of affairs so aroused the firemen that they decided to organize a special police force under the jurisdiction of the fire chief. The adoption of an amendment to the village charter brought into existence the "Fire Patrol".

They organized on December 5, 1895. The Patrol demonstrated its worth, as pilfering ceased with the advent of these newly-appointed guardians, decorated with glistening stars

ship on "Old Hope". Foremost among these was John R. Barnes, who had served as foreman of Hydine Co. No. 7, in the old volunteers of the New York City Fire Department. They met in the White Plains Hotel on the site of which now stands the Fowler & Sellars building on February 22nd 1884, and organized the White Plains Independent Engine Company. On March 8th the Company elected the Foreman, David F. Barnes; First Assistant Foreman William H. Lown; Second Assistant [illegible] Secretary, Edward W. Hoyer [illegible]

In May 1884, [illegible] engine to [illegible] in August the [illegible] east side of Tarrytown Street [illegible] rental of $25. The [illegible] the amount $320, and received donations [illegible] that the work had so far progressed [illegible] moved to the temporary quarters in Dutcher's Livery Stable when the Citizen's Band [illegible] made to the quarters.

During the years prior to the organization of the fire patrol, firemen found their efforts in saving property so avail owing to the [illegible] that the articles rescued from the burning buildings were frequently pilfered by loiterers who made it business to be at every fire.

The losses were charged to the regular firemen. This state of affairs so aroused the firemen that they decided to organize a special police force under the jurisdiction of the fire chief. The adoption of an amendment to the village charter brought into existence the "Fire Patrol".

They organized on December 5, 1895. The Patrol demonstrated its worth, as pilfering ceased with the advent of these newly-appointed guardians, decorated with glittering stars

and equipped with clubs almost the size of baseball bats. They were all puffed up with their authority, strutting along the ropes stretched across all roads for blocks leading to the fire. An attempt to cross one of these established fire lines, was taking chances on a free ride in the patrol wagon to the hospital.

The city's other volunteer fire companies, in addition to those mentioned were the East Side Hose Company No. 3, organized December 6, 1897; South Side Engine Company No. 4, organized October 12, 1906, and Chatterton Engine Company No. 5, organized in October of 1907.

Some Famous Fires

As will be seen, from quoted newspaper items, White Plains stood in need of its various fire-fighting facilities, despite the difficulty almost always surrounding their attempts to organize:

THE DOT FIRE

The early morning of February 23, 1911 brought one of the most disastrous fires in the history of the village. The blaze started in one of the stores owned by the late Leopold Kahn (Admiral Dot), on Lexington Avenue, swept through Lexington Hall, to Knapp's and Armbruster's Hotels, on Orawaupm Street, destroying the Brandes flats to the south on Orawaupum Street, thence to the three-story flat occupied by Bell's harness store and Carroll's undertaking rooms on Lexington Avenue. Chief Robert C. Bromm was in command, assisted by Assistant Chiefs Jacob Holpp and William Coffey.

That the life of a fireman is always in danger was never more exemplified than at this fire, when George Holpp of Hope Engine Company, son of their first assistant chief, nearly lost his life. He was looked upon as one of the most daring and foremost fire fighters in the department. Amputation of the leg below the knee was found necessary to save his life. (Mr. Holpp died in this city recently.) George, with Albert Sands and George Anderson, two fellow members of Hope Company were caught in the alleyway when the acetylene gas tank that supplied the light for the three buildings exploded. This was the second largest and most destructive fire on record here, damage being estimated at more than $500,000 and destroying eight structures.

and equipped with clubs almost the size of baseball bats. They were all puffed up with their authority, strutting along the ropes stretched across all roads for blocks leading to the fire. An attempt to cross one of these established fire lines, was taking chances on a free ride in the patrol wagon to the hospital.

The city's other volunteer fire companies, in addition to those mentioned were the East Side Hose Company No. 1, organized December 6, 1897; South Side Engine Company No. 4, organized October 12, 1900, and Chatterton Engine Company No. 5, organized in October of 1907.

Some Famous Fires

As will be seen, from quoted newspaper items, White Plains stood in need of [illegible] various fire-fighting [illegible] despite the difficulty almost always surrounding their attempt to organize:

THE DOT FIRE

The early morning of February 23, 1911 brought one of the most disastrous fires in the history of the city. The blaze started in one of the stores on the late Reynold [illegible] (Admiral Dot) on Lexington Avenue, swept through Lexington Hall, [illegible] and Ambulance Hose, on Tarrytown Street, destroying the Brunsler [illegible] the south on Tarrytown Street, thence to the three-story flat occupied by Hall Brothers store and Carroll's undertaking rooms on Lexington Avenue. Chief Robert Brown was in command, assisted by Assistant Chiefs Jacob Holpp and William Colley.

That the life of a fireman is always in danger was never more evidenced than in this fire, when George Holpp of Hope Engine Company, son of their first assistant chief, nearly lost his life. He was looked upon as one of the most daring and foremost fire fighters in the department. Amputation of the leg below the knee was found necessary to save his life. (Mr. Holpp died in this city recently.) George, with Albert Sands and George Anderson, two fellow members of Hope Company, were caught in the alleyway when the acetylene gas tank that supplied the light for the three buildings exploded. This was the second largest and most disastrous fire on record here, damage being estimated at more than $50,000 and destroying eight structures.

The bell that gave the alarm of fire, during the period of the early volunteer department, was in the tower of the old Court House, built in 1856, is now housed in the chapel of the Old Ladies Retreat in the County Alms house. When in use here the bell was worked by hand. This was before the introduction of the signal alarm.

The first superintendent of fire alarm system was William Duntz. His successors were Seth Barrett and Charles Nowell.

The wanton destruction by the torch of the colonial settlement of White Plains on the night of November 5, 1776, is the earliest record we have of destructive fires here. The Court House, the Presbyterian Church, the Oakley and Hatfield Taverns, and the homes, with one exception, after being left undisturbed by the enemy following the Battle of White Plains, were burned to the ground by our own Continental forces.

THE HAGNER FIRE

The midnight three-four alarm from signal box 83, which all firemen knew meant the heart of the business district, on February 3, 1908, brought out the full volunteer department. It was a wild night and bitter cold. The men were coated with ice, but stuck to their posts and worked like Trojans. The fire started in Gordon's Livery Stable, in the rear of where the Citizens Bank now stands. The blaze spread with rapidity through the block to Grove Street, wiping out seventeen business firms.

THREE FIREMEN DIE

The most fatal fire in the city's history occurred on Sunday, February 3, 1907, resulting in the death of three of the most respected and promising young men of White Plains, while in the faithful performance of their duty, John Chester Cromwell, Charles E. Cooley and Caleb F. Underhill, members of Union Hook and Ladder Company. Those seriously injured were William Armbruster, member of Independent Company; Emil Berges, of Hook and Ladder Company; Stephen D. Lyon of Hook and Ladder Company; William Walton of Hope Engine Company; Charles Sutton, of Hope Engine Company; Gustav Schleich, of Hope Engine Company; Benjamin Philips of the West Harrison Company.

The firemen succeeded in confining the flames to the Mead Building, a three story brick structure, the first floor occupied by several stores, the second by apartments, and the third floor by White Plains Lodge F. & A. M. Woolworth's 5 and 10c store, on Main Street, is on the site of the old Mead Building, scene of the sacrifice of lives by the volunteer firemen in the performance of their duty.

The bell that gave the alarm of fire, during the period of the early volunteer department, was in the tower of the old Town House, built in 1856, is now housed in the chapel of the Old Ladies Home in the County Alms house. When in use here the bell was worked by hand. This was before the introduction of the signal alarm.

The first superintendent of fire alarm system was William Dunn. His successors were Seth Barrett and Clark Sewell.

The wanton destruction by the torch of the colonial settlement of White Plains on the night of November 5, 1776, is the earliest record we have of destructive fires here. The Court House, the Presbyterian Church, Dobbs and Hatfield Taverns, and the homes, with one exception, after being left undisturbed by the enemy following the Battle of White Plains, were burned to the ground by our Continental forces.

THE MAGAZINE FIRE

The midnight three-four alarm recalled [illegible] well remembered by many the heart of the business section [illegible] brought out the full volunteer department [illegible] could. The men were roused [illegible] like Trojans. The fire started in Gordon's [illegible] where the Citizens Bank now stands. The fire spread [illegible] through the block to Grove street, wiping [illegible]

THREE FIREMEN'S DIE

The most fatal fire in the city's history occurred on Sunday, February 3, 1907, resulting in the death of three of the most respected and prominent young men of White Plains, while in the faithful performance of their duty, John Chester Cromwell, Charles F. Cooley and Caleb K. Underhill, members of Union Hook and Ladder Company. These seriously injured were William Armbruster, member of Independent Company; Emil Berger, of Hook and Ladder Company; Stephen D. Ryan of Hook and Ladder Company; William Walton of Hope Engine Company; Charles Sutton, of Hope Engine Company; Gerard Schlaich, of Hope Engine Company; Benjamin Philips of the Hook and Ladder Company.

The firemen succeeded in confining the flames to the Metal Building, a three story brick structure, the first floor occupied by several stores, the second by apartments, and the third floor by White Plains Lodge F. & A. M. Woolworth's and the store on Main Street in the rear of the old Metal Building, were of the sacrifice of lives by the volunteer firemen in the performance of their duty.

Gedney Farm Hotel Fire

This was one of the most spectacular fires ever to take place in the county, attracting thousands of curious people from all parts of Westchester.

The hotel fire at first was thought to be a minor one. Guests went about the halls leisurely when the firemen first began the work of fighting it. Soon they were trying frantically to salvage their effects. Fireman Fred J. Gillick was injured during the fire.

The water supply had failed in this emergency. The streams directed on the blaze were ineffective. About all the firemen could do was watch the hotel burn.

The hotel fire had its beneficial effects, however. It led to a revamping of the city's water system. And it opened the way to the full development of the Gedney Farm subdivision.

The volunteers have given way to a paid department in White Plains. The volunteer organizations still retain their activities, and are on call in the event of emergency. The paid men, however, now bear the brunt of furnishing protection against fire.

The first record of the paid department appears on January 1, 1917, when H. Abbott Griffen, then head of the volunteers, was made chief of the department, a position he still holds. The first paid drivers were Edward McKee, W. Purdy, Edward Lowrie, George Barlie and H. Voris. J. J. Haley was watchman of the fire alarm system. A. W. Barrett and B. F. Hawks became paid men during the early part of that same year.

The first alarm answered by Chief Griffen and the then nucleus of present paid department was from the corner of South Lexington and Martine Avenues, on February 12, 1907. The Ellis Apartments on that corner, now occupied by a gasoline station, was destroyed at a loss of more than $50,000.

The department now includes Chief Griffen, Captain George Barlie, six lieutenants, an electrician, a lineman, three telephone operators, and 64 men, a total of 77, with an annual payroll of $194,132.

Modern equipment and a modern fire alarm system offer fine protection to our people.

CHAPTER XXXII

The World War

HISTORY OF CO. L. AND THE 51st PIONEER INFANTRY THE OLD TENTH

FIRST ROLL CALL OF COMPANY L, 10th INFANTRY MAY 28th, 1907

All of the men listed below are the original Charter Members of old Company L, 10th Infantry, which was organized and mustered in at St. John's Hall, Hamilton Avenue, White Plains, N. Y., on May 28th, 1907, by Colonel William H. Chapin.

Note:—The following men were all privates at this date, May 28th, 1907.

Barvian, Eugene J.
Bayles, Frank A.
Bemiss, Harold H.
Birch, David L.
Boardingham, Robert B.
Brundage, Allen
Brown, Fred L.
Bryan, William J.
Burns, Frederick T.
Chevalier, Charles C.
Cheney, Charles H.
Clarke, Frank E.
Cobb, Frederick W.
Cooper, Ralph M.
Core, Stewart H.
Core, Arthur L.
Cross, Edwin J.
Curnow, Glenn N.
Danner, George A.
Dunning, Edward C.
Eggleston, Arthur W.
Fanch, Frederick W.
Fenno, Charles C.
Fowler, Frank V.
Fowler, George
Genung, Louis R.
Glover, Ralph M.
Goodwin, Joseph E.
Griffin, Francis A.
Guernsey, Virgil
Haight, Charles A.
Hart, William T.
Hassett, Thomas J.
Hayes, Moses
Herring, David F.
Hubbard, Royal C.
Johnson, William J., Jr.
Kinch, Howard P.
Lovelett Chester A.
Lynch, Humphrey J.
Miller, Howard E.
Miller, Victor B.
Morrison, Richard R.
O'Rourke, Martin J.
Painter, William H.
Petry, Louis M.
Pflug, William F.
Prince, Lavere W.
Prince, Byron A.
Rausch, Henry
Richardson, John W.
Ripley, Ernest H.
Roby, Edward W.
Rogers, Hiram D.
Shaw, Lyle C.
Smith, Percy W.
Smith, Leonard K.
Smith, Ralph O.
Spencer, William B.
Sterling, Elwood W.
Sweeney, William A.
Thiell, Samuel C.
Townsend, Edward T.
Traynier, Reuben H.
Webster, George H.

Grand Total of Charter Members, 65 Men

The following men were commissioned as officers:

RALPH M. GLOVER, Commissioned as Captain, July 8th, 1907
HIRAM D. ROGERS, Commissioned as First Lieutenant, July 8th, 1907
HOWARD E. MILLER, Commissioned as Second Lieutenant, July 8th 1907
FREDERICK W. COBB, Warranted First Sergeant, August 13th, 1907

CHAPTER XXXVI

The World War

HISTORY OF CO. L, AND THE 3RD PRIVATES INFANTRY THE OLD TEN

FIRST—OLD CALL—COMP

[illegible]

[illegible] of the [illegible]
of old [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

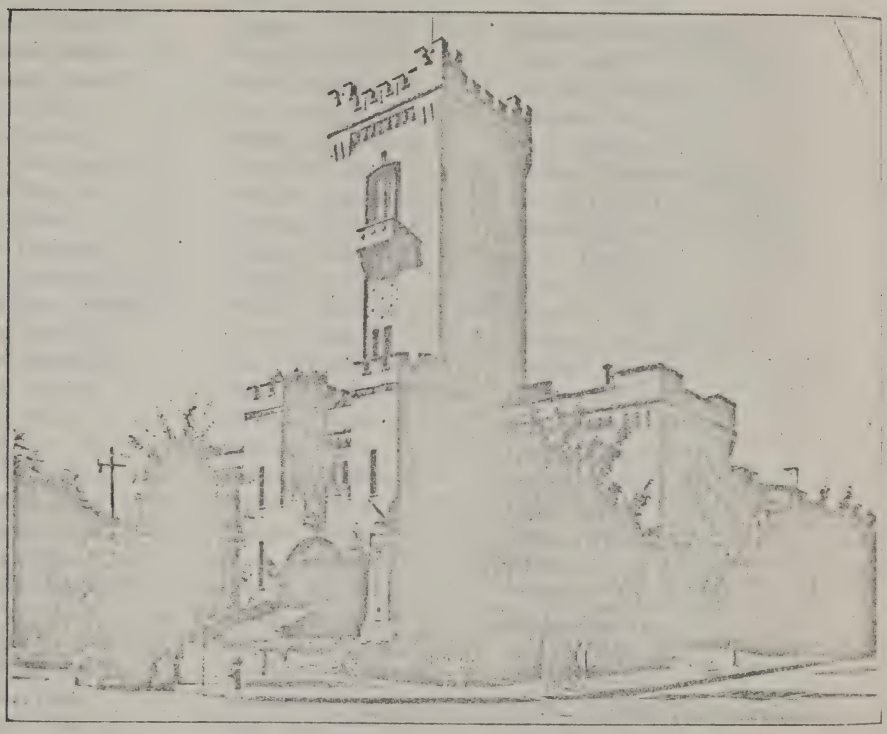
Note: The [illegible]

Barvian, [illegible]	[illegible]	[illegible]
Barvian, Frank [illegible]	[illegible]	[illegible]
Bennis, Harold H	Fowler [illegible]	[illegible]
Birch, David I	[illegible]	[illegible]
Boardinham, Robert [illegible]	[illegible]	[illegible]
Brandage, [illegible]	[illegible]	[illegible]
Brown, Fred L	Griffin, Francis A	[illegible]
Byan, William	Guernsey, Virgil	[illegible]
[illegible] Frederick E	Hatch, Charles A	[illegible]
[illegible]	Hart, [illegible]	[illegible]
Cherry, Charles H	Hassett, Thomas J	[illegible]
Clarke, Frank [illegible]	Howes, Moses	[illegible]
Cobb, Frederick W	Hurling, D. [illegible]	[illegible]
Cooper, Ralph M	Hubbard, Royal I	[illegible]
Cox, Stewart H	Johnson, William	[illegible]
Cox, Arthur L	Kneal, Homer [illegible]	[illegible]
Cross, Edwin [illegible]	Lambert, Chester [illegible]	[illegible]
Curran, Glenn N	Lynch, Hugh [illegible]	[illegible]
Dassar, George [illegible]	Miller, Howard E	[illegible]
Dunning, Edward C	Mosler, Oliver H	[illegible]
Eastman, Amos W	Morrison, Richard K	[illegible]
Lanch, Frederick H	[illegible] Rourke, Martin J	[illegible]

Grand Total of Charter Members, 65 Men

The following men were commissioned as officers

[illegible] M. GLOVER, Commissioned as Captain, July [illegible] 1917
HIRAM D. ROCHER, Commissioned as First Lieutenant, July [illegible] 1917
[illegible] E. MILLER, Commissioned as Second Lieutenant, July [illegible] 1917
KENNERTON [illegible] WEBB, Promoted First Sergeant [illegible] 1917



STATE ARMORY

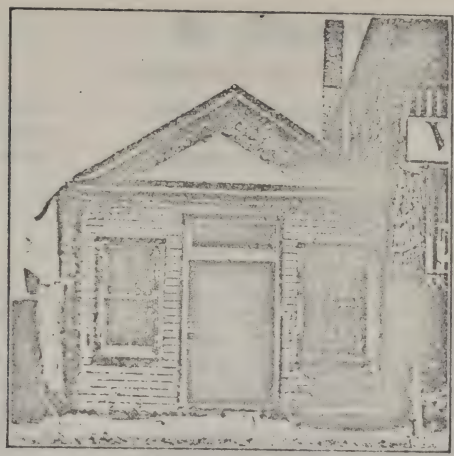
173 MEMBERS OF COMPANY L SWORN INTO THE FEDERAL SERVICE ON AUGUST 5th, 1917

Ackerman, Alexander
Ackerman, Clifford
Adams, Edward F.
Adams, Walter C.
Anderson, Andrew M.
Anderson, Victor O.
Arnold, Albert J.
Allen, Frank J.
Allen, Jennings B.
Bache, Wm. L.
Bain, James
Bates, Charles E.
Bliss, Raymond T.
Boddington, Russell W.
Boyce, John W.
Brady, James M.
Briggs, Furman
Burke, Ed. J.
Burpo, Wm. T.
Case, Frank L.
Campbell, John
Chapman, Fred J.
Clancy, John J.
Clemons, Daniel C.
Cooney, Wm. J.
Cote, Henry J.
Cowen, Sherry T.
Coombs, Peter
Corbett, Wm. A.
Cully, Joseph W.
Cowen, John L.
Conroy, Edward W.
Coutermash, Isaac E.
Dillman, Harry W.
Drury, George W.
Del Gendice, Christy
Davis, Robt. M.
Depuzzi, Joseph F.
Dolan, Geo. A.
Dickens, Clarence J.
Darr, Wm. H.
Dunning, Edward C.
Daley, James F.
Dutton ,Robt. M.
Drury, Fred
Ettinger, Wm. H.
Evans, Wm. H.
Eirich, Ludwig M.
Ely, Raymond T.
Ebbinghaus, Albert
Forte, Patrick
Finnerty, Joseph A.
Farrington, John W.
Fanch, Fred. W.
Ferris, Wm. E.
Federko, Stephen J.
Frayer, Fred. R.
Gray, Farrington T.
Grote, Nicolas N.
Gregory, Leroy D.
Gervasi, Frank
Galgano, Anthony
Grable, Carl A.
Herten, Austin N.
Hull, Charles S.
Hobby, Alfred L.
Holpp, Henry C.
Hall, Benedict C.
Hotchkiss, Gordon J.
Hartmann, Wm. J.
Hart, Wm. L.
Haight, Chas. A.
Haight, Dayton N.
Haigh, Wm.
Hammond, John A.
Hassett, Thos. J.
Hayer, Moses
Haynes, Jas. R.
Herving, David F.
Hubbard, Royal C.
Haack, Ernest E.
Hamilton, John C.
Hull, Wm.
Hermann, Chas. G.
Heideman, Ernest R.
Haskell, Lorenzo O.
Jensen, Christian
Johnson, Chas. H. Jr.
Jones, John
Johnson, Arthur B.
Johnson, Wm. J. Jr.
Kinch, Howard P.
Kimble, Daughton H.
Knapp, Geo. O.
Killeavy, Harry G.
Kelm, Fred A.
Kayes, James J.
Kennedy, Corn. J. Jr.
Kennedy, Michael T.
Komasa, Joseph S.
Knapp, Harold E.
Lehr, Paul C.
Lynch, John W.
Larson, Rudolph C.
Laug, Geo.
Lander, Frank M.
Lenihan, Wm. J.
Longyear, Earl S.
Lewis, Geo. C.
Lynch, Henry P.
Lunny, James F.
Lahm, Matthew J.
Lovelett, Chester A.
Lake, Ed. M.
Longyear, Chas. P.
Lovelett, Wm. H.
Long, Geo. C.
Long, Geo. O.
Longyear, Fred'k. T.
Lovelett, Chester A.
Lowrie, Ray J.
Ludemann, Fred'k. J.
Lynch, Humphrey J.
Macdona, Henry R.
Magners, Thos. W.
McGrath, Joseph F.

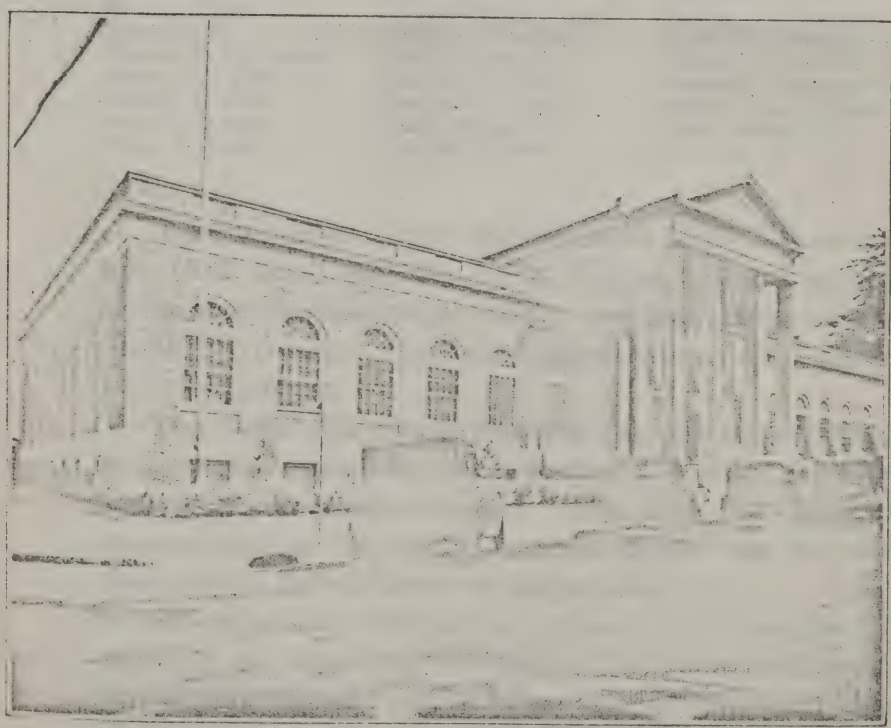
175 MEMBERS OF COMPANY L SWORN INTO THE FEDERAL SERVICE ON AUGUST 5th, 1917

Ackerman, Alexander
Ackerman, Clifford
Adams, Edward F.
Adams, Walter C.
Anderson, Andrew M.
Anderson, Victor O.
Arnold, Albert J.
Atlee, Frank J.
Allen, Jennings B.
Beebe, Wm. L.
Blair, James
Bates, Charles E.
Blue, Raymond
Biddlington, Russell W.
Boone, John W.
Brady, James M.
Bishop, Truman
Burke, Ed J.
Burge, Wm. T.
Case, Frank L.
Campbell, John
Chapman, Fred J.
Clancy, John J.
Clemens, Daniel C.
Conroy, Wm. J.
Cole, Henry
Cowan, Sherry T.
Combs, Peter
Corbett, Wm. A.
Cully, Joseph W.
Cowen, John L.
Conroy, Edward W.
Cotterwall, Isaac E.
Dillman, Harry W.
Drury, George W.
Del Gaudio, Christy
Dunn, Roll M.
[illegible]ell, Joseph F.
[illegible], Geo. A.
[illegible], Lawrence J.
Dan, Wm. H.
[illegible], Edward C.
Daley, James F.
Dutton, Roll M.
Drury, Fred
Deisinger, Wm. H.
Evans, Wm. H.
Eirich, Ludwig M.
Ely, Raymond J.
Ebbinghaus, Albert
Forte, Pasquale
Finnerty, Joseph A.
Farrington, John H.
Funch, Fred W.
Ferris, Wm. *
Fedeko, Stephen J.
Fraser, Fred K.
Gray, Farrington F.
Grote, Nicolas N.
Gregory, Leon D.
Gerasal, Frank
Galiano, Anthony
Grable, Carl A.
Harden, Austin N.
Hall, Burke S.
[illegible], Alfred L.
Helpp, Hans C.
Hall, Benedict
Hutchins, Gordon J.
Hartman, Wm. J.
Hart, Wm. L.
Haight, Chas. A.
Haight, Dayton N.
Haigh, Wm.
Hammond, John A.
Hassett, Thos. J.
Hayes, James
Haynes, Jas. R.
Herring, Harold E.
Hubbard, Royal C.
Haark, Elmer E.
Hamilton, John C.
Hall, Wm.
Herrmann, Chas. G.
Hartmann, Ernest R.
Hasbell, Lorenzo C.
Jensen, Christian
Johnson, Chas. H. Jr.
Jones, John
Johnson, Arthur R.
Johnson, Wm. J. Jr.
Kinch, Howard F.
Kimble, Langdon H.
Kemp, Geo. C.
Kilbury, Harry C.
Kelly, Fred J.
Kaes, James J.
Kennedy, Leon J. Jr.
Kennedy, Walter J.
Kenney, Joseph E.
Kenny, Harold E.
Lake, Fred
Lynch, John N.
Larson, Sidney L.
Lane, Leon
Lander, Frank M.
Lorman, Wm. E.
Lagerson, Raul S.
Lewis, Geo.
Lynch, Leroy F.
Lamy, Jones S.
Lahm, Martin J.
Lamb, Chester A.
Lake, Ed M.
Lamoreux, Chas. F.
Lovett, Wm. H.
[illegible], Geo. C.
Long, Geo. O.
Longmeier, Joseph T.
Lawlor, Chester A.
Lawrie, Ray J.
Lindeman, Fred K.
Lynch, Humphrey J.
Mandeau, Henry S.
Magnire, Thos. W.
Martinek, Joseph E.

Miller, Edw. H.
Miller, Victor B.
Miles, Wilbur E.
Morrison, Richard R.
Madden, Frank R.
Minasi, Rocco
Murphy, Harold V.
Marchiante, Louis
Maurer, John
Moore, Robert B.
Mayer, F. G.
Mayer, Raymond W.
McMaster, Carrol T.
McCann, Edward
Manning, Walter W.
Merritt, Percy O.
Moslander, Hyland
Muldoon, John
Miller, Elworth B.
McLaughlin, John G.
Murphy, Daniel E.
Nevins, Royal K.
O'Rourke, Martin J.
Oreans, Frank C.
Olson, George E.
Otto, William A.
Odell, Eugene D.
O'Keefe, David F.
Painter, Wm. H.
Parker, Fred B.
Parks, Lester
Parker, Jason S.
Partridge, Claude S.
Parkton, Geo. D.
Paul, John M.
Pullis, Stephen F.
Powers, Joseph G.
Paldin, Geo. W.
Paradise, Wm. J.
Patzold,
Ploss, Charles S.
Parks, William E.
Paul, John H.
Prince, Byron A.
Prince, LaVere W.
Petrey, Louis M.
Pfug, Wm. F.
Pope, Ernest J.
Rausch, Henry
Rice, Geo. Nelson
Ripley, Ernest H.
Roby, Edw. W.
Rogers, Hiram D. J.
Rogers, John H.
Rose, Joseph
Romano, Larry
Raven, Bertram
Ruggiero, John C.
Reynolds, Wm. H.
Rosch, Francis C.
Rogers, John J.
Sabino, Joseph
Schnitker, Martin C.
Statta, Everett T.
Stillman, John Jr.
Smith, Stephen
Sullo, Guiseppe
Sweeny, Wm. A.
Skiba, Andrew
Sullivan, John
Strever, John J.
Sullivan, Wm. A.
Schneider, Percival C.
Staples, Warner G.
Sellars, Wm. P.
Shaw, Elwood C.
Shaw, Lyle C.
Smith, Leonard K.
Smith, LeRoy
Smith, Percy W.
Smith, Ralph O.
Spencer, Wm. B.
Starr, Chas.
Sterling, Ellwood W.
Sweeney, Wm. A.
Sweet, Thos. W.
Thiell, Samuel C.
Townsend, Edward T.
Traymer, Reuben H.
Tucker, Edgar T.
Tyson, Wm. M.
Tesoro, John T.
Townsend, Edward T.
Tucker, Edgar T.
Thom, Francis W.
Taleak, Joseph
Underwood, Roy
Underhill, Walter S.
Underhill, Robert W.
Valentine, Fred M.
Van Velsor, Harry
Vallaro, Frank
Vandervoort, Chas. E.
Voorhis, Remsen S.
Vena, Michael
Van Tassell, Allen M.
Von Ohlson, Julius
Vandervoort, Chas. E.
Walker, Winter B.
Wells, Geo. H.
Ward, Thomas B. Jr.
Wecker, Carl F.
Wood, Walter G.
Wade, Thomas M.
Ward Arthur V.
Ward, John
Worthington, Gwilyn R.
Waite, Fred. A.
Wallington, Frederick T.
Webster, Geo. H.
Weismann, Harold A.
Williams, Herbert L.
Williams, John H.
Williams, James E.
Wilson, Edw. J.
Wright, Clifford
Yozzo, Frank



POST OFFICE IN 1876



POST OFFICE IN 1937

In Memoriam

MEMBERS OF COMPANY L

Robert M. Davis
LeRoy D. Gregory
James F. Lunny
Henry P. Lynch
Charles C. Herrmann
Lorenzo O. Haskell
Bertram Raven
Frank Zazzo

OTHERS WHO DIED IN SERVICE
FROM WHITE PLAINS

Joseph M. Aloise
Frank A. Bayles
William M. Beyer
Charles Blatz
Irving Blaustein
Thomas Brown
Francis J. Buckley
James J. Cleary
Frederick W. Cobb
Ralph L. Cook
Peter Coombs
Thomas R. Cullington
James Drumgold
William P. Earle, Jr.
Arlso E. Garnsey
Irving S. Gedney
Robert Hammer
Henry L. Hatfield
William E. Heim, Jr.
John E. Hendrickson
Donald P. Hunnewell
Stewart Kent
Frederick S. Longyear
Garth M. Lowrie
Enrico Lucatorto
Michael Lundy
Bernard J. McElroy
Arthur J. Mangin
John P. O'Neill
Joseph F. O'Neill
Lester Parks
Felix H. Patzold
Edwin E. Paul
Herman J. Peper
Louis F. Plummer
Edward Sell
Gennaro Sico
Clarence H. Smith
John J. Smith, Jr.
Patrick Sullivan
Zygmunt Szreder
Madison R. Timbrook
Ralph B. Tompkins
Charles W. Toombs
Frederick Wallington
Walter Locke Williams
Victor Zackey

The entry of the United States into the Great War on April 6th, 1917 found the 10th N. Y. National Guard scattered throughout the State, each separate company engaged in performing guard duty at arsenals, bridges and over other national and state property.

The National Guard at this time was in each state a local military body, organized within the state and subject to Federal control only in remote instances. These limitations had to be removed and the National Guard was drafted into the armed forces of the United States on August 5th, 1917.

It was in the latter part of October, 1917 that the 10th N. Y. N. G. under the command of Col. John F. Klein was finally assembled at Camp Wadsworth, South Carolina. Major General John F. O'Ryan was at just this time on the alert for

men for the 27th Division, also at Camp Wadsworth. What he saw of the 10th New York, evidently pleased him with the result that orders came for the transfer of officers and men.

AUGUST 1917
OFFICERS AT DATE OF DEPARTURE

Edward C. Dunning, Capt.
Edward Townsend, 1st Lieut.
Lorenzo O. Haskell, 2nd Lieut.

Our boys started from White Plains at 5:30 a. m. Friday, August 9th, 1917, on trolley cars to Port Chester, where they boarded a special train to Washington (Potomac Park Camp) thence to Camp Mead on August 22nd, from Camp Mead to Camp Wadsworth, S. C., July 17th, 1918. The Regiment entrained for port of embarkation two days later, reached Camp Merritt, N. J., here final preparations for departure were made on Friday morning, July 26th, at 3:30 a. m. The Regiment moved out of camp, to Alpine Landing, where the troops were transported to the docks at Hoboken by ferryboats. Little time was lost in boarding the Kroonland, lying in dock. At 4 p. m. on the afternoon of July 26th the Kroonland steamed out of New York harbor and the voyage was begun.

The Kroonland in addition to the 51st Pioneer Infantry was the advance section of the 7th Division. No sooner had the tallest of New York's skyscrapers melted away in the haze, than organization for the voyage was begun. The submarine was the dread enemy; how to combat or guard against the menace was the problem. A roster of officers with assignments to numerous lookout posts about the ship was immediately posted. To make sure a detail of men was selected to watch from the bridge at all hours of day and night. The lookout posts were occupied and eyes strained for the first

men for the 27th Division, also at Camp Wadsworth. That he saw of the 10th New York, evidently pleased him with the result that orders came for the transfer of officers and men.

AUGUST 1917
OFFICERS AT DATE OF DEPARTURE

Edward C. Dunning, [illegible]
Edward Townsend, 1st Lieut.
Lorenzo O. Haskell, 2nd Lieut.

Our boys started from White Plains at 5:30 a. m. Friday, August 9th, 1917, on trolley cars to Fort Chester, where they boarded a special train to Washington - Lotomen Park Camp; thence to Camp Mead on August 2n[illegible] from Camp Mead to Camp Wadsworth, S. C. July 17th [illegible]18. The Regiment entrained for port of embarkation [illegible] days later, reached Camp Merritt, N. J., here final pr[illegible]tions for departure were made on Friday morning, July 20th at 5:30 a. m. The Regiment moved out of camp, to Alpine Landing where the troops were transported to the docks at Hoboken by ferryboats. Little time was lost in boarding the Kroonland, lying in dock. At 4 p. m. on the afternoon of July 20th the Kroonland steamed out of New York harbor as the voyage was begun.

The Kroonland in addition to the 51st Pioneer Infantry was the advance section of the 7th Division. No sooner had the tallest of New York's skyscrapers melted away in the haze, than organization for the voyage was begun. The submarine was the dread enemy; how to combat or guard against the menace was the problem. A roster of officers with assignments to numerous lookout posts about the ship was immediately posted. To make sure a detail of men was selected to watch from the bridge at all hours of day and night. The lookout posts were occupied and eyes strained for the first

gleam of the periscope or the ripple of foam where it cut the water.

The Kroonland followed a southerly course, until some distance off the Norfolk Capes, where other transports were met and the course changed to an easterly direction. The convoy at this time consisted of five transports, a cruiser and two destroyers.

The voyage lasted eleven days. On August 4th eight destroyers hove in sight and took over the convoy from the cruiser Huntington and the two destroyers. Then through the dangerous submarine infested waters of the Bay of Biscay and at 1 p. m. August 6th land was sighted. In single file the long line of transports followed the narrow winding channel, lined with mines for the over venturesome U-Boat, safely into the magnificent harbor of Brest.

On August 14th the following order was received from Headquarters, Fourth Army Corps:

1. "Pursuant to instructions from American General Headquarters, the 51st Pioneer Infantry Regiment is under orders to move by rail."

The time of departure of the battalions which were to travel separately was also stated in the order. According to schedule the troops were entrained at Kermor station, Brest, and the journey across France commenced.

During all this time of preparation for service the Regiment had remained intact, but now that the time had come for it to play its part with the forces in the field, it was divided into many units of varying sizes and scattered throughout the zone of the advance. This preparation of the companies meant the absence of possible achievement by the Regiment acting as a whole, but as the whole is equivalent to the sum of its parts, so must the Regiment stand upon the records of its companies.

gleam of the periscope or the ripple of foam where it cut the water.

The Kronland followed a southerly course, until some distance off the Norfolk Capes, where other transports were met and the course changed to an easterly direction. The convoy at this time consisted of five transports, a cruiser and two destroyers.

The voyage lasted eleven days. On August 4th eight destroyers hove in sight and took over the convoy from the cruiser Huntington and the two destroyers. Then through the dangerous submarine infested waters of the [illegible] and at 1 p. m. August 6th land was sighted. In single file the long line of transports followed the narrow winding channel, lined with mines for the over venturesome U-Boat, safely into the magnificent harbor of Brest.

On August 14th the following order was received from Headquarters, Fourth Army Corps:

I. "Pursuant to instructions from American General Headquarters, the 51st Pioneer Infantry Regiment is under orders to move by rail."

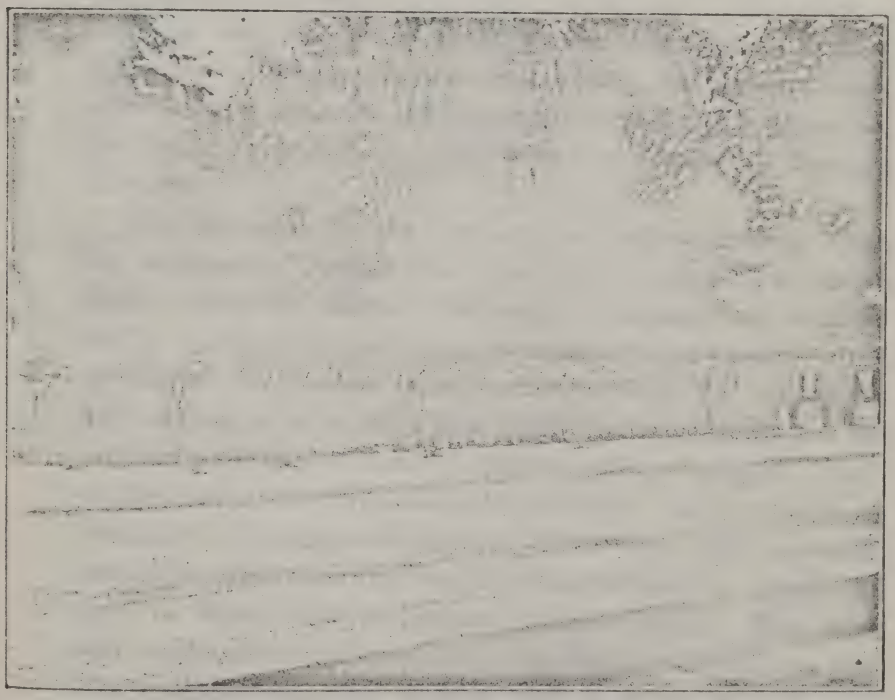
The time of departure of the battalions which were to travel separately was also stated in the order. According to schedule the troops were entrained at Kermor station, Brest, and the journey across France commenced.

During all this time of preparation for service the Regiment had remained intact, but now that the time had come for it to play its part with the forces in the field, it was divided into many units of varying sizes and scattered throughout the zone of advance. This preparation of the companies meant the absence of possible achievement by the Regiment acting as a whole, but as the whole is equivalent to the sum of its parts, thus the Regiment stand upon the [illegible]

On August 20th the following order marked "Secret, Urgent" was received by Colonel Deming from Colonel Pare commanding the Engineers of the 32nd French Army Corps.

"The Colonel commanding the 51st Regiment, U. S. Infantry (Pioneers) will go to *Pagny-sur-Meuse* on the 21st inst., to replace and relieve the Colonel commanding the 63rd Regiment Territorial Infantry (French) in the command of the position of barrage in the sector of Lucey. He will receive all information needed by him for the execution of his work from the officer whom he relieves.

"2. One battalion will go to Toul and remain there on the 21st, on the 22nd it will go to *Pagny*, there to relieve the battalion of the 63rd Regiment Territorial Infantry, having in charge the barrage work in the zone of Lucey."



ORIGINAL COMPANY L — ORGANIZED May 28, 1907

Co. L had on the 22nd of August been ordered to Minorville and there undertook its first Pioneer work, building pill boxes and digging trenches and dugouts. On the 26th the company began work on the construction of a military railway on which the large naval guns for the bombardment of Metz were to be carried forward. The work was under German balloon observation, and the men were frequently subjected to shell fire while at work.

During the night of Sept. 2-3 Headquarters Co., Supply Co. and Co's. A, C, G, H and I, marched to Toul and were billeted in the Boudzen barracks just beyond the city. Within the next few days Co's B, K, L and M were recalled and joined the regiment at Toul.

This was the last time during the war that so large a proportion of the Regiment was assembled. All the companies, with the exception of D at Domjermain and E and F occupying the French forts guarding Toul were now grouped in Boudzen barracks.

On September 6th the company was ordered back to Toul, but returned to Noviant four days later to take part in the St. Mihiel offensive. In this offensive, L company was attached to Co. E, 314th Engineers to do engineer and pioneer work. It reached the trenches shortly after the first line crossed the top, and began to cut wire and bridge the trenches so that the artillery and lines of communication could go torward. Much of the work of the day was under shell fire, but there were no casualties. Euvizen was reached in the first day's advance, and in the afternoon the company was formed for attack and held in reserve for a German counter attack. The work was continued on the second day and Bullionville was reached. The company was now ordered back to Flirey to work with the Grave Registration Service. This work continued four

Co. I had on the 22nd of August been ordered to Xivaor-ville and there undertook its first Pioneer work, building pill boxes and digging trenches and dugouts. On the 26th the company began work on the construction of a military railway on which the large naval guns for the bombardment of Xivaor were to be carried forward. The work was under German balloon observation, and the men were frequently subjected to shell fire while at work.

During the night of Sept. 2-3 Headquarters Co., Supply Co. and Co's. A, C, G, H and I, marched to Toul and were billeted in the Boudzen barracks just beyond the city. Within the next few days Co's K, L and M were recalled and joined the regiment at Toul.

This was the last time during the war that so large a proportion of the Regiment was assembled. All the companies, with the exception of D at Domjermain and F occupying the French forts guarding Toul were now grouped in Boudzen barracks.

On September 6th the company was ordered back to Toul, but returned to Xovaint four days later to take part in the St. Mihiel offensive. In this offensive, L company was attached to Co. E, 314th Engineers to do engineer and pioneer work. It reached the trenches shortly after the first line crossed the top, and began to cut wire and bridge the trenches so that the artillery and lines of communication could go forward. Much of the work of the day was under shell fire, but there were no casualties. Euvizen was reached in the first day's advance, and in the afternoon the company was formed for attack and held in reserve for a German counter attack. The work was continued on [illegible] xond day [illegible]
The company wa[illegible] r ordered [illegible]
Grave Registration Service [illegible] his work continued four

days. The battle ground surrounding Flirey and Essey was reached and the dead registered and buried.

A small ammunition dump was located at Essey, and no night passed without German shell fire reaching them. The Grave Registration Service having been completed, the Company was ordered to Menil-la-Tour (September 18th) attached to IV Corps N Q, and took charge of the German prison stockade.

These accounts told by those who were not only eye witnesses, but actors in the living drama, are representative of the work done and the part played by those officers and men of the 51st Pioneer Infantry who were in the St. Mihiel drive.

The ever increasing preparations for a drive, which were being made during the days of September were now rapidly nearing a head, and on September 10th orders reached the Commanding Officer, 51st Pioneer Infantry which called for certain companies to move out toward the St. Mihiel front. Two companies, B and D, were attached to the 1st Division and ordered to move the night of September 10-11th from their station to bivouac in the woods in the vicinity of Leonval Dump.

Pursuant to the same order companies C and K were attached to the 42nd Division and companies H and L to the 89th Division. On the morning of September 12th, 1918, the first concerted offensive operation to reduce the St. Mihiel Salient was delivered. The complete success of the movement marks it as one of the remarkable achievements of the entire war. The three Divisions referred to were all actively engaged and the companies of the 51st, attached to the Engineers for duty followed closely behind the advance and participated both in the attack and in the subsequent organization of the posi-

days. The battle ground surrounding Thiaucourt and Essey was reached and the dead registered and buried.

A small ammunition dump was located at Essey, and no night passed without German shell fire reaching them. The Grave Registration Service having been completed, the Company was ordered to Mesnil-la-Tour (September 18th) attached to IV Corps A.Q. and took charge of the German prison stockade.

These accounts told by those who were not only eye witnesses, but actors in the living drama, are representative of the work done and the part played by those officers and men of the 51st Pioneer Infantry who were in the St. Mihiel drive.

The ever increasing preparations for a drive, which were being made during the days of September were now rapidly nearing a head, and on September 10th orders reached the Commanding Officer, 51st Pioneer Infantry which called for certain companies to move out toward the St. Mihiel front. Two companies, B and D, were attached to the 1st Division and ordered to move the night of September 10-11th from their station to bivouac in the woods in the vicinity of Leonval Dump.

Pursuant to the same order companies C and K were attached to the 42nd Division and companies H and I to the 89th Division. On the morning of September 12th, 1918, the first concerted offensive operation to reduce the St. Mihiel Salient was delivered. The complete success of the movement marks it as one of the remarkable achievements of the entire war. The three Divisions referred to were all actively engaged and the companies of the 51st, attached to the Engineers for duty fol owed close[illegible]

tions. On September 17th the following General Order was published from Headquarters IV Army Corps:

"The Corps Commander takes great pride in repeating the following telegram received by him from the Commander in Chief of the American Expeditionary Forces: 'Please accept my sincere congratulations on the successful and important part taken by the officers and men of the IV Corps in the first offensive of the First American Army on September 12 and 13. The courageous dash and vigor of our troops has thrilled our countrymen and evoked the enthusiasm of our Allies. Please convey to your command my heartfelt appreciation of their work. I am proud of you all.'

PERSHING."

By Command of
Major Gen. Dickman,
Stuart Heintzelman,
Chief of Staff."

Four days after the signing of the Armistice orders were issued from HQ. IV Army Corps placing the 51st Pioneer Infantry under the direction of Col. Robert R. Ralston, Corps Engineer and his instructions to move Headquarters and the 3rd battalion to Buxerulles were received at the same time. This was the beginning of the now famous hike to Germany.

The other Battalions received orders to move forward and on November 16th, all were under way. By a variety of routes which is not the purpose of this history to record, the companies of the Regiment made their journey through the fighting zone, with its intricate trench systems through the devastated sections, on into Lorraine and Luxemburg and finally into Germany. Great was the joy of the emancipated people of Lorraine, and in many villages arches of victory decked with garlands greeted the Americans. While from every flag staff waved the tri-color of France. Some of the larger towns along the course of the hike were Fleville, Trieux, Wollmeringer, Aspelt, Kons, Trier, Fohren, Wittlich, Bullay, and Cochem. During this hike particular attention was paid to bringing the

tions. On September 17th the following General Order was published from Headquarters IV. Army Corps:

"The Corps Commander takes great pride in repeating the following telegram received by him from the Commander in Chief of the American Expeditionary Forces: 'Please accept my sincere congratulations on the successful and important part taken by the officers and men of the IV. Corps in the first offensive of the First American Army on September 12 and 13. The courageous dash and vigor of our troops has thrilled our countrymen and evoked the enthusiasm of our Allies. Please convey to your command my heartfelt appreciation of their work. I am proud of you all.'

Headquarters,
By Command of
Major Gen. Dickman,
Stuart Heintzelman,
Chief of Staff."

Four days after the signing of the Armistice orders issued from HQ. IV. Army Corps placing the Pioneer Infantry under the direction of Col. Robert R. Ralston, Corps Engineer and his instructions to move Headquarters and the 3rd battalion to Huxerulles were received at this same time. This was the beginning of the now famous hike to Germany. The other Battalions received orders to move forward and on November 16th, all were under way. By a variety of routes which is not the purpose of this history to record, the companies of the Regiment made their journey through the fighting zone, with its intricate trench systems through the devastated sections, on into Lorraine and Luxemburg and finally into Germany. Great was the joy of the emancipated people of Lorraine, and in many villages arches of victory decked with garlands greeted the Americans. While from every flag staff waved the tri-color of France. Some of the larger towns along the course of the hike were Fleville, Trieux, Vollmerlinger, Ashl[illegible], Trier, Cobern, [illegible]ich, [illegible]ulay, and Cochem.

organization to a high standard of discipline and general military efficiency, and whenever rests were made for a period exceeding one day, drill schedules were enforced.

On December 2nd, A-3 Memo 262 issued from HQ, IV Army Corps then located at Luxemburg, and marked secret, was received; it created new activities for the Regiment as follows:

"1. The 51st Pioneer infantry will protect the vital points on the Trier—(excl) Wengerohr—Bullay—Pommern—thence along the Moselle to Coblenz railway.

"2. A guard will be placed at all bridges, large culverts and tunnels as the leading elements of our troops come abreast of any such points.

"By Command of Maj. Gen. Muir."

This duty was continued until December 19th when by orders from Chief of Staff, IV Corps to Commanding General, 3rd Division, 4th Division and 42nd Division, the guard maintained by the 51st Pioneer Infantry was relieved.

In December Lieut. Col. Willis Bacon, attached, was relieved from duty with the Regiment and assigned to the 805th Pioneer Infantry. On December 13th, Col. J. Guy Deming, was relieved from duty. Following his departure Lieut. Col. Albert Saulpauch was actively in command of the Regiment until January 26th, 1919, when Col. J. L. Gilbreth assumed command pursuant to authority contained in Par. 10 S. O. 25 HQ, IV Army Corps.

Beginning with the first of the year a period of training was entered into by all troops in the army of occupation. In addition to the drills and the study of combat principles, schools were organized for the better education of the men. Those schools, created for the purpose of preparing soldiers for their return to civilian life met with a ready response on the part of the men. Broadened by their experiences, men who had but

[illegible]ration to a high standard of discipline and general [illegible]y, and whenever rests were made for a period exceeding one day, drill schedules were enforced.

On December 2nd, A-3 Memo 262 issued from HQ. IV Army Corps then located at Luxembourg, and marked secret, was received; it created new activities for the Regiment as follows:

"1. The 51st Pioneer Infantry will prepare the vital points on the Tier—(excl) Wormerdorf—Bullay—Pommern—thence along the Moselle to Coblenz railway.

"2. A guard will be placed at all bridges, large viaducts and tunnels as the leading elements of our troops come abreast of any such points.

"By Command of Maj. Gen. Alnutt."

This duty was continued until December 10th when by orders from Chief of Staff, IV Corps to Commanding General, 3rd Division, 4th Division and 42nd Division, the guard maintained by the 51st Pioneer Infantry was relieved.

In December Lieut. Col. Willis Bacon, attached, was relieved from duty with the Regiment and assigned to the 805th Pioneer Infantry. On December 13th, Col. J. Guy Denning, was relieved from duty. Following his departure Lieut. Col. Albert Sulpacuch was actively in command of the Regiment until January 20th, 1919, when Col. J. L. Gilbreth assumed command pursuant to authority contained in Par. 10 S. O. 25 HQ. IV Army Corps.

Beginning with the first of the year a period of training was entered into by all troops in the army of occupation. In addition to the drills and the study of combat principles, schools were organized for the better education of the men. Those schools were created for the purpose of preparing soldiers for ——— return to civilian life met with a ready response on the part of the men. Broadened by their experiences, men who had ———

This monument was erected to the memory of the World War veterans. Dedicated on July 4th, 1919. The speaker of the day was Governor Alfred E. Smith.

THE WORLD WAR MONUMENT

Inscribed on the monument:

ROLL OF HONOR

1 2 2 5

WHITE PLAINS MEN ANSWERED THEIR COUNTRY'S CALL

4 2

MADE THE SUPREME SACRIFICE

ERECTED JULY 4TH, 1919

Lest We Forget

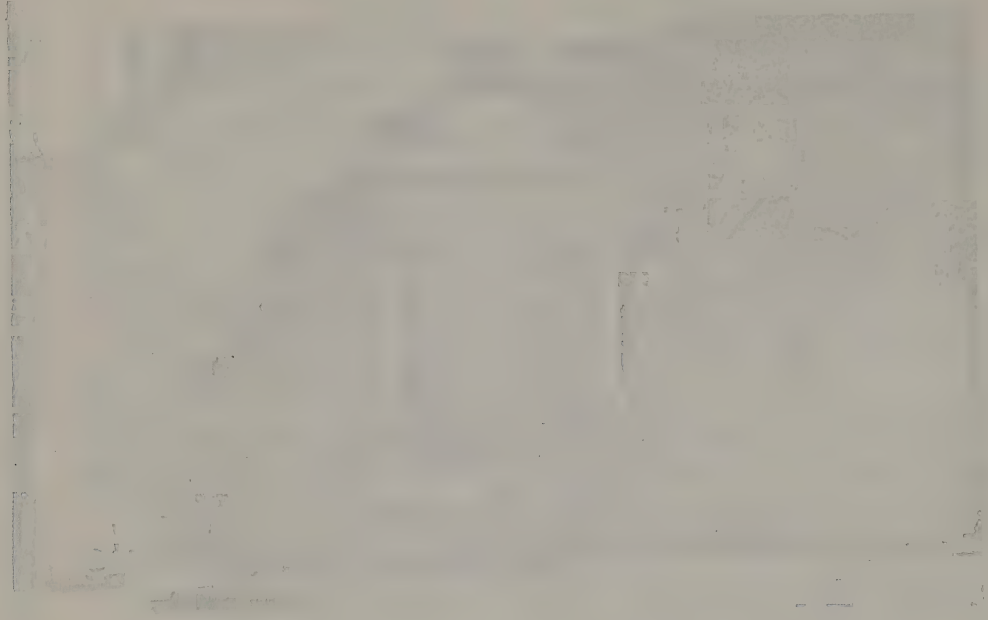
In Memory of Those Who Fought and Died in the World War

1917 — 1919

By a Grateful People to the Men and Women

Who Served Their Country

This monument was erected to the memory of the World War veterans. Dedicated on July 4th, 1919. The speaker of the day was Governor Alfred E. Smith.



Inscribed on the monument:

ROLL OF HONOR

221

When Flags Are Unfurled Their Country's Call

42

Also the Sons in Service

Erected July 4th, 1919

Lest We Forget

In Memory of Those Who Fought and Died in the World War

1917 -- 1919

By a Grateful People to the Men and Women

Who Served Their Country

limited, if any opportunities, and who heretofore knew not the incentive to learn, were crowding to those Post schools. It was a clear visioned and far-seeing policy, for upon these men who had made the winning of the great war a possibility realized, the United States rests its hope not only in a World Safe for Democracy, but in a World Democratized.

CHAPTER XXXIII

Medical Society of the County of Westchester

ADDRESS and historical sketch by Henry T. Kelly, M.D. of the founding of the Medical Society of the County of Westchester, on the 125th Anniversary of its organization, at the Anniversary Dinner, Hotel Commodore, New York City, May 8th, 1922.

One hundred and twenty-five years ago today the Medical Society of the County of Westchester was organized. Note the year, 1797. Washington had retired from the Presidency. His level sense, mighty character, and far-seeing vision had guided the new government past many dangers and the American people had taken their place as a separate and independent nation. In Europe Napoleon had already achieved Lodi and Arcola, and had begun that astonishing career which terminated at St. Helena.

We must now revert to a remote period in the history of our Society and develop our story from the time of organization to the present day. Life in those early days was primitive, austere, and simple, and from this plain tale of the character, merits, traits, and experience of those medical men who have previously been the incumbents of the field we now occupy, we extract those portions which we deem of most interest for this occasion.

To a little group of eight earnest men, who met at the House of William Barker in White Plains a century and a quarter ago, is to be accorded the unique distinction of having founded the first county medical society in the State of New York, anticipating by at least five years the formation of any similar organization in New York State. The following is a copy of the minutes of the first meeting of our Society:

"At a respectable Meeting of Physicians of the County of Westchester on the 8th day of May, 1797—at the House of William Barker in the White Plains—

"Attended by Archibald McDonald, Charles McDonald, John Ingersol, Elisha Bruister, Lymann Cook, David Rogers, Matson Smith and Elias Cornelius.

"That a due improvement and proper regulations may be made in the practice of Physic within the County of Westchester and for the purpose

CHAPTER XXIII

Medical Society of the County of Westchester

DIDNESS and historical sketch by Henry T. Kelly, M.D., of the founding of the Medical Society of the County of Westchester on the 125th anniversary of its organization, at the Anniversary Dinner Hotel Commodore, New York, [illegible]

[illegible] hundred and twenty-[illegible] Medical Society [illegible] the County of Westchester [illegible] year 1770 [illegible] no return from [illegible] might [illegible] character and [illegible] vision [illegible] character and the American [illegible] and independent nation. In Europe Napoleon [illegible] believed Lodi and Austerlitz and he [illegible] known that [illegible] noted as St. Helena.

We must now revert to a remote period in the history of our Society and develop our story from the time of organization to the present day. Life in those early days was primitive, austere and simple, and from this plain rule of the character, morals, traits and practices of those medical men who have previously been the pioneers of the field of non-occupy, we extract those portions which we deem [illegible] interest on this occasion.

To a little group of eight earnest men, who met at the House of William Barker in White Plains a century and a quarter ago, is to be accorded the unique distinction of having [illegible] the first county medical society in the State of New York, anticipating by at least five years the formation of any similar organization in New York State. The following is a copy of the minutes of the first meeting of our Society:

"At a respectable Meeting of Physicians of the County of Westchester on the 8th day of May, 1797—at the House of William Barker in the White Plains—

"Attended by Archibald McDonald, Charles McDonald, John Isacsol, Elisha Brunster, Isaac Cook, David Rogers, Matson Smith and Elias Comelius.

"That a due improvement and proper regulations may be made in the practice of Physic within the County of Westchester and for the purpose

of necessary and immediate compliance with the Law of the Legislature, passed at the last session.

"The physicians aforesaid formed themselves into the Society to be known and called hereafter by the name and style of the Medical Society of the County of Westchester.

"Upon motion, Doctor Archibald McDonald, of White Plains, was elected President of the Society pro tempore, and upon said motion, Doctor Matson Smith of New Rochelle, was elected Secretary thereof.

THE WILLIAM BARKER HOUSE
Stood about midway between Main Street and Hamilton Avenue on the west side of Broadway.

"The Society, pleased with the present progress and desirous that the Board shall hereafter exist upon the most fair and respectable terms, and that the physicians of the County shall indiscriminately receive an invitation to unite with the present members and to encourage this laudable design:—

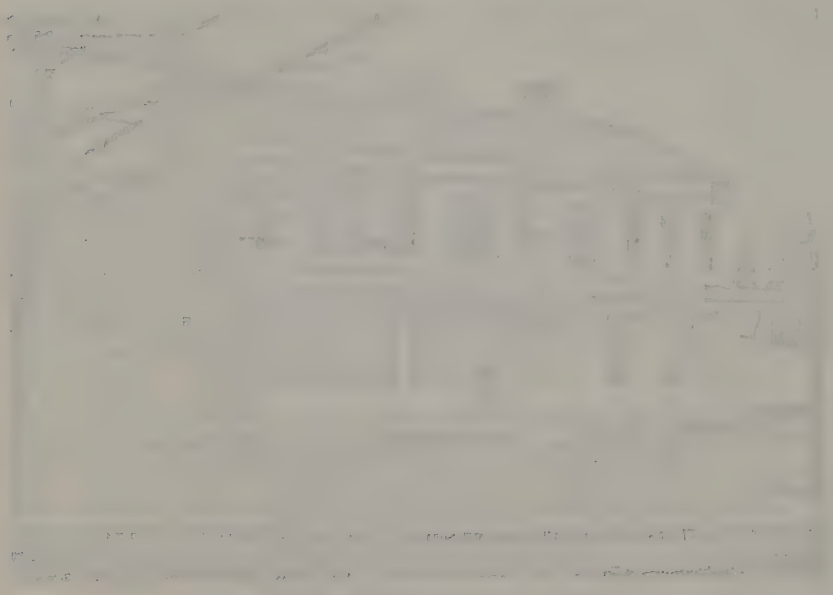
"Resolved upon motion that the following resolution be inserted in the Danbury Journal and Mount Pleasant Register:—

"'Resolved upon motion the Physicians of Westchester be indiscriminately informed that it is the intention and the hearty wish of the members of the Society that there may be a perfect union of the Profession

of necessary and immediate compliance with the Law of the Legislature, passed at the last session.

"The physicians aforesaid formed themselves into the Society to be known and called hereafter by the name and style of the Medical Society of the County of Westchester.

"Upon motion Doctor Archibald McDonald, in White Plains was elected President of the Society pro tempore and upon said motion, Doctor Matson Smith of New Rochelle was elected secretary thereof.



THE "ULELAND HOUSE" HOTEL

Stood about midway between Main Street and Hamilton Avenue on the west side of Broadway

"The Society, pleased with the present prospects and desirous that the Board shall hereafter exist upon the most fair and respectable terms, and that the physicians of the County shall indiscriminately receive an invitation to unite with the present members and to encourage this laudable design:—

"Resolved upon motion that the following resolution be inserted in the Dutchess Journal and Mount Pleasant Register:—

"Resolved upon motion the Physicians of Westchester be indiscriminately informed that it is the intention and the duty with of the members of the Society that there may be a perfect union of the Professions

of Physic within the County for the purpose of establishing the practice upon a liberal and satisfactory plan, that there may be a due observance of the Law passed at the last session of the Legislature of the State: And that an opportunity be given for such an union, the Society have proposed a meeting on the 13th day of June next, at the house of Major Jesse Hally, in Bedford, and hope this mode will be considered unequivocally an invitation. Should any gentlemen neglect the present session of uniting with the Society after the meeting aforesaid, no gentleman can expect admission in the Society without a vote for the purpose.'

"Upon motion resolved that Doctors Archibald McDonald, David Rodgers and Matson Smith be a committee to propose a Constitution for this Society against the meeting at Bedford, which Constitution shall be subject to amendment. The board adjourned to meet at the house of Major Jesse Hally, in Bedford on the 13th day of June next.

"MATSON SMITH,

"Secretary Pro Tempore."

It would seem from a perusal of these proceedings that the meeting had been called and organization perfected in compliance with the statutory enactment of the State Legislature, regulating the practice of medicine. The second meeting took place, as proposed at Major Hally's House, June 13th, 1797, at which time seventeen Doctors were present.

The sixth and last meeting recorded in the first book of the transactions of the Society, was the annual meeting, held at Bedford, May 8th, 1798. Twelve members present. The records of the Society from this meeting until June 1831 were unfortunately lost and we resume our story with the meeting held at the house of Alexander Banks in White Plains, June 7th, 1831. Following this, there was a gathering at the house of Robert Palmer in White Plains, June 1840, and was the most important, up to that date.

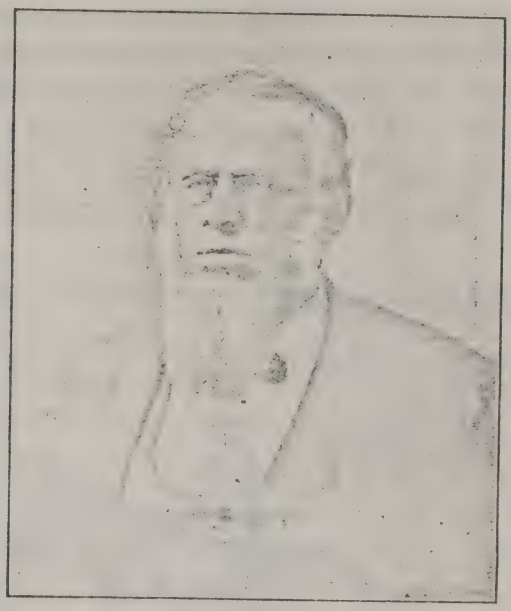
Among other interesting items in the report of the meeting held at the Orawaupum Hotel, White Plains, 1851, we note the offer of a prize of $10 for the best essay on the subject of Hydrocephalus by a member of the Society, and another case

It would seem from a perusal of these proceedings that the meeting had been called and organization perfected in compliance with the statutory enactment of the State Legislature, regulating the practice of medicine. The second meeting took place, as proposed at Major Hally's House, June 15th, 1797, at which time seventeen Doctors were present.

The sixth and last meeting recorded in the first book of the transactions of the Society, was the annual meeting, held at Bedford, May 8th, 1798. Twelve members present. The records of the Society from this meeting until June 1851 were unfortunately lost and we resume our story with the meeting held at the house of Alexander Bank, in White Plains, June 1851. Following this, there was a gathering at the house of Rolen Palmer in White Plains, June 1840, and was the most important, up to that date.

Among other interesting items in the report of the meeting held at the Oranoquan Hotel, White Plains, 1851, we note the offer of a prize of $10 for the best essay on the subject of Hydrocephalus by a member of the Society, and another case

which excited great interest was reported by Dr. Dunn, a lady fifty-three years old cutting her third set of teeth.



DR. GEORGE M. HODGSON

There is an amusing case reported by Dr. Hodgson as follows: "I was called one night about a year ago to a lady who had been awakened suddenly by a sensation of something in her throat, her symptoms being on the whole like those of globus hystericus. There was a good deal of nervous excitement and I prescribed soothing remedies. In the morning the lady discovered that a set of false teeth could not be found and after diligent search she decided that she must have swallowed the plate. She then recalled vividly the sensation of a body passing lower and lower down the œsophagus and being arrested at the cardiac orifice of stomach. The plate was of

gold 2½ inches long and ¾ inch wide, with two clasps. I then prepared a probang with forceps attached in order to extract it if possible from the stomach, but the patient on viewing the improvised instrument declined the operation and the lady up to the time of report has experienced no ill effects."

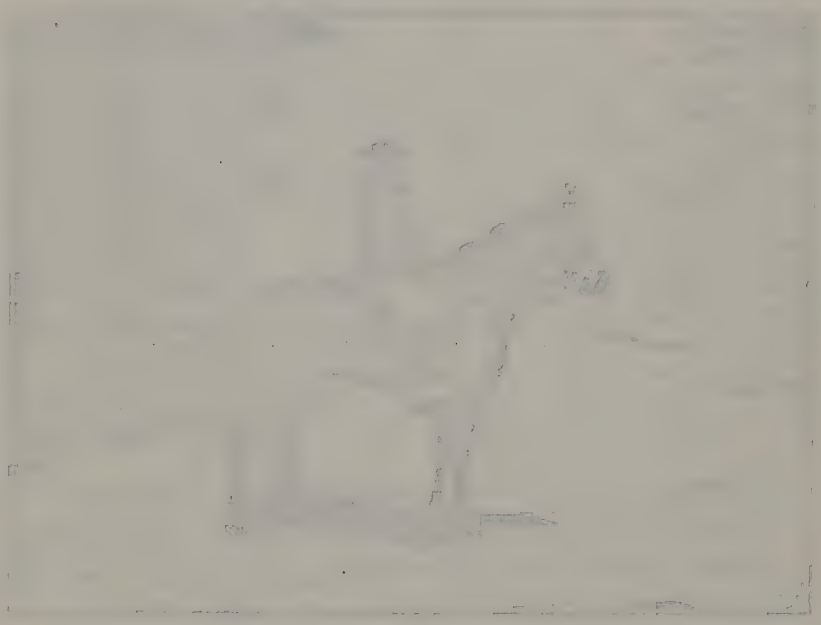
Doctor G. W. Hodgson was a practitioner for many years in White Plains: his residence was on the site of the present home of Mr. Henry R. Barrett, on North Broadway. Doctor Hodgson was President of the Society in 1853 and 1854.

DR. H. ERNST SCHMID
A familiar daily sight.

In 1863, Dr. H. Ernst Schmid became a member of the Society. Dr. Schmid was the oldest member of the Medical Society of Westchester County, and it would seem only fitting

gold 2½ inches long and ¼ inch wide, with two clasps. I then prepared a probang with [illegible] in order to extract it if possible from [illegible] but the patient [illegible] the improvised [illegible] operation [illegible] lady up to the time of report [illegible]

Dr. [illegible] H[illegible] in White Plains [illegible] residence [illegible] home of Mr. Henry R. [illegible] H[illegible] was [illegible] present.



In 1884, Dr. H. Ernst Schmid became a member of the Society. Dr. Schmid was the oldest member of the Medical Society of Westchester County, and it would seem only fitting

at this point to record a tribute to those qualities of mind and heart which have for a half century endeared him to the membership of this Society and a host of friends throughout Westchester. Dr. Schmid was President in 1878.

In December, 1882, the Society held its first meeting outside of Westchester County. The place selected was Martinelli's on Fifth Avenue, New York City. Dr. Schmid had been appointed a committee of one to make arrangements for the dinner. It is to be noted that whenever the Society dined in New York Dr. Schmid was invariably selected to make the arrangements. On this occasion appropriate resolutions were adopted regarding the death of Mr. Jenkins.

From this point onward during the past twenty-five years, the progress of the Society has been steadily active. There has been an enormous increase in population in Westchester during this period and our membership at the present writing is 312. It has become the custom to invite eminent members of the profession from New York and elsewhere to read papers, and address the Society upon some topic of interest in relation to the more recent scientific developments in their professional work. The old Orawaupum Hotel at which so many meetings were held in the old days is no more, and meetings in recent years have been held in many of the hospitals and other institutions which have become established in Westchester County.

In 1918 the Westchester Unit was organized for service in the World War. The plan was fostered and financed under the auspices of this Society, and while its identity as a unit was nullified on reaching France, owing to the exigencies of army organization, the physicians and nurses comprising the original unit saw service wherever the American flag was carried on the battlefields of Europe.

at this point to record a tribute to those qualities of mind and heart which have for a half century endeared him to the membership of this Society and a host of friends throughout Westchester. Dr. Schmid was President in 1873.

In December, 1882, the Society held its first meeting outside of Westchester County. The place selected was Martinelli's on Fifth Avenue, New York City. Dr. Schmid had been appointed a committee of one to make arrangements for the dinner. It is to be noted that whenever the Society dined in New York Dr. Schmid was invariably selected to make arrangements. On this occasion appropriate resolutions were adopted regarding the death of Mr. Jenkin

From this point onward during the past twenty-five years, the progress of the Society has been steadily active. There has been an enormous increase in population in Westchester during this period and our membership at the present writing is 312. It has become the custom to invite eminent members of the profession from New York and elsewhere to read papers, and address the Society upon some topic of interest in relation to the more recent scientific developments in their professional work. The old Orawanpum Hotel at which so many meetings were held in the old days is no more, and meetings in recent years have been held in many of the hospitals and other institutions which have become established in Westchester County.

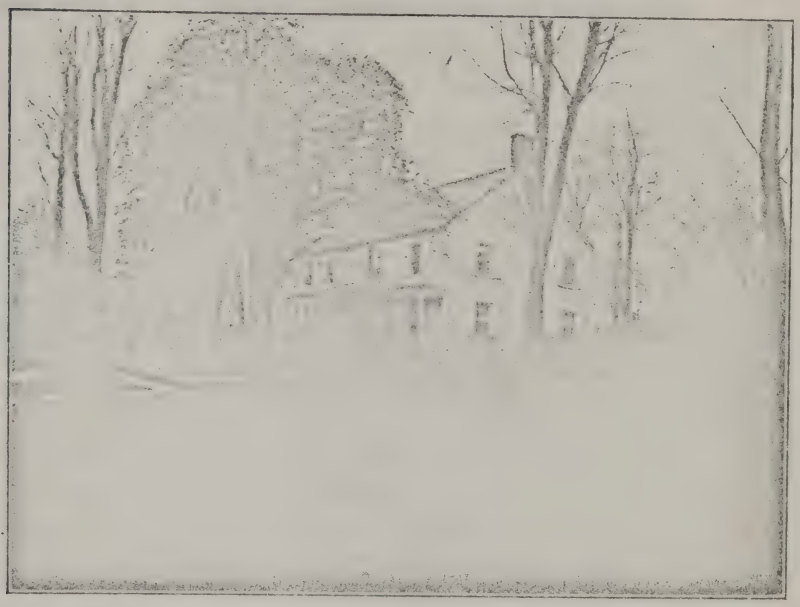
In 1918 the Westchester Unit was organized for service in the World War. The plan was fostered and financed under the auspices of this Society, and while its identity as a unit was nullified on reaching France, owing to the exigencies of army organization the physicians and nurses comprising the original unit saw service wherever the American flag was carried on fields of Europe.

And now as our story reaches a conclusion, and we look back on this long restrospect of years, we became impressed with the earnest purpose and commanding vision of the strong virile men who in the long ago organized the Medical Society of Westchester County. To the physician of that day there was little or no opportunity for social contact or scientific work. Hospital facilities were unknown, and laboratory technique, aseptic surgery, bacteriology, and medical literature were all to come later. Imagine the physician of today, called upon to diagnose and treat diseases without stethoscope, hypodermic needle, ophthalmoscope, microscope or clinical thermometer? Diagnosis was made without any of the means or methods which we consider so essential today, but the physician of the early 19th Century was a keen observer of the objective phenomena of disease, and differential diagnosis had already acquired a definite trend. He compensated for the defects in his diagnostic and therapeutic armamentarium by careful observation and acute mental qualities.

I deem it a great privilege to have been permitted the pleasure of an intimate perusal of the minutes, papers and other data constituting the record of past activities of the Medical Society of Westchester County. It has been said that posthumous glory fades into forgetfulness, and it would seem only proper therefore, on this occasion, to dwell for a moment on the character of these early Pioneers of Medicine in Westchester County, and to contemplate with gratitude the rich heritage of traditions and accomplishment which blazed the way for their successors.

Dr. McDonald had six sons. John, the eldest, the author of the papers herein contained was born December 27, 1790, was educated as a lawyer, and practiced his profession for several years.

He suffered a stroke of paralysis which left him a physical wreck, but with unimpaired intellect. His illness compelled him to abandon his professional career; and thereafter, during his intervals between suffering, he spent the balance of his life in literary studies. He was



THE RESIDENCE OF DR. ARCHIBALD McDONALD AND JOHN McDONALD HIS SON, THE AUTHOR OF THE McDONALD PAPERS

Stood on the northwest corner of Broadway and Rockledge Avenue

particularly devoted to all incidents in connection with the Revolutionary activities in Westchester County, and especially so to White Plains.

Allen McDonald was born November 21, 1794, was prominent in Westchester County, having been Sheriff 1826-1829, State Senator 1832-1835, and adjutant general under Governor Marcy, his term of office expiring January 1, 1837. He was, in 1830, one of the founders of the Westchester Spy, the second newspaper published in White Plains. He was also active in establishing Grace Church and was one of its wardens. He was usually referred to as "The General".

The sufferer a stroke of paral ysis which left him a physical wreck, but with unimpaired intellect. His illness compelled him to abandon his professional career; and thereafter, during his intervals between suffering, he spent the balance of his life in literary studies. He was

THE RESIDENCE OF THE ARCHIBALD JOHNSON AND JOHN McDONALD, HIS SON, THE AUTHOR OF THE McDONALD PAPERS

Stood the northwest corner of Brooklyn and Rockwood Avenue

particularly devoted to all incidents in connection with the Revolutionary activities in Westchester County, and especially so to White Plains.

Allan McDonald was born November 21, 1794, was prominent in Westchester County, having been Sheriff 1826-1829, State Senator 1813-1815, and adjutant general under Governor Marcy, his term of office expiring January 1, 1847. He was, in 1860, one of the founders of the Westchester Spy, the second newspaper published in White Plains. He was also active in establishing Grace Church and was one of its wardens. He was usually referred to as "The General".

Five hospitals are located in White Plains. The two general hospitals, St. Agnes and the White Plains Hospital, offer modern accommodations for patients with the finest medical aid available. St. Agnes also has a crippled children's hospital connected with it. A Medical Center is located in the city.

CHAPTER XXXIV

Famous Visitors Here

KING PRAJADHIPOK, Monarch of Siam, and Queen Rambaibarni, arrived in White Plains April 22nd, 1931, making their temporary residence at the home of Whitelaw Reid, "Ophir Farm". He had come to America to have a highly specialized operation performed on his eyes by a celebrated New York doctor.

White Plains arranged a ceremonial welcome in honor of its distinguished guest. This took place in the Auditorium of the new High School on June 2nd, 1931.

First came the Siamese National Anthem played by the 102nd Regiment Band. In welcoming the King, Mayor Frederick C. McLaughlin presented a Gold Key, suitably inscribed and bearing the historic seal of our City and the Crest of the Kingdom of Siam. Mayor McLaughlin said in part:

"I have the honor to present this Key and with it the Freedom of the City of White Plains. This Key, which your Majesties have so graciously signified your willingness to accept, is a token suitably inscribed, and bears the seal of our City and the Crest of the Kingdom of Siam.

"It might speak of the bond that encircles the earth, to invite two remote peoples of different backgrounds of race, climate and religion."

In accepting the key, the King replied:

"I desire to express our keen appreciation of your kind and generous words of welcome, for the gift and freedom of your City and for the most friendly reception by the citizens of White Plains and Harrison."

The King, standing before a battery of microphones for his first radio broadcast in America, then read his short address, speaking quickly, in perfect English, but with a dis-

The King, standing before a battery of microphones for his first radio broadcast in America, then read his short address, speaking quickly, in perfect English, but with a dis-

tinct accent. At the close of the ceremonies, there was an awkward pause as the National Anthem was scheduled to be played, but owing to our Army regulations, this part of the program could not be carried out before a visiting Ruler.

1 2 3 4

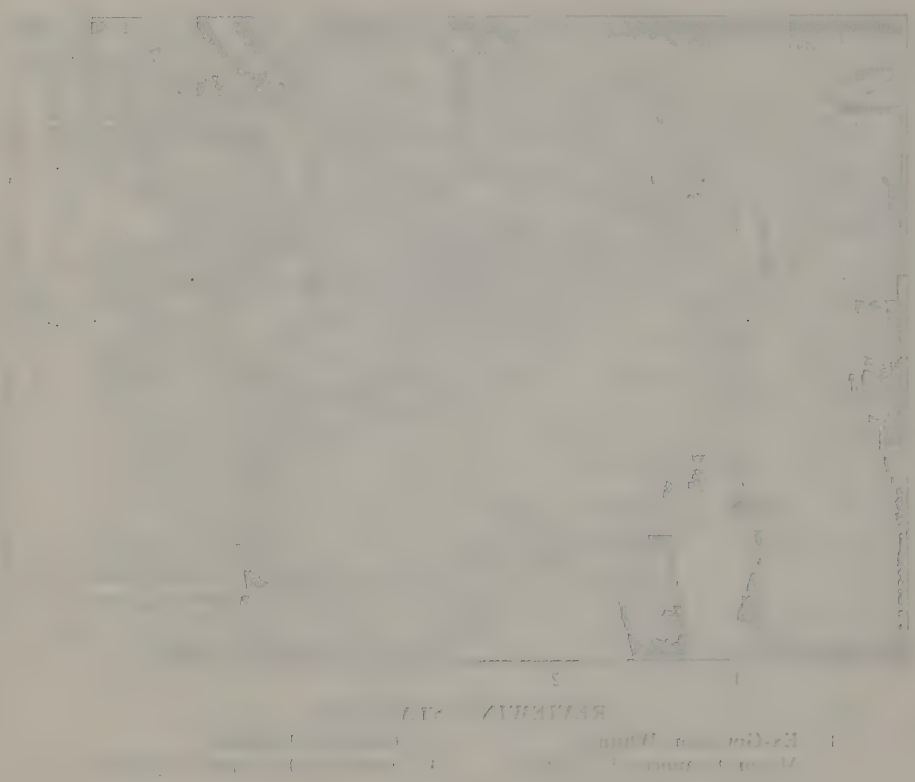
REVIEWING STAND 1933

1. Ex-Governor Whitman
2. Mayor Chauncey B. Griffen
3. Governor Lehman
4. John Rösch, General Chairman

The Visit of Franklin D. Roosevelt

The observance of the 250th Anniversary of the purchase of White Plains from the Indians and the creation of the County, September 22nd, 1933, was one of the most spectacular and impressive occasions ever witnessed by White Plains.

tinct accent. At the close of the ceremonies there was an
ward pause as the National Anthem was sched
played, but owing to our Army regulations, the
program could not be carried out before distin



Tablet of Franklin D. Roosevelt

The observance of the 250th Anniversary of the purch
of White Plains from the Indians and the creation of th
County, September 22nd 1913, was one of the most spectacu
lar and impressive occasions ever witnessed by White Plains

THE YORKTOWN BATTALION

That escorted Governor Roosevelt to Yorktown in 1931 after passing the reviewing stand on the 250th Anniversary of the purchase of White Plains from the Indians, September 27th, 1933

Franklin D. Roosevelt was the first president of the United States to ever really visit this city, although both George Washington and James Monroe were here in the early days before they had taken office; and President Benjamin Harrison drove in an open carriage through Main Street in the fall of 1892 on his way to Ophir Farm to visit Whitelaw Reid. Harrison was a candidate for re-election and Reid the candidate for Vice-President.

In view of the event to be held in White Plains, and its historical significance, the thought occurred to me that I might suggest even a brief visit by President Roosevelt, making the appeal partly on a sentimental basis. Hyde Park, his home community, had been my home as a lad of 14. It seemed a logical approach and was well worth trying, despite the immeasurably great preoccupation of the President.

And so—on August 26th, sixty-three years after those youthful memories, I mailed an illustrated invitation to President Roosevelt, on behalf of the City, suggesting that we would be honored by his presence if he could join us, even for a brief period, in our Anniversary celebration. I added a last personal postscript as Chairman of the event, briefly setting forth a few of the details of my early boyhood in Hyde Park.

When the echoes of the screaming sirens foretold the approach of the thirty-first President of the United States, Franklin Delano Roosevelt, I knew that my appeal had been generously answered and the hopes of the thousands of eager citizens realized. His signature, together with the memory of his presence, will go down in the history of White Plains as an eloquent testimonial of an epoch-making Anniversary.

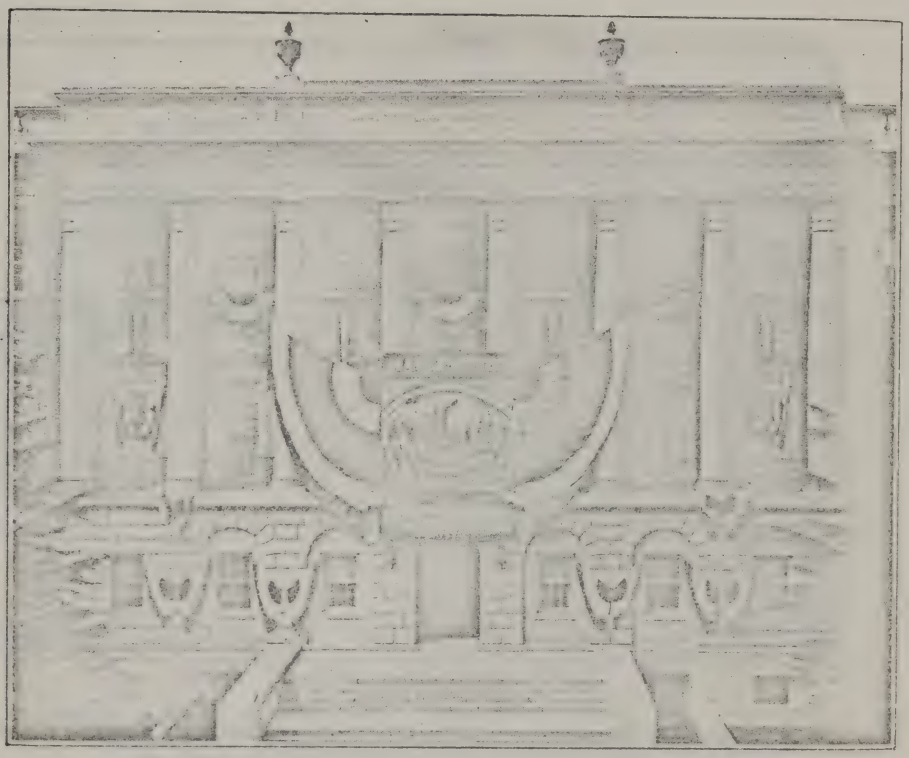
Franklin D. Roosevelt—as the first president of the United States to ever really visit this city, although both George Washington and James Monroe were here in the early days before they had taken office; and President Benjamin Harrison drove in an open carriage through Main Street in the fall of 1892 on his way to Ophir Farm to visit Whitelaw Reid. Harrison was a candidate for re-election and Reid the candidate for Vice President.

In view of the event to be held in White Plains, and historical significance, the thought occurred to me that I might suggest even a brief visit by President Roosevelt, making the appeal partly on a sentimental basis. Hyde Park, his home community, had been my home as a lad of 14. It seemed logical approach and was well worth trying, despite the immeasurably great preoccupation of the President.

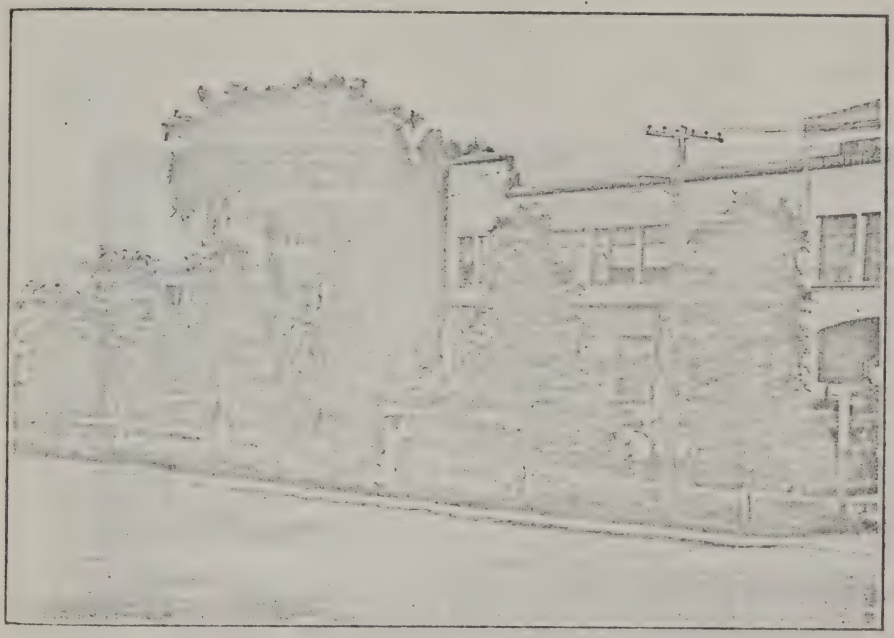
And so—on August 26th, sixty-three years after ..... youthful memories, I mailed an illustrated invitation to President Roosevelt, on behalf of the City, suggesting that we would be honored by his presence if he could join us, even for a brief period, in our Anniversary celebration. I added a last personal postscript as Chairman of the event, briefly setting forth a few of the details of my early boyhood in Hyde Park.

When the echoes of the screaming sirens foretold the approach of the thirty-first President of the United States, Franklin Delano Roosevelt, I knew that my appeal had been generously answered and the hopes of the thousands of our citizens realized. His signature, together with the memory of his presence, will go down in the history of White Plains as an eloquent testimonial of an epoch-making Anniversary.

ARRIVAL OF PRESIDENT ROOSEVELT, 1933

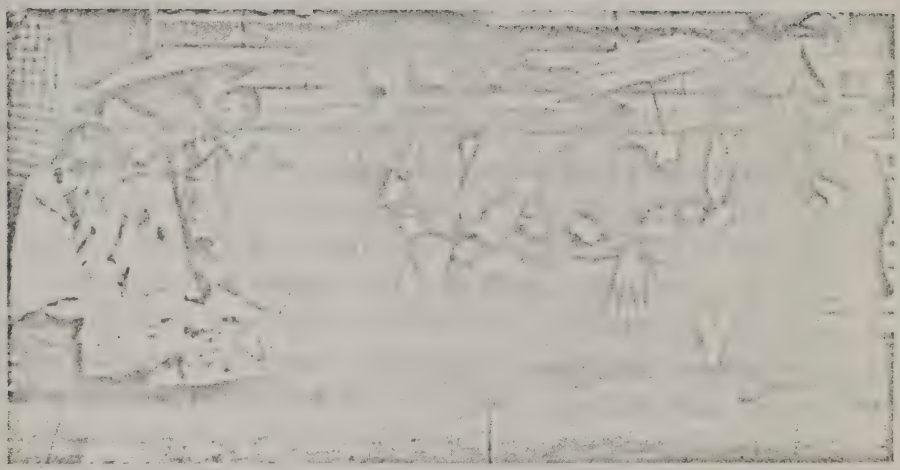


MUNICIPAL BUILDING
Constitution Week of the Anniversary of the formation of the National Constitution
September 12 to 18, 1937.



CONSTITUTION TREES

Planted in Depot Plaza during the week's celebration of the 150th Anniversary of the signing of the Constitution of the United States.



REVIEWING THE HISTORIC PAGEANT ON SEPTEMBER 17, 1937
Colonel Livingston and family represented by John Rösch and Mrs. Larry Spoor.
Mayor Walter Rogers and wife. Mr. and Mrs. A. Outram Sherman,
great grandson of Roger Sherman, signer of the Constitution.

CHAPTER XXXV

Observance of Constitution Week—September 12 to 18, 1937

CELEBRATION of the 150th Anniversary of the adoption of the Constitution of the United States. Enthusiastic crowds applauded the various units, depicting the various phases in the founding and progress of our Nation, as the historical parade on Friday the 17th of September, passed through the gaily attired streets.

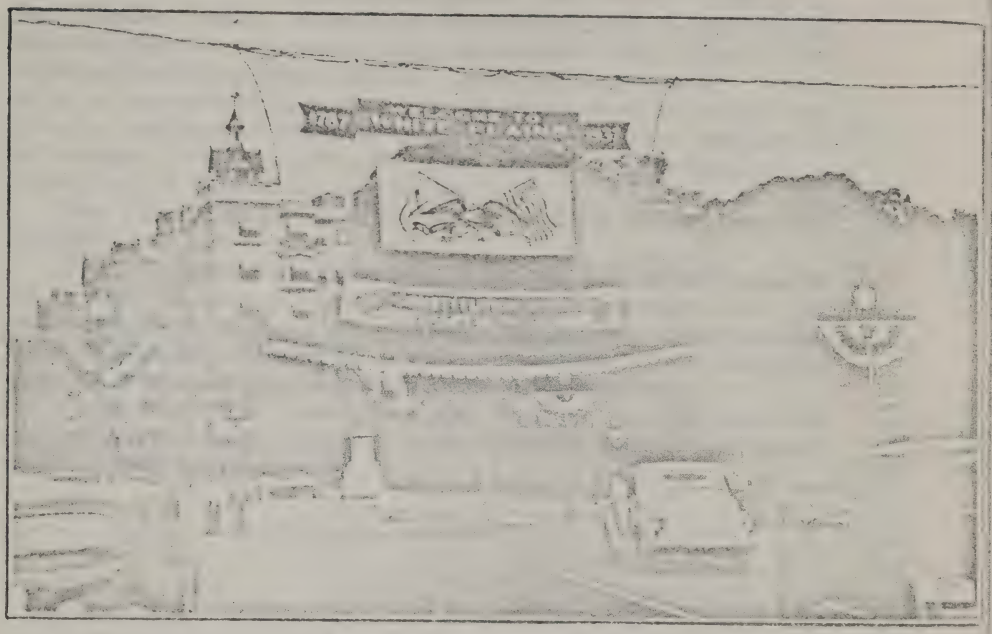
One of the many features forcibly demonstrated the rapid strides made by the government mails in the early days of the pony express riders. "Broncho Charlie" Miller, the last of the pony express riders, a unique and picturesque figure, born on the plains in 1850, headed the United States Mail section. He used the original saddle and carried the same mail pouches in which he took the mail across the plains to California in 1861-1862, when the cost was $5.00 to deliver an ounce. Today it costs six cents to send an ounce the same distance by Air Mail.

The final observance depicting the drama of the signing of the Constitution, was a fitting consummation of the gala week.

The stage setting in the Armory was a replica of the exterior and interior of the historic Independence Hall, Philadelphia, where the Constitutional Convention was held.

The cogent, yet soothing wisdom of Benjamin Franklin, the fiery and impulsive eloquence of Alexander Hamilton, the incisive arguments and reasoning of James Madison, the all-pervasive influence of Washington were characterized and elo-

quently portrayed by prominent members of the White Plains Lawyers Club.



BANNER OF WELCOME, 1937

PROLOGUE TO PAGEANT

By A. Outram Sherman

(In part.) We celebrate today the occasion in the course of events that gave to this country our Constitution. . . .

The great achievements of mankind have been accomplished by the happy combination of the arrival of momentous occasions with the appearance of great men on the stage at the same hour.

Never in history was this more true than 150 years ago in these United States. . . .

. . . That there never was an assembly of men charged with a great and arduous trust, who were more pure in their motives, or more exclusively, or anxiously devoted to the object committed to them, than were the members of the Federal Convention of 1787. . . .

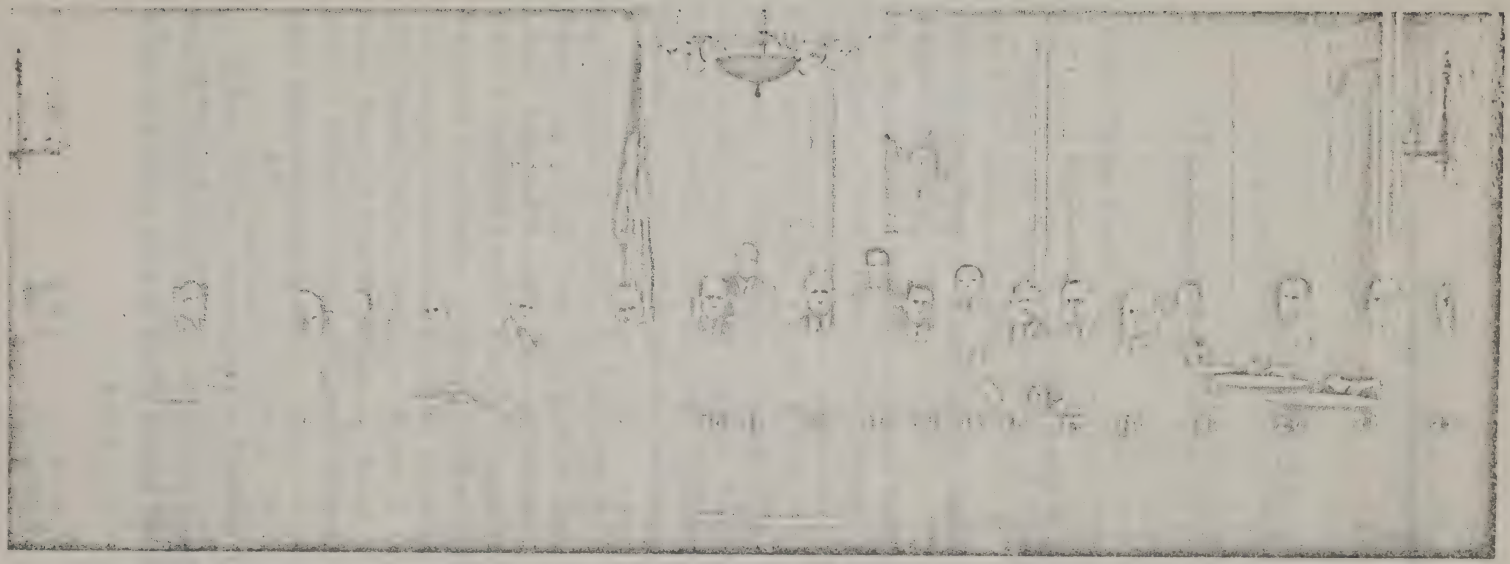
The influence of Washington in causing the acceptance of the Constitution can never be overestimated, having presided over its delibera-

tions. Every one counted on his being the first President and any government under him they knew would be safe and acceptable . . . . While the last members were signing, that great, beloved philosopher, Dr. Franklin, looking towards the President's chair, on the back of which happened to be painted a rising sun, observed "that painters found it difficult to distinguish in their art, a rising from a setting sun. I have often, in the course of the session and vicissitudes of my hopes and fears as to its issue, looked at that behind the President, without being able to tell whether it was rising or setting; but now I have the happiness to know that it is a rising, not a setting sun."

May I in closing borrow also, from the works of Nature, likewise a symbol?

They who framed our government, whom you will see our pageantry try to represent, we now know, after 150 years of experience set in the political skies of America a bow of promise, an assurance against national disaster if anarchy threaten; if radical unreason arise! if the unthinking passions of an hour enact foolish and destructive legislation.

To the thoughtful and true American "that bow shall be seen in the clouds" and they will rejoice, their hopes, their trust, secure in the Constitution of these United States.



1. J. HARVEY TURNURE
   Councilman
2. ALBERT W. HAIGH
   Councilman
3. GEORGE HILL
   Councilman
4. JOHN RÖSCH
   Local Historian
5. JOHN H. SHETRON
   Assistant Corporation Counsel
6. WILLIAM A. BRENNAN
   Deputy Commissioner of Public Safety
7. WALTER V. HOGAN
   Chairman, Recreation Commission
8. WILLIAM J. WEISE
   Assessor
9. EUGENE HALPIN, JR.
   Commissioner of Public Works
10. GUSTAVE E. OLSON
    Commissioner of Finance
11. WALTER ROGERS
    Mayor
12. THOMAS F. FOLEY
    Commissioner of Public Safety
13. GEORGE HALSTEAD
    Page
14. WILLIAM F. McCABE
    Commissioner of Public Welfare
15. GEORGE ZECHIEL
    City Clerk
16. WILLIAM R. CONDIT
    Corporation Counsel
17. SAMUEL FAILE
    Deputy Corporation Counsel
18. WILLIAM I. COLLYER
    Deputy Commissioner of Public Works
19. MARJORIE W. KANE
    Deputy City Clerk
20. LESLIE B. GILLIE
    Councilman
21. THOMAS H. CALLAHAN
    Councilman
22. STEPHEN HOLDEN
    Councilman

CHAPTER XXXVI

The City Administration for the Year 1937

Mayor—Walter Rogers.

Councilmen—Thomas H. Callahan, Leslie B. Gillie, Albert W. Haigh, George Hill, Stephen Holden, Jr., J. Harvey Turnure.
City Clerk—George Zechiel.
Department of Finance—Commissioner: Gustav E. Olson.
Assessor—William J. Weise.
Law Department—Corporation Counsel: William R. Condit.
Department of Public Works—Commissioner: Eugene Halpin, Jr.
Department of Public Safety—Commissioner: Thomas F. Foley.
City Court—City Judge: Charles A. Voss.
Department of Public Welfare—Commissioner: William F. McCabe.
City Planning Bureau—Chief Engineer: Frederick C. Brandes.
Water Department—Chief Engineer: William I. Collyer.
Department of Public Instruction—President of Board of Education: John A. Greer.
Superintendent of Schools—H. Claude Hardy.
Registrar of Vital Statistics—Marjorie W. Kane.
Library Board—President: Crescens Hubbard.
Public Library—Librarian: Clara F. Hopper.
Recreation Commission—Chairman: Walter V. Hogan.
Civil Service Commission—President: Frederick B. Van Kleeck, Jr.
City Planning Board—Chairman: Walter G. Craig.
Zoning Board of Appeals—Chairman: Robert Y. Clark.
Board of Review—Chairman: Glenn N. Curnow.
Local Historian—John Rösch.

White Plains, located in the Harlem Valley, is the county seat of Westchester County and is six miles east of the Hudson River, six miles west of Long Island Sound and twenty-three

miles north (or thirty-three minutes) from the Grand Central Terminal, New York City.

A Mayor and six Councilmen constitute the governing body, with efficient departments operating under full-time Commissioners.

POPULATION

1800	575	1880	4,094
1820	675	1900	9,016
1830	1,830	1910	15,947
1850	1,414	1920	21,675
1870	2,630	1930	35,830

1937 42,169

Recreation Park

What was a swamp that gave protection to Washington in 1776 and later an unsightly and unhealthy refuse dump for many years, has been made into what is looked upon as one of the finest municipal recreation fields in the county.

Recreation Park includes a fine group of well-kept tennis courts, handball courts, a baseball and a football field and track.

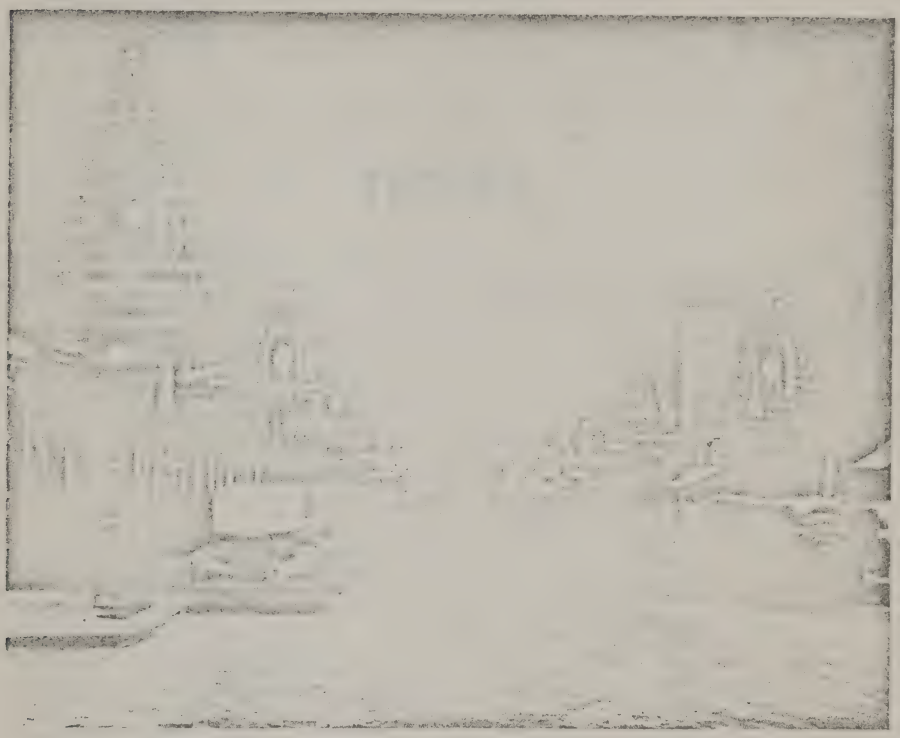
Another exceptionally fine recreational park is Gedney Field. There are several smaller playgrounds.

The Christmas Spirit

Each year at Christmas time, the many fine civic-minded organizations sponsor activities to create Christmas cheer and happiness throughout the city. Under-privileged children are presented with gifts and entertained at Christmas parties. Every year the Civic and Business Federation invites all children to a gala Christmas party at one of the local theatres.

where Santa Claus appears and a program of exchanging gifts delights the children.

Two thousand presents are thus assembled to be distributed by the Federation to the young folks confined in the various



MAIN STREET LOOKING WEST FROM MAMARONECK AVENUE

hospitals and children's homes in and near White Plains. The spirit of Christmas giving is thus enlivened and made real.

Appropriate Christmas lighting decorations in the central business area of the city are also sponsored annually by the Civic and Business Federation. This colorful display creates a beautiful symbol of the true Christmas spirit.

where Santa Claus appears and a program of entertainment delights the children.

Two thousand present are then assembled to see [illegible] by the Federation of the young folks [illegible]

hospitals and children's homes in and around White Plains. The spirit of Christmas giving is thus preserved throughout the year.

Appropriate Christmas lighting decorations in the central business area of the city are also sponsored annually by the Civic and Business Federation. This colorful display creates a beautiful symbol of the true Christmas spirit.

INDEX

A

B

C

D

E

F

G

H

I

J

K

L

M

N

O

P

Q

R

S

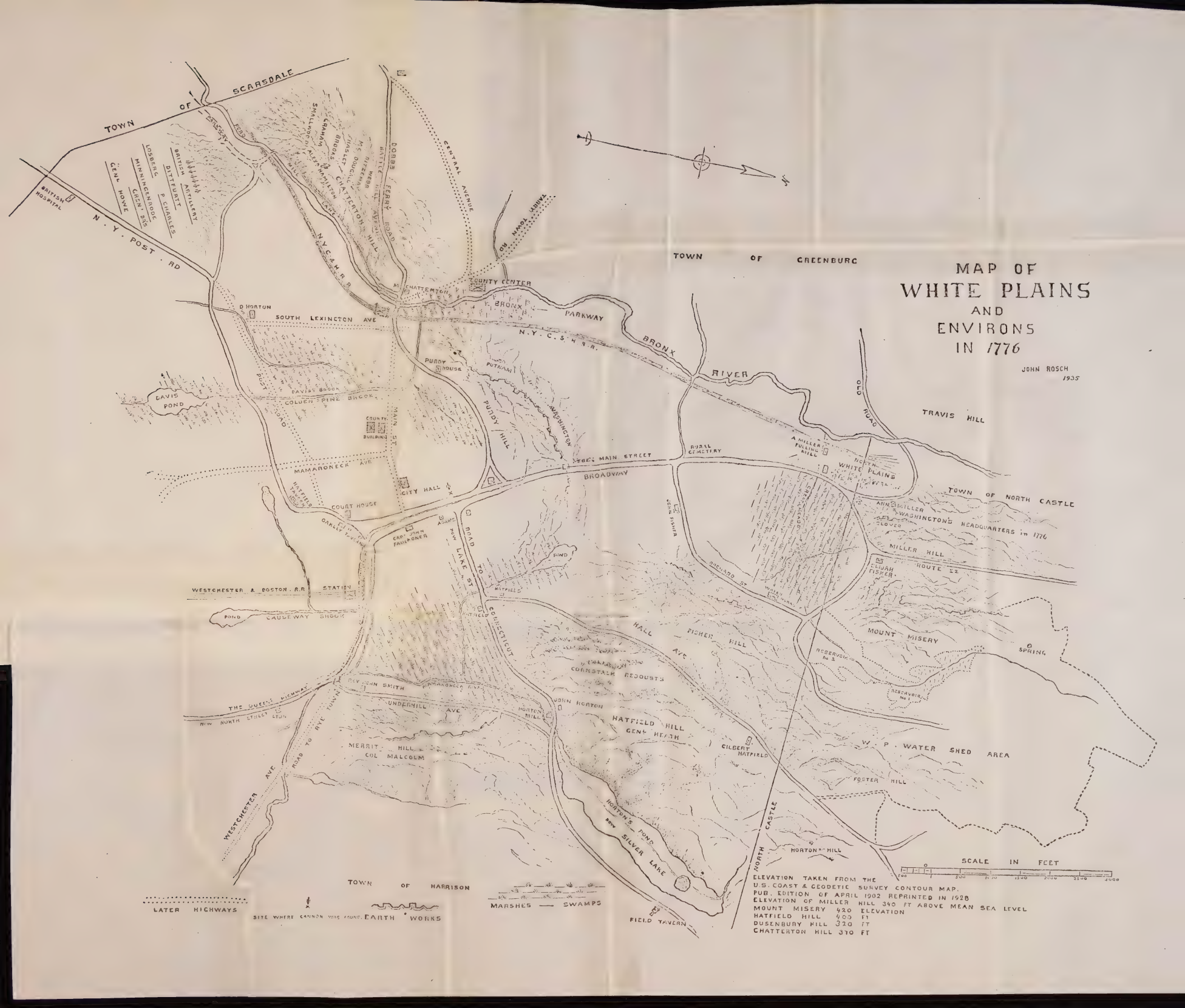
T

U

V

W

Y


MAP OF
WHITE PLAINS
AND
ENVIRONS
IN 1776
JOHN ROSCH
1935
TOWN OF SCARSDALE
TOWN OF GREENBURG
TOWN OF NORTH CASTLE
TOWN OF HARRISON
N.Y. POST RD
BRITISH HOSPITAL
GENL HOWE
LOSBERG
MINNIGENRODE
GRAN. DRG
BRITISH ARTILLERY
DATTEURT
P. CHARLES
SMALLWOOD
GRAHAM
HIBBORS
MC DONOUGH
CHATTERTON HILL
DOBBS FERRY ROAD
BATTLE HILL AVENUE
CENTRAL AVENUE
YANKEE TOWN RD
N.Y.C.&H.R.R.
COUNTY CENTER
BRONX PARKWAY
N.Y.C.S.H.R.R.
BRONX RIVER
SOUTH LEXINGTON AVE
D HORTON
PURDY HOUSE
PUTNAM
WASHINGTON
PURDY HILL
DAVIS POND
DAVIS BROOK
COLDEN PINE BROOK
POST ROAD
COUNTY BUILDING
MAIN ST.
MAMARONECK AVE
CITY HALL
COURT HOUSE
HATFIELD
OAKLEY AVENUE
CAPT JOHN FAULKONER
ADAMS
NEW LAKE ST
ROAD TO CONNECTICUT
POND
WESTCHESTER & BOSTON R.R. STATION
POND
CAUSEWAY BROOK
THE QUEEN'S HIGHWAY
NEW NORTH STREET LEAD
REV JOHN SMITH
MAMARONECK
UNDERHILL AVE
JOHN HORTON
HORTON HILL
MERRIT HILL
COL MALCOLM
WESTCHESTER AVE
ROAD TO RYE TOWN
BROADWAY
ROYAL CEMETERY
JOHN FISHER
A. MILLER FULLING MILL
NORTH WHITE PLAINS
OLD ROAD
TRAVIS HILL
ANN MILLER
WASHINGTON'S HEADQUARTERS in 1776
CLOVER
MILLER HILL
ROUTE 22
CLUAN FISHER
RACKLAND ST
WATER HUNT
HALL AVE
FISHER HILL
CORNSTALK REDOUBTS
HATFIELD HILL
GENL HEATH
GILBERT HATFIELD
MOUNT MISERY
SPRING
RESERVOIR No 2
RESERVOIR No 1
W. P. WATER SHED AREA
FOSTER HILL
HORTON'S POND
SILVER LAKE
NORTH CASTLE
HORTON HILL
FIELD TAVERN
SCALE IN FEET
0
500
1000
1500
2000
2500
3000
ELEVATION TAKEN FROM THE
U.S. COAST & GEODETIC SURVEY CONTOUR MAP.
PUB. EDITION OF APRIL 1902 REPRINTED IN 1928
ELEVATION OF MILLER HILL 340 FT ABOVE MEAN SEA LEVEL
MOUNT MISERY 420 ELEVATION
HATFIELD HILL 400 FT
DUSENBURY HILL 320 FT
CHATTERTON HILL 310 FT
LATER HIGHWAYS
SITE WHERE CANNON WAS FOUND. EARTH WORKS
MARSHES — SWAMPS